



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 06181106 7



BTC

Russell







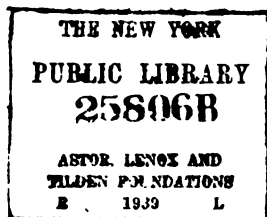


THE  
H I S T O R Y  
OF  
MODERN EUROPE.

WITH AN ACCOUNT OF  
THE DECLINE AND FALL  
OF THE  
R O M A N E M P I R E,  
AND A VIEW OF  
THE PROGRESS OF SOCIETY.  
FROM THE  
RISE of the MODERN KINGDOMS  
TO THE  
PEACE of PARIS, in 1763.  
IN A  
SERIES of LETTERS from a NOBLEMAN to his SON.  
A NEW EDITION, carefully corrected.  
VOL. II.

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed for G. G. J. and J. ROBINSON, Paternoster-row; and  
A. HAMILTON, jun. Falcon-court, Fleet-street. 1789.



THE NEW YORK

PUBLIC LIBRARY

25806B

ASTOR, LENOX AND  
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

R 1939 L

---

A  
CHRONOLOGICAL  
TABLE OF CONTENTS  
OF THE  
SECOND VOLUME  
OF THE  
History of Modern Europe.

---

P A R T I.

From the RISE of the MODERN KINGDOMS, to the  
PEACE of WESTPHALIA, in 1648.

L E T T E R XLII.

*England, from the Death of Edward III. to the Accession of  
Henry V. with some Account of the Affairs of Scotland  
during that Period.*

A.D.		Page
1377	<b>A</b> CCESION of Richard II. son of the Black Prince	1
1380	Discontents of the common people	2
1381	Insurrection of Watt Tyler	4
	Suppressed by the address of the young king	5
1385	Fruitless expedition of Richard into Scotland	ibid.
	He resigns himself to the direction of Robert de Vere, a worth- less favourite	6
	A civil war	ibid.
1388	The King obliged to resign the government	ibid.
1389	He recovers his authority	ibid.
	Addicted to low pleasures	7
1397	Intrigues and murder of the Duke of Gloucester	ibid.
1398	Unpopular conduct of Richard II.	8
1399	Henry, Duke of Lancaster, who had been banished, lands in England, and is joined by many disaffected noblemen	9
	Richard, deserted by his army, is deposed and murdered, and the Duke of Lancaster is declared King, under the name of Henry IV.	10
	A 2	Henry

# C O N T E N T S.

A. D.		Page
1400	Henry persecutes the followers of Wickliffe, the first English reformer, in order to procure the support of the clergy	11
	Rebellion of Owen Glendour in Wales	12
	The Scots make incursions into England	ibid.
1402	Defeated at Homeldon	ibid.
	The Earl of Northumberland, in disgust, forms an alliance with Glendour	13
1403	The rebels defeated with great slaughter near Shrewsbury	14
1409	The Welsh submit	15
1413	Death and character of Henry IV.	16

## L E T T E R XLIII.

*The German Empire and its Dependencies, Rome and the Italian States, from the Accession of Winceslaus to the Death of Sigismund.*

1378	Winceslaus succeeds his father, Charles IV. in the imperial throne	17
1379	Gives himself up to all kinds of debauchery	18
	Sequel of the story of Joan, queen of Naples	ibid.
1383	She is smothered between two mattresses	19
	Exploits of Margaret, queen of Denmark, surnamed the Semiramis of the North	20
1399	The Emperor Winceslaus deposed	ibid.
	Election of Robert, Count Palatine of the Rhine	ibid.
1401	Expedition of the new Emperor into Italy	21
1409	Disorders in Bohemia, occasioned by the preaching of John Hufs	22
	The Church of Rome distracted by what is called the <i>Grand Schism of the West</i>	23
1410	Death of the Emperor Robert	ibid.
1411	Sigismund, brother of Winceslaus, succeeds to the imperial throne	ibid.
	He convokes the council of Constance, with the concurrence of the Pope	ibid.
1414	Description of the meeting of that council, and an account of its decrees	24
1415	Condemnation and death of John Hufs	26
	Proceedings against the Anti-pope, Pèter de Luna	ibid.
1416	Trial and sufferings of Jerom of Prague	27
1417	The schism in the church closed	28
1419	The Hussites in Bohemia, under Ziska, revenge the death of their apostle	29
1437	Sigismund enlists them in his army, and leads them against the Turks	30
1438	His death and character	ibid.

A narrow,

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
	A narrow-minded bigot	30
	His wife Barbara more liberal in her opinions	31

## L E T T E R    X L I V.

*France, from the Death of Charles V. in 1380, to the Invasion  
of that Kingdom by Henry V. of England, in 1415.*

1380	Distracted state of France during the minority of Charles VI.	31
1388	He assumes the reins of government, but falls into a fit of phrenzy	32
	Singular circumstances accompanying his insanity	33
	Corrupt state of the French court	ibid.
1407	Affassination of the Duke of Orleans	35
	The whole kingdom agitated with intestine commotions, and divided by two furious factions	36
	Civil war between the Burgundians and Armagnacs	37
1415	Henry V. of England resolves to take advantage of these disorders	38

## L E T T E R    X L V.

*England and France, from the Invasion of the latter Kingdom  
by Henry V. to the Death of Charles VI.*

	Dissipated character of Henry V. while Prince of Wales	38
1413	His change of conduct on ascending the throne	39
	He endeavours to banish all party distinctions	ibid.
1415	Suppresses an insurrection of the Lollards	40
	Invades France	41
	Distress of his army	42
	Battle of Agincourt	43
	The French defeated with great slaughter	44
	Henry V. returns to England	45
	Wretched state of France	ibid.
1417	The Count of Armagnac and many other persons of distinction murdered	46
1418	The King of England lands in Normandy, and carries every thing before him	ibid.
1419	He negotiates with both the French parties	47
1420	Concludes with the Queen and the Duke of Burgundy the famous treaty of Troye, by which the succession to the crown of France was secured to the King of England	ibid.
	Maries the Princess Catherine	48
1421	She brings him a son	ibid.
1422	Death of Henry V.	49
	— of Charles VI. of France	ibid.
	Coronation of his son Charles VII.	ibid.



# CONTENTS.

## LETTER XLVI.

*The Affairs of France and England continued, from the Accession of Charles VII. to the Expulsion of the English from their Continental Territories.*

A.D.		Page
1422	Comparative state of France and England at the death of Henry V.	50
	Duke of Bedford regent, during the minority of Henry VI.	ib.
	Amiable character of Charles VII.	51
1423	Prudent measures of the Duke of Bedford	ibid.
1424	He defeats the French and Scots in the battle of Verneuil	52
1428	Undertakes the siege of Orleans	53
	Desperate state of the affairs of Charles VII.	ibid.
1429	He is roused to action by his queen and his mistress	54
	Account of the <i>Maid of Orleans</i>	ibid.
	She is introduced to the king	55
	Enters Orleans at the head of a convoy	56
	Charles VII. marches to Rheims, where he is solemnly crowned and anointed at the request of the Maid	57
	Recovers many places	ibid.
1430	The Duke of Bedford brings over the young king of England, Henry VI. who is crowned and anointed at Paris, as king of France	58
1431	The Maid is taken prisoner, and condemned to be burnt for sorcery and magic	59
1435	Death of the Duke of Bedford, and the utter ruin of the English affairs on the continent	ibid.
	Feeble character of Henry VI.	60
1443	He is married to Margaret of Anjou	ibid.
1447	Murder of the Duke of Gloucester	61
	Flourishing state of France, under Charles VII.	62
1453	The English expelled from all their possessions on the continent, except Calais	ibid.

## LETTER XLVII.

*The German Empire and its Dependencies, Rome and the Italian States, from the Death of Sigismund to the Accession of Maximilian.*

1438	Short reign of Albert II.	63
1439	He is succeeded in the imperial throne by Frederick III.	ibid.
1440	Frederick appears in the council of Basil	64
1451	Visits Italy	65
1452	Is there crowned King of Lombardy	66
	Troubles in Hungary and Bohemia	67
		Progress

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1452	Progress of the Turks	68
1456	John Hunniades obliges Mahomet II. to raise the siege of Belgrade	69
1493	Death of Frederick III.	70
	He is succeeded in the imperial throne by his son Maximilian, who had married the heirs of Burgundy and the Low Countries	ibid.

## L E T T E R XLVIII.

*England, during the Contest between the Houses of York and Lancaster, and until its final Extinction in the Accession of the House of Tudor.*

1450	Richard, Duke of York, sets up a claim to the English crown	71
1455	Henry VI. obliged to resign the administration of government into the hands of his rival	73
1458	A civil war	74
1459	The Duke of York is deserted by his troops, and flies into Ireland	ibid.
1460	The Earl of Warwick defeats the royal army at Northampton, and makes the King prisoner	75
	The Duke of York returns from Ireland, and supports his claim to the English crown	ibid.
	He is acknowledged the true and lawful heir of the monarchy by the parliament	76
	Is killed in the battle of Wakefield, (Dec. 24.)	77
1461	His son Edward enters London, and assumes the title of King	78
	Character of Edward IV.	ibid.
	Henry VI. and Queen Margaret, after several bloody battles, forced to take refuge in Scotland	80
	State of that kingdom	ibid.
1464	Queen Margaret and the Scots defeated at Hexham	81
	Her singular escape	82
1465	King Henry made prisoner, and confined in the Tower	ibid.
	Gallantries of Edward IV.	83
	He marries Lady Elizabeth Gray	84
	Rebellion of the Earl of Warwick	85
1470	He associates himself with the Lancastrians	ibid.
	Edward IV. abandoned by his army, takes refuge in Holland	ib.
1471	He returns, and totally defeats the Lancastrians at Barnet, where Warwick is slain	86
	Death of Henry VI.	88
1475	Edward IV. invades France	ibid.
	Concludes a truce with Lewis XI.	89
	Atrocious character of Richard, Duke of Gloucester, the King's brother	ibid.
	A 4	He

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1483	He is appointed Regent and Protector on the death of Edward	91
	Orders lord Hastings and many other persons of distinction to be executed without any form of trial	92
	Persecutes Jane Shore, the late king's mistress	93
	Gets his brother's children, Edward V. and the duke of York, murdered, and usurps the crown under the name of Richard III.	96
	Henry earl of Richmond, disputes the kingdom with him	97
1485	Richard defeated, and slain in the battle of Bosworth	100
	The earl of Richmond proclaimed king, under the name of Henry VII.	101

## L E T T E R XLIX.

*France, from the Expulsion of the English by Charles VII. to the Invasion of Italy by Charles VIII. in 1494.*

1453	Wise regulations of Charles VII.	102
	He establishes a standing army	ibid.
1461	His death	103
	His son, Lewis XI. seeks to depress the power of the nobles	ibid.
1465	They rebel against him	104
	He quiets them by a treacherous negotiation	ibid.
	Corrupts the national assemblies	ibid.
1467	Made prisoner by Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy	105
	Obtains his liberty on humiliating conditions	106
	The subsequent part of his reign a continued scene of tyranny and cruelty	ibid.
	He greatly enlarges the French monarchy, and exalts the power of the crown	108
1483	His horror at the approach of death	ibid.
	The means which he employed to divert his melancholy and prolong life	109
	A description of the various instruments of his cruelty	ibid.
	His complicated character	110
1491	Charles VIII. his son, unites Brittany to the kingdom of France, by marrying the heiress of that duchy	112
1492	Henry VII. of England invades France	114
	He is induced to withdraw his forces by the pecuniary stipulations in the treaty of Etaples	ibid.
1494	Charles VIII. prepares for the invasion of Italy	ibid.

## L E T T E R L.

*The Progress of the Turks, and the Fall of the Great Empire.*

	Abject superstition of the Greeks	115
1370	John Paleologus, Emperor of Constantinople, concludes a shameful treaty with the Turkish Sultan, Amurath	116
	Amurath	

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1370	Amurath establishes the body of Janizaries	117
	Vanquishes the Christians, but is slain, in the battle of Caf- sovia	ibid.
1389	Succeeded by his son Bajazet	ibid.
1396	Bajazet defeats the Christians at Nicopolis, upon the Da- nube	118
	Manuel Paleologus, Emperor of Constantinople, purchases a peace by mean submissions	ibid.
1401	The Turks invest Constantinople	119
	The siege raised, in consequence of the irruption of the Mogul Tartars, under Tamerlane	ibid.
1402	Tamerlane defeats Bajazet in the battle of Angora, and takes him prisoner	120
	He becomes master of Prusa, the seat of the Turkish emperors ; but soon after abandons that city, and all his conquests in Asia Minor	ibid.
	Wretched state of the Greek Empire	121
1421	Amurath II. invests Constantinople	ibid.
	Raises the siege to quell the revolt of his brother Mustapha, ib.	
1444	Is defeated by John Hunniades, Vaivode of Transilvania	122
	Concludes a truce of ten years with the Christians, and resigns the sceptre to his son Mahomet II.	ibid.
	The Christians break the truce	ibid.
	Are vanquished by the Turks in a great battle near Varna, in Moldavia (Nov. 10.)	123
	Account of George Castriot, surnamed Scanderbeg	124
	He rescues Albania, his native country, from the Turkish yoke	ibid.
	Character of Mahomet II.	125
1452	He forms the design of making himself master of Constanti- nople	126
1453	Invests that city both by sea and land	ibid.
	Particulars of the siege	127
	Constantinople is taken, and the Greek Empire, or Roman Empire in the East, utterly subverted	ibid.
	Farther conquests of Mahomet II.	128
	His death	ibid.

## L E T T E R II.

*Spain, from the Death of Peter the Cruel, in 1369, till the Con-  
quest of Granada, by Ferdinand and Isabella, in 1492.*

	Debaucheries of Henry IV. of Castile	129
1464	He is deposed with great solemnity at Avila	130
	A furious civil war	ibid.
	The	The

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1464	The Infanta Isabella, married to Ferdinand, prince of Aragon	131
	The civil war continues	ibid.
1479	Accession of Ferdinand and Isabella	132
	Their maxims of policy	ibid.
	They endeavour to annihilate the territorial jurisdiction of the nobles	133
1480	Establish the Court of Inquisition	134
1483	Undertake the conquest of Granada	ibid.
1492	Accomplish their enterprise, and terminate the dominion of the Moors in Spain	135
	Expulsion of the Jews	130
	The Infanta Joan, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella, married to Philip, Archduke of Austria, and Sovereign of the Netherlands	ibid.

## L E T T E R LII.

*England, during the Reign of Henry VII.*

1485	Henry VII. by marrying Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV. unites the claims of the houses of York and Lancaster	137
	He retains an antipathy against the partizans of the house of York	ibid.
	Insurrections in consequence of this prejudice	138
	Account of the impostor, Lambert Simnel	139
1486	He assumes the character of Edward Plantagenet, Earl of Warwick, son of the duke of Clarence	ibid.
	Excites an insurrection in Ireland	140
1487	Is joined by the earl of Lincoln at the head of two thousand men	142
	Lands in England	ibid.
	Is defeated and made prisoner	ibid.
	Henry turns his eyes toward the affairs on the Continent	143
1492	Invades France	144
	Concludes, at Estaples, an advantageous treaty with Lewis XI.	145
	Story of Perkin Warbeck, a new impostor, who assumes the character of Richard duke of York, son of Edward IV.	146
1493	Perkin is supported by the Duchess of Burgundy	147
	She honours him with the appellation of the <i>White Rose of England</i>	148
	Henry obtains the secrets of Perkin, and arrests his adherents	149
	Execution of Lord Stanley	150
	Perkin	

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1493	Perkin seeks refuge, alternately, in Scotland and Ireland	151
	Lands in Cornwall, and takes the title of Richard IV.	152
1498	Despairing of success, he delivers himself into the king's hands, on a promise of pardon	153
1499	Committed to the Tower, and hanged for a conspiracy against the life of the lieutenant	ibid.
1502	Henry prince of Wales, married to Catherine of Aragon, his brother's widow	154
	Vigorous, but oppressive administration of Henry VII.	157
	His death and character	ibid.
	He repressed the exorbitant power of the barons, by diminishing the number of their retainers	158

## L E T T E R LIII.

*A general View of the Continent of Europe, from the Invasion of Italy by Charles VIII. in 1494, till the League of Cambray, in 1508.*

1494	State of Italy at the invasion of Charles VIII.	159
	He over-runs the whole country, and makes himself master of Rome	160
	Story of Zizim, brother to the Turkish emperor, Bajazet II.	161
	He is delivered into the hands of the French monarch by Pope Alexander VI.	162
	Charles VIII. conquers the kingdom of Naples	163
1495	The Italian States, the Emperor Maximilian, and their Catholic Majesties, Ferdinand and Isabella league against him	164
1496	He is driven out of Italy, and stript of all his conquests	ibid.
1498	His death and character	165
	Charles is succeeded in the throne of France by the duke of Orleans, under the title of Lewis XII.	ibid.
	Generous spirit of Lewis	ibid.
	He proposes to invade Italy	166
	Infamous character and debauched manners of Pope Alexander VI. and his court	167
	He dissolves the marriage of Lewis XII. with Joan, daughter of Lewis XI.	168
	Lewis marries Anne of Brittany, the Queen Dowager	ibid.
1499	Invades Italy, and conquers the duchy of Milan	169
1501	Makes himself also master of the kingdom of Naples	170
	But is expelled by the arms and intrigues of Gonsalvo de Cordova, general of the king of Spain	ibid.
	Farther Account of Alexander VI. and his son Cæsar Borgia	171
1504	Lewis XII. makes an unsuccessful attempt to recover the kingdom of Naples	172
1506	Marries his eldest daughter to the count of Angoulême, first prince of the blood	ibid.

L E T.

# CONTENTS.

A.D.

Page

## LETTER LIV.

*Europe, from the League of Cambray to the Death of Lewis XII.*

1508	Julius II. an able and ambitious pontiff, forms the project of driving all foreigners out of Italy, and of humbling the republic of Venice	174
	Policy and power of that republic	175
	It becomes an object of terror to the other Italian states	176
	The league of Cambray formed against it	ibid.
1509	Depressed condition of the Venetians	177
	The Pope, having accomplished one part of his plan, sows dissensions among the confederates	ibid.
1510	The league of Cambray dissolved	178
	The Venetians recover from their consternation	ibid.
1511	Henry VIII. of England agrees to send an army to invade France at the solicitation of Ferdinand king of Spain, his father-in-law	180
1512	Lewis XII. in consequence of this threatened invasion, withdraws part of his forces from Italy	ibid.
	Ferdinand conquers the kingdom of Navarre	181
	Battle of Ravenna, and death of the gallant Gaston de Foix	ib.
	The French driven out of Italy	182
1513	Death of Julius II. and the elevation of Leo X.	ibid.
	The king of England invades France	183
	Is joined by the Emperor Maximilian, who condescends to act under him	184
	French routed at Guinegate	ibid.
	The English made themselves masters of Terouane and Tour-nay	185
	Perilous situation of Lewis XII.	ibid.
	The Scots invade England	186
	Defeated in the field of Flouden, where James IV. and the flower of his nobility are slain (Sept. 9.)	ibid.
	General pacification among the European powers	187
	Death of Lewis XII.	ibid.
1515	His amiable character	188
	His humanity, generosity, and indulgence to his subjects, obtained him the appellation of <i>Father of his People</i>	ibid.

## LETTER LV.

*The general View of Europe continued, from the Accession of Francis I. in 1515, to the Death of the Emperor Maximilian, in 1519; including the Rise of the Reformation in Germany.*

1515	Lewis XII. succeeded by the count of Angoulême, his son-in-law, under the name of Francis I.	189
------	--	-----

# CONTENTS:

D.		Page
15	Francis I. the recovery of the duchy of Milan	189
	Is opposed by ... Swift	ibid.
	Battle of Marignano (Sept. 12.)	190
	The Swiss defeated with great slaughter	ibid.
	City of Milan surrenders, and the whole duchy submits to the French monarch	ibid.
1566	Death of Ferdinand the Catholic of Spain	191
	Succeeded by his grand-son Philip, late sovereign of Spain	ibid.
	Vigorous administration of Philip II., Regent of Spain	192
1517	His unhappy fate	193
	Charles assumes the reins of government in Spain	ibid.
1518	Diet of Augsburg, and the rise of the reformation in Germany	194
	Corruptions of the Romish church	195
	The Pope assumes the right of pardoning sins	ibid.
	Nature of plenary indulgences	ibid.
	Mistake of Mr. Hume, in regard to them	196
	Leo X. publishes a general sale of indulgences, or liberty to commit crimes without being amenable to divine justice	197
	Abuse of this spiritual traffic in Germany	198
	Martin Luther, professor of theology in the university of Wittenberg, declares against the sale of indulgences, and other abuses of the Romish church	ibid.
	Leo summons him to answer for his doctrines at Rome	ibid.
	That citation revoked at the intercession of the elector of Saxony	199
	Luther appears in the diet at Augsburg	ibid.
	Denied a hearing by Cardinal Cajetan	ibid.
	Retires, and continues to propagate his new opinions	200
1519	Death of the emperor Maximilian I.	ibid.

## LETTER LVI.

*Progress of Society in Europe, from the Beginning of the Fourteenth, to the Middle of the Sixteenth Century, with a retrospective View of the Revival of Letters.*

Recapitulation of the progress of society in regard to trade and industry	201
The command of national force, civil government, and political power	202
Splendor of the Italian cities	ibid.
They invent new arts	ibid.
Introduce into Europe the culture of silk, and of other productions of Asia	203
Flanders	



# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
	Flanders famous for the manufacture of linen and woollen cloth	203
	Its great trade	204
	Painting and architecture revive in Italy and the Low Countries	ibid.
	Reflections on learning and politeness	205
	The Revival of Letters, and its remote causes	206
	Erection of schools under lay preceptors	ibid.
	A more liberal mode of thinking introduced	207
	Effects of the invention of paper, and of the art of printing	208
	Influence of women upon manners	209
	Their high sense of honour during the times of chivalry	ibid.
	They inspire the men with the most exalted courage	210
	Origin of the heroic romance	ibid.
	It has its rise among the Troubadours of Provence	211
	Its character	212
	Allegorical tale, an Italian epic	ibid.
	Character of Dante, the father of Italian poetry	213
	— of Petrarch	ibid.
	— of Boccacio	214
	He is imitated by Chaucer	215
	Splendour of the court of Edward III. of England	216
	Chaucer its brightest ornament	217
	His character as a poet	ibid.
	State of poetry in France	218
	Rapid progress of genius in Italy	ibid.
	Character of the <i>Orlando</i> of Ariosto	219
	— of the <i>Jerusalem</i> of Tasso	ibid.
	Reflections on the revival of theatrical representation	220
	— on music	ibid.
	— on historical composition	221
	Character of Machiavel and Guicciardini	ibid.
	Flourishing state of Italy in the sixteenth century	222

## L E T T E R LVII.

*Progress of Navigation, and particularly among the Portuguese. A short Introduction to the History of Portugal. The Discoveries and Settlements of the Portuguese on the Coast of Africa, and in the East Indies by the Cape of Good Hope; The Discovery of America by the Spaniards; the Settlement of the West Indies; and the Conquest of Mexico and Peru; together with some Reflections on the moral and political Consequences of those great Events.*

View of the state of Commerce and Navigation in Europe, at the beginning of the fifteenth century

224

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
	Rise of the kingdom of Portugal	224
1385	Accession of John I. surnamed the Bastard	225
1414	He takes Ceuta from the Moors	ibid.
	Enlightened genius of his son, Don Henry	226
1420	Discovery of the island of Madeira by the Portuguese	ibid.
1484	—— of the river Zara, and the kingdom of Congo	ibid.
1486	—— of the Cape of Good Hope	ibid.
1497	Voyage of Vasco de Gama	ibid.
1498	He arrives in the East Indies	227
	State of commerce in the East	ibid.
1499	Gama encounters many dangers, and returns to Lisbon	228
1500	Voyage of Alvarez de Cabral	229
1501	The Portuguese establish themselves by force of arms on the coast of Malabar	ibid.
1508	They monopolize the trade of the East Indies	230
1509	Their conquests there under Albuquerque	231
1511	He makes himself master of Goa and Malacca	232
1515	Of Ormus in the Persian Gulf	233
	His death and character	234
	Christopher Columbus, a Genoese navigator, projects the discovery of a new continent toward the West	234
	His proposals long treated with neglect	235
1492	Patronized by Isabella, queen of Spain, and sails from the port of Palos in Andalusia	ibid.
	Discovers the Archipelago of America, to which he gives the name of the West Indies	237
	Character of the natives of Hispaniola, where Columbus planted a colony	ibid.
1493	He returns to Spain, where he is treated with great respect	238
	Makes another voyage with little success	239
1498	In a third voyage discovers the continent of America	240
1499	Voyage of Americus Vespucius	ibid.
	He gives his own name to the New World, in prejudice of the prior right of Columbus	241
	Misfortunes and injuries of Columbus	ibid.
1506	His death and character	242
	Cruelty of the Spaniards in the West Indies	243
1518	Discovery of the empire of Mexico	ibid.
1519	Invaded by Cortes, the Spanish general, with only five hundred men	ibid.
	Circumstances favourable to his enterprise	244
	He receives an embassy from the emperor Montezuma	ibid.
	Negotiates with the tributary princes and states	245
	Defeats the Tlascalans, and enters into treaty with them	ibid.
	Admitted by Montezuma into the city of Mexico	246
	Makes the emperor prisoner in his own capital	ibid.
	A Spanish	

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1520	A Spanish army sent against him by the governor of Cuba	246
	He defeats his rival	ibid.
	The Mexicans revolt in his absence	247
	Their desperate valour	ibid.
	Death of Montezuma	248
	Cortez obliged to abandon the city of Mexico	ibid.
	The Mexicans pursued him, and are totally defeated in the battle of Otumba	249
1521	Final subjection of the Mexican empire	ibid.
	Doubts concerning the civilization of the Mexicans	ibid.
	Their bloody superstition.	250
1532	A Spanish adventurer, named Pizarro, undertakes the conquest of Peru, another great empire in America	ibid.
	State of that empire	ibid.
	Treachery and cruelty of the Spaniards	251
1533	Conquest of Peru, and the murder of the Inca, Atahualpa	252
	Inquiry "How far the discoveries of the Portuguese and Spaniards have been advantageous to Europe, or beneficial to mankind"	253
	The East India trade drains Europe of its bullion and specie	254
	The Mines of Mexico and Peru necessary to supply that drain	ibid.
	The discovery of America has increased the labour of Europe, and the number of the civilized part of the human species ib.	
	The violent settlement of the European colonies in the New World to be lamented	255

## L E T T E R LVIII.

*A general View of the Affairs of Europe from the Election of Charles V. in 1519, till the Peace of Cambray, in 1529, including the Progress of the Reformation.*

State of Germany at the death of the Emperor Maximilian	256
Threatening posture of the Turks	ibid.
Extensive dominions of the archduke Charles, king of Spain and sovereign of the Netherlands	257
High reputation and great power of Francis I.	ibid.
He and Charles candidates for the imperial crown	ibid.
Their respective pretensions	ibid.
Charles elected Emperor	258
Chagrin of Francis	259
Their emulation and interfering claims	ibid.
Henry VIII. courted by both, as the next prince of the age in power and dignity	259
His character, and that of his minister Cardinal Wolsey	260
The	

# CONTENTS.

A. D.		Page
1520	The Emperor, Charles V. artfully pays a visit to the King of England, in his way from Spain to the Netherlands	261
	Splendid interview between Henry and Francis near Guines	262
	Charles crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle	263
	Orders a diet to be held at Worms for the condemnation of the reformed opinions	ibid.
	Progress of Luther in Germany	264
	Of Zuinglius in Switzerland	265
1521	Luther summoned to attend the diet of Worms	266
	His wonderful popularity there	ibid.
	His firmness in maintaining his doctrines	267
	Is permitted to depart, in consequence of the Emperor's safe conduct	ibid.
	Propagates his opinions in solitude, though at the hazard of his life	ibid.
	Disturbances in Spain	268
	Hostilities begun between Charles and Francis	ibid.
	The Pope, the Emperor, and the King of England enter into a league against France	269
	Rapid progress of the imperial arms in Italy	270
1522	The French strip of all their territories there	271
	An English army invades France without effect	272
	The tumults in Spain quelled	ibid.
	Solyman II. Emperor of the Turks, makes himself master of the island of Rhodes, the seat of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem	ibid.
	Perilous state of Francis I.	273
1523	He determines to lead a strong army into Italy	274
	Conspiracy of the constable Bourbon	275
	He escapes, and enters into the imperial service	ibid.
	Thwarts the designs of Francis in Italy	276
1524	French defeated in the battle of Biagrasa	ibid.
	Death of the Chevalier Bayard	277
	Francis, successful on his own frontiers, marches into Italy, and lays siege to Pavia (Oct. 28.)	278
1525	Battle of Pavia (Feb. 24.)	279
	French army routed with great slaughter, and the king himself made prisoner, by the Imperialists, under Bourbon and Pescara	ibid.
	Prudent conduct of Louisa, Francis's mother	280
	Henry VIII. becomes anxious for the liberties of Europe	281
	He interposes in favour of the French monarch	282
	Behaviour of Francis in confinement	ibid.
1526	He signs the treaty of Madrid, in consequence of which he obtains his liberty	ibid.
	Evades the execution of that treaty	283
	Clement VII. forms a powerful league against the Emperor	ib.
1527	The city of Rome taken and plundered by the Imperialists under Bourbon, who is slain	284
	VOL. II.	The

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
	The Pope is made prisoner	285
	Horrid circumstances with which the sacking of Rome was accompanied	ibid.
	Charles V. though highly pleased with the success of his arms, affects the deepest sorrow on the occasion	ibid.
1528	The French again invade Italy, and lose another army	286
1529	The Turks threaten Germany	287
	Peace of Cambray	ibid.
	The Italian states abandoned to the will of the Emperor	288
	His leprosy	ibid.

## L E T T E R LIX.

*The general View of the Affairs of Europe, and of the Progress of the Reformation in the Continent, continued from the Peace of Cambray to that of Creffay, in 1544.*

	Almost one half of the Germanic body had embraced the opinions of Luther, during the contest between the Emperor and the Pope	289
1529	Charles V. summons a diet at Spire, to take into consideration the state of religion	ibid.
	The diet issues a decree, confirming the edict of Worms against Luther, and prohibiting the abolition of the mass	290
	Several princes and imperial cities protest against this decree	ibid.
	Hence they were called PROTESTANTS; an appellation become common to all the Christian sects, who have since separated themselves from the church of Rome	ibid.
1530	The Confession of Augsbury, or system of protestant opinions	ibid.
1531	The league of Smalkalde	291
1532	The Protestants obtain liberty of conscience	ibid.
1533	The Emperor Charles V. takes the field against the Turks, and charges Solymán II. to retire	292
	He visits Spain	ibid.
	Great disorders in Germany during his absence, occasioned by a fanatical sect named Anabaptists	ibid.
	Their absurd tenets and licentious conduct	293
1534	They form a kind of sensual republic at Munster	ibid.
	John of Leyden, their apostle, assumes the title of King	294
1535	Munster taken by surprize, and most of the Anabaptists slain	ib.
	John of Leyden, being made prisoner, suffers death with the surname of a martyr	ibid.
	Charles V. solicited to undertake an expedition against the pyratral states on the coast of Africa	295
	Account of those states, and of the famous corsair, Barbarossa	ib.
	The Emperor sets sail for Tunis with a formidable armament	296
	Taken the Goleza, or key of the harbour, by storm; defeats Barbarossa	ibid.

# CONTENTS:

A.D.		Page
	Barbarossa in the field: makes himself master of Tunis, and procures liberty to twenty thousand Christian slaves	296
1535	The King of France, during the absence of Charles, revives his claims in Italy	297
	Persecutes the Protestants, in order to shew his zeal for the ancient faith	ibid.
	He walks in procession before the host through the city of Paris	298
	Invades the dominions of the Duke of Savoy	ibid.
	Death of Sforza, Duke of Milan	299
	The Emperor seizes on that duchy	ibid.
	Francis I. claims it	300
1536	War between them renewed	ibid.
	Charles invades France	ibid.
	Admirable plan of defence adopted by the King	301
	The Emperor obliged to retreat, after having lost one half of his army, without making himself master of one important place	302
1537	Indecent display of the resentment of Francis	303
	A suspension of arms takes place between the hostile rivals	304
	Barbarossa ravages the coast of Italy	ibid.
	The Turks invade Hungary, and defeat the Germans at Essek on the Drave	305
	Truce between the Emperor and the King of France concluded at Nice	ibid.
	Francis visits Charles on board his galley off the coast of Provence	306
	Charles returns his visit on shore	ibid.
	Affassination of Lorenzo of Medicis	ibid.
	The Emperor's troops mutiny for want of pay	307
1539	The Cortes of Castile, assembled at Toledo, refuse to grant him the supplies demanded	ibid.
	He dismisses them with indignation, and subverts the ancient constitution of that national assembly	308
	The citizens of Ghent break out into open rebellion, on account of an unconstitutional tax	ibid.
	They offer their sovereignty to Francis I. who rejects it, and betrays them to Charles	309
1540	The Emperor punishes them with awful severity, and strips their city of its ancient privileges	310
	He incenses Francis, by finally denying him the investiture of the duchy of Milan	311
1541	Assists at a conference of Protestant and Popish Divines	312
	Rapid progress of the Turks in Hungary	313
	Great revolution in that kingdom	ibid.
	It becomes a province of the Ottoman empire	314
	Charles V. undertakes an expedition against Algiers	ibid.

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1541	Account of that pyratrical state - -	315
	The Emperor lands on the coast of Africa - -	ibid.
	His fleet dispersed by a violent storm, and his army obliged to reimbark in the greatest distress - -	ibid.
	His fortitude under all his disasters - -	316
	The utter failure of his enterprize encourages the King of France to commence hostilities against him - -	ibid.
	Charles secures the fidelity of the Protestant Princes by new con- cessions, and gains the alliance of Henry VIII. of England	317
1542	Vast and speedy military preparations of Francis I. - -	ibid.
1543	He is assisted by a Turkish fleet, under Barbarossa - -	318
1544	The Imperialists defeated in the battle of Cerisoles - -	ibid.
	Peace between Charles and Francis concluded at Crespy - -	ibid.
	The Emperor's motives for acceding to that treaty - -	319
1545	Hostilities continued between France and England - -	ibid.
1546	Henry and Francis negotiate a peace at Cercamp - -	ibid.

## L E T T E R LX.

*The domestic History of England during the Reign of Henry  
VIII. with some Account of the Affairs of Scotland and of  
the Rise of the Reformation in both Kingdoms.*

1509	Fortunate situation of Henry VIII. at his accession	320
	His mental and personal qualities	ibid.
	He grants a warrant for the execution of Empson and Dudley, two instruments of his father's rapacity	ibid.
	Consummates his marriage with the Infanta Catherine, his brother's widow	321
	Absolute ascendancy of Wolsey over the King	ibid.
1521	Execution of the duke of Buckingham	322
1527	Henry resolves to divorce Queen Catherine	ibid.
	Character of Anne Boleyn	323
	She captivates the King's heart	ibid.
1529	The Pope opposes the dissolution of Henry's marriage	324
	The principal universities in Europe consulted on the subject, by the advice of Dr. Thomas Cranmer	326
1530	Fall and death of Wolsey	327
1532	Cranmer, become Archbishop of Canterbury, dissolves the King's marriage with Catherine	328
	He espouses Anne Boleyn	ibid.
1533	Final rupture between Henry and the see of Rome	329
1534	He is declared, by the Parliament, "The <i>only</i> supreme HEAD "of the Church of England <i>upon Earth</i> !"	ibid.
	Consequences of this declaration	330
	Dogmatical and tyrannical disposition of Henry VIII.	ibid.
1535	Execution of Sir Thomas More, for refusing to acknowledge the King's supremacy	331
	Diffolution	

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1536	Dissolution of the lesser monasteries -	331
	Decay of Henry's affections for his Queen, Anne Boleyn	332
	Her trial and execution -	333
	The King marries Jane Seymour -	ibid.
	The Duke of Norfolk suppresses a rebellion in Lincolnshire, raised by the expelled monks -	335
1537	The Queen delivered of a son -	ibid.
	Her death -	ibid.
	Impositions of the Romish clergy -	336
1538	Suppression of the monasteries all over England	337
1539	The law of the Six Articles -	ibid.
1540	Henry VIII. marries Anne of Cleves -	338
	Execution of Lord Cromwell -	339
	The King's marriage dissolved by the Convocation	ibid.
	He espouses Catharine Howard, niece to the Duke of Norfolk -	ibid.
	Persecutes the Protestants -	340
1541	Discovers that his Queen had been incontinent before marriage	ibid.
1542	Brings her to the block, and passes a very singular law	341
	Makes war against his nephew, James V. of Scotland	ibid.
	Disasters and death of James	343
	Henry forms a project for uniting the crowns of England and Scotland -	ibid.
1543	Marries Catherine Par, widow of Lord Latimer	344
1546	Example of her address in soothing his violent temper	345
	He cruelly persecutes all who differ from him in religious opinions -	346
	Execution of the Earl of Surrey -	347
1547	Death of Henry VIII. -	ibid.
	Reflections on his tyrannical administration -	348
	He makes the Parliament the instrument of his despotism	349
	Danger of such policy to the British constitution	ibid.

## L E T T E R LXI.

*A general View of the Continent of Europe, including the Progress of the Reformation in Germany, from the first Meeting of the Council of Trent, in 1546, to the Peace of Religion concluded at Passau, in 1552.*

1546	The Emperor Charles V. concludes a peace with Solyman II,	350
	He enters into an alliance with Pope Paul III. for the extirpation of heresy -	ibid.
	The Protestants refuse to acknowledge the legality of the Council of Trent -	351
	The Emperor resolves to compel their obedience, but endeavours to conceal his purpose in raising arms	ibid.
		Death



# C O N T E N T S,

A.D.		Page
1546	Death of Luther	352
	State of Germany	ibid.
	The Protestants assemble a great army	353
	They imprudently negotiate, instead of fighting	ibid.
	Are deserted by Maurice, Marquis of Misnia	354
	His profound dissimulation	ibid.
	He invades the electorate of Saxony	ibid.
	The Elector separates himself from the confederates, in order to preserve his hereditary dominions	355
1547	All the members of the leagues of Smalkalde submit to the Emperor, except the Landgrave of Hesse	ibid.
	Paul III. become jealous of the power of Charles V. raises up new enemies against him	356
	Death of Francis I. and accession of his son Henry II.	357
	The Emperor defeats the forces of John Frederick, Elector of Saxony, and makes him prisoner	358
	Dignified behaviour of that prince	ibid.
	Heroic conduct of his wife Sybilla	359
	In compliance with the entreaties of his family, he submits to humiliating conditions	360
	The Electorate of Saxony bestowed upon Maurice	361
	Cruel treatment of the Landgrave of Hesse	ibid.
	Charles V. governs Germany with absolute sway	362
	He summons a diet at Augsburg, "finally to compose the controversies in regard to religion."	ibid.
1548	Protests against the translation of the General Council from Trent to Bologna	364
	Publishes a temporary system of doctrine and worship, under the name of the <i>Interim</i>	ibid.
	It pleases neither Protestants nor Papists	365
	Manly firmness of the deposed Elector of Saxony	366
	Discontents of the Sacred College at the publication of the <i>Interim</i>	367
	Enmity between the Pope and the Emperor	368
	Rapacity of Charles	ibid.
1549	Death of Paul III.	369
	Affecting circumstances with which it was accompanied	ibid.
	Character of the new Pontiff, Julius III.	370
1550	He orders the General Council to re-assemble at Trent	ibid.
	The Emperor refuses to set the Landgrave of Hesse at liberty	372
	Singular act of his despotism	ibid.
1551	Fails in an attempt to get his son Philip declared King of the Romans	373
	He turns all his attention to the establishment of uniformity of religion in the empire	374
	War of Parma	375
	Proceedings	

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1552	Proceedings of the Council of Trent -	376
	The German Protestants prohibited from teaching any doctrine contrary to its decrees -	ibid.
	Maurice, Elector of Saxony, resolves to oppose the civil and religious despotism of the Emperor -	377
	Charles entertains no apprehensions of his designs -	378
	A new revolution in Hungary -	379
	Ferdinand King of the Romans, the Emperor's brother, obtains that crown, through the intrigues of Martinuzzi, Bishop of Waradin -	380
	Cruelly orders Martinuzzi, to be assassinated -	ibid.
	Maurice concludes an alliance with Henry II. of France -	381
1552	He demands in vain the liberty of the Langrave -	ibid.
	The Emperor remains in the delusive security -	382
	Maurice and his Protestant Confederates take the field -	383
	The King of France at the same time takes arms, and makes himself master of Metz, Toul, and Verdun -	ibid.
	The Emperor has recourse to negotiation -	384
	Maurice attempts to surprise him at Inspruck -	ibid.
	He escapes over the Alps in a litter -	ibid.
	Maurice negotiates with the King of the Romans -	385
	The Peace of Religion concluded at Passau -	386
	The Protestant worship in Germany established on a firm basis -	387

## L E T T E R LXII.

*England, from the Death of Henry VIII. until the Accession of Elizabeth, in 1558, together with an Account of the Affairs of Scotland during that Period, and of the Progress of Religion in both the British Kingdoms.*

1547	Henry VIII. succeeded by his son, Edward VI. only nine years of age -	388
	The Duke of Somerset, the young King's uncle, chosen Protector during his minority -	389
	Somerset is warmly attached to the cause of the Reformation -	ib.
	Assisted by the counsels of Archbishop Cranmer, he plans the establishment of the Church of England, as now constituted -	390
	He prepares for a war with Scotland -	ibid.
	State of religion in that kingdom -	391
	Scottish Reformers persecuted -	ibid.
	Murder of Cardinal Beaton -	392
	Somerset enters Scotland at the head of an English army -	393
	The Scots defeated with great slaughter in the battle of Pinkie -	394
	They	

# C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1547	They imprudently throw themselves into the arms of France, and send Mary, their young Queen, to be educated in that kingdom, where she is married to the Dauphin, afterward Francis II.	394
1548	Somerſet obliged to return, in order to quell the cabals in the English court	395
1549	Execution of his brother, Lord Seymour	396
	The English Liturgy completed, and eſtabliſhed by Act of Parliament	ibid.
	Infurrections in England, occaſioned by the ſuppreſſion of monaſteries	397
	Somerſet offends the Nobility and Gentry, by ſiding with the people	398
	He is compelled to reſign the Protectorſhip, and committed to the Tower	ibid.
1550	A Council of Regency appointed under the Earl of Warwick	ibid.
	Warwick negotiates a treaty with France	ibid.
1551	Procures for himſelf the eſtate of the Northumberland family, and the title of Duke	399
1552	Execution of Somerſet	400
	Ambitious projects of the Duke of Northumberland	ibid.
	He perſuades the King to diſinherit his ſiſters	401
1583	The ſucceſſion to the Crown ſettled on Lady Jane Gray, married to Lord Guildford Dudley, Northumberland's fourth ſon	402
	Death of Edward VI.	ibid.
	Northumberland induces Lady Jane Gray to accept of the Crown	403
	She is obliged to reſign it to the Princeſs Mary	404
	Northumberland tried, and executed for high treaſon	405
	Queen Mary takes meaſures for re-eſtabliſhing the Popiſh communion	ibid.
	Account of Cardinal Pole	406
	The Queen of England deſires that he may be ſent over in the character of Legate from the Holy See	407
1554	She is married to Philip II. of Spain, ſon of the Emperor Charles V.	408
	Diſcontents of the people	409
	Wyat's rebellion	ibid.
	It is ſpeedily ſuppreſſed	410
	Execution of Lord Guildford Dudley and Lady Jane Gray	ib.
	Magnanimous behaviour of Lady Jane	411
	The Romiſh religion reſtored	ibid.
1555	Furious perſecution in England	412
	Martyrdom of Hooper Biſhop of Glouceſter, and Farar Biſhop of St. David's	ibid.

# CONTENTS.

A.D.		Page
1555	Martyrdom of Ridley, Latimer, and other protestant divines	413
1556	----- of Archbishop Crammer	414
	Brutal character of Bishop Bonner	415
1557	War with France	416
	Loss of Calais	417
1558	Death and character of Queen Mary	418
	Account of the princess Elizabeth her sister, who succeeds to the crown	419
1559	Queen Elizabeth, on her accession, re-establishes the Protestant religion in England	ibid.

## LETTER LXIII.

*The Continent of Europe, from the Peace of Casson, in 1552, to the Peace of Chateau Cambresis, in 1559.*

1552	The emperor Charles V. resolves to attempt the recovery of Metz, Toul, and Verdun	420
	Henry II. of France, commits the defence of Metz to the duke of Guise	421
	Great military talents of that commander	ibid.
	His activity in repairing the fortifications, and taking every other measure for the security of the place	422
	The emperor invades Metz	ibid.
	Is obliged to raise the siege	423
	Miserable state of the imperial camp	ibid.
	Humanity and generosity of the duke of Guise	ibid.
	Decline of the emperor's affairs in Italy	424
1553	Germany distracted by the ambition of Albert of Brandenburg	425
	He is defeated at Siverhausen by Maurice, elector of Saxony	ib.
	Maurice dies of a wound received in battle	426
	Albert is obliged to take refuge in France	ibid.
	Hostilities in the Netherlands, Italy, and Hungary	427
	Germany enjoys profound tranquillity	428
1555	Recess of Augsburg	429
	Resignation of Charles V.	431
	His advice to his son, Philip II. of Spain	432
	He attempts in vain, on retiring, to restore peace to Europe	433
1556	War in Italy and the Low Countries	434
1557	Arrogance of pope Paul IV.	435
	The French defeated with great slaughter in the battle of St. Quintin	436
	Philip II. erects the Escorial in honour of that victory	437
	He restores peace to Italy	438
1558	The duke of Guise takes Thionville	439
	Is opposed by the forces of Philip, under the duke of Savoy	440
	The French and Spanish monarchs incline to peace	ibid.
	Account	

## C O N T E N T S.

A.D.		Page
1558	Account of the emperor Charles V. in his retirement	441
	His death and character	442
	His brother Ferdinand acknowledged emperor of Germany	443
	Philip and Henry court the favour of Elizabeth	444
1559	Treaty between Henry and the English queen	445
	The negociation between France and Spain forwarded by two treaties of marriage	446
	Peace of Chateau Cambresis	447
	Death of Henry II. and of Paul IV.	ibid.
	Close of a memorable period in the history of Modern Europe	ib.

## L E T T E R LXIV.

*Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, from the Union of those Kingdoms under Margaret Waldemar, surnamed the Semiramis of the North, to the Death of Gustavus Vasa; together with an Account of the State of Russia, Poland, and Prussia, in the Sixteenth Century.*

1397	Union of the three northern crowns established at Calmar, by the states of the three kingdoms	449
	Vigorous administration of Margaret Waldemar	ibid.
1520	The Swedes having repeatedly revolted, are finally subdued by Christian II. of Denmark	450
	Circumstances with which this revolution was accompanied	ib.
	Horrid massacre of the Swedish nobles	451
	Account of Gustavus Vasa	452
1523	He recovers the independency of Sweden, and is chosen king	453
	Christian II. renders himself obnoxious even to the Danish subjects, and is deposed	ibid.
1524	Frederick duke of Holstein chosen king of Denmark and Norway	454
1537	The protestant religion introduced into those kingdoms, by his son Christian III. as into Sweden by Gustavus Vasa	ibid.
1560	Death and character of Gustavus	ibid.
	Introduction to the history of Russia	455
	----- of Poland	ibid.
	----- of Prussia	456

## L E T T E R LXV.

*England, Scotland, and France, from the Peace of Chateau Cambresis, in 1559, to the Death of Francis II. and the Return of Mary Queen of Scots to her native Kingdom.*

1559	Ambitious views of the duke of Guise and his brothers	458
	They usurp the whole administration under Francis II. and induce	

# C O N T E N T S

A.D. 1559		Page
	induce their niece, Mary Stuart, queen of France and of Scotland, to set up a claim to the crown of England	458
	They obtain a bull from the Pope declaring Elizabeth's birth illegitimate	459
	Give orders to their sister, the queen-regent of Scotland, to suppress the protestant opinions in that kingdom	ibid.
	Measures of the Scottish reformers	460
	They style themselves the <i>Congregation of the Lord</i> , and enter into a bond for their common protection	ibid.
	Petition the convocation, that prayers may be said in the vulgar tongue	461
	Their demand rejected, and their most eminent teachers cited to appear before the privy-council	462
	The members of the Congregation assemble in large bodies	ibid.
	The queen promises to put a stop to the proceedings against their pastors	ibid.
	She breaks her promise	463
	The Protestants prepare for their defence	ibid.
	Account of John Knox	ibid.
	He inflames the populace, assembled at Perth, by a violent harangue against popery	464
	They break all the images in the churches, and destroy the monasteries	ibid.
	The queen-regent collects an army, and the leaders of the Protestants prepare for resistance	465
	She concludes a treaty with the Congregation	ibid.
	Violates the stipulations	ibid.
	The Protestants have again recourse to arms	ibid.
	They aim at the redress of civil as well as of religious grievances	466
	The queen-regent refuses to comply with their demands	ibid.
	They formally divest her of the regency	467
	She shuts herself up in the fortified town of Leith, which was garrisoned with French troops	ibid.
	The Protestants, being defeated before that place, implore the assistance of Elizabeth	468
1560	The queen of England, by the advice of her ministers, resolves to support the Scottish malcontents	469
	An English army enters Scotland, and besieges Leith, in conjunction with the forces of the Congregation	470
	Death of the queen-regent	ibid.
	View of the progress of the Reformation in France	471
	Conspiracy of Amboise	ibid.
	The French Protestant demand the free exercise of their religion	ibid.
	They become formidable to the court	472
		Francis

# CONTENTS.

A.D.		Page
1560	Francis and Mary, by the advice of the duke of Guise, conclude with Elizabeth the treaty of Edinburgh	472
	This treaty favourable to the Congregation	473
1561	The French and English forces evacuate Scotland, and the Protestants proceed rapidly in the work of reformation	ibid.
	The presbyterian form of worship established in that kingdom	474
	Francis and Mary refuse to ratify the proceedings of the Scottish parliament	ibid.
	The Protestants put the statutes in execution, and discharge their rage against popery upon the churches and monasteries	ibid.
	Death of Francis II.	475
1561	Catherine of Medicis appointed guardian to her son Charles IX. only ten years of age	ibid.
	Decline of the power of the duke of Guise, and joy of the Scottish Protestants	476
	Mary queen of Scots solicited to return to her native kingdom	477
	Her reluctance to leave France	ibid.
	Her spirited reply to Throgmorton the English ambassador	478
	She embarks on board a galley at Calais, and arrives safe at Leith	ibid.
	Affecting circumstances that accompanied her voyage	479

## LETTER LXVI.

*France, England, and Scotland, from the Return of Mary Stuart to her native Kingdom, in 1561, till her imprisonment, and the Proclamation of her son, James VI. together with a Retrospective View of the Affairs of Spain.*

1561	Mary is received by her Scottish subjects with the loudest acclamations of joy	480
	Her beauty and accomplishments	ibid.
	She bestows her confidence on the leaders of the protestant party	481
	Knowing her to be a papist, they never believe her to be sincere in her professions of good will	ibid.
	She with difficulty obtains liberty to celebrate mass in her own chapel	ibid.
	Insulted by John Knox, who acquires great influence both in the church and state	482
	She courts the friendship of Elizabeth	ibid.
	Jealous prudence of the English queen	483
	A seeming reconciliation between the rival sovereigns	ibid.
	Cruel bigotry of Philip II.	484
		Hc

# CONTENTS

A.D.		Page
1561	He persecutes the Protestants in Spain and the Low Countries	484
	Elizabeth sees the necessity of supporting them	485
	Catherine of Medicis attempts to govern France by balancing the Catholics against the Protestants	486
1562	The Protestants allowed the free exercise of their religion without the walls of towns	ibid.
	Massacre of Vassy	487
	The Protestants fly to arms	ibid.
	Deplorable state of France	ibid.
	Philip II. become jealous of the progress of the French Protestants, or Hugonots, sends six thousand men to reinforce the Catholic party	488
	The Hugonots crave the assistance of Elizabeth	ibid.
	She sends six thousand men for their support	489
	The Catholics make themselves masters of Rouen	ibid.
	The battle of Dreux	490
1563	Assassination of the Duke of Guise	ibid.
	An accommodation between the Protestants and Catholics	491
	Elizabeth, dissatisfied with the conditions, refuses to deliver up Havre de Grace	ibid.
	The garrison, after an obstinate resistance, is obliged to capitulate	492
1564	Harmony between the queens of England and Scotland broken, by Mary's project of marrying Lord Darnley	ibid.
	Character of that young nobleman	493
	Motives of Elizabeth for wishing to obstruct their union	494
1565	Marriage of the queen of Scots	495
	She suppresses a rebellion excited by the English Queen	ibid.
	Ungenerous conduct of Elizabeth to the Scottish exiles	496
	Conspiracy of Bayonne; being a confederacy between the courts of France and Spain for the extinction of the reformed religion, and the destruction of the Protestants all over Europe	497
1566	The queen of Scots accedes to that confederacy	ibid.
	Account of David Rizio	498
	Darnley becomes jealous of his intimacy with Mary	499
	Violent temper and dissolute life of this nobleman after his marriage	ibid.
	Mary's coldness the effect of his own misconduct, not of a criminal passion	500
	Murder of Rizio	501
	Barbarous manner in which it was perpetrated	ibid.
	Implacable resentment of Mary against her husband	502
	She makes him disown all connexion with the conspirators, and renders him contemptible by so notorious a falsehood	ibid.
	She is delivered of a son	503
	Behaviour	



# C O N T E N T S.

A. D.		Page
1566	Behaviour of Elizabeth on that intelligence	503
	The English parliament presses her to marry or settle the succession to the crown	504
	Account of James Hepburn earl of Bothwell	505
	He insinuates himself into the affections of the Queen of Scots	ibid.
1567	Murder of Darnley	506
	The Earl of Bothwell suspected to be the author of it	ibid.
	Mary, instead of bringing him to justice, honours him with her confidence, and marries him	507
	Bothwell attempts to get the young prince into his power	508
	The Scottish nobles associate for the protection of the prince's person, and the punishment of the king's murderers	ibid.
	The queen, deserted by her troops at Carberry-hill, is made prisoner	509
	Bothwell makes his escape, and dies in a foreign prison	ibid.
	Mary is carried in triumph to Edinburgh, and afterward confined in the castle of Lochleven	510
	Her disconsolate situation	511
	She is prevailed upon to sign a resignation of the crown	512
	The earl of Murray, her natural brother, appointed regent, under the infant king, who is proclaimed by the name of James VI.	ibid.

## L E T T E R LXVII.

*Great Britain from the Flight of the Queen of Scots into England, with an Account of the Civil Wars on the Continent, till the Death of Charles IX. of France; in 1574.*

1567	The Scottish parliament, summoned by the earl of Murray, as regent, declares the queen's resignation valid, and her imprisonment lawful	513
1568	A body of the nobles assemble at Hamilton, and concert measures for supporting her cause	ibid.
	She escapes from confinement, and joins them	514
	They are totally defeated in the battle of Langside	515
	Mary seeks refuge in England, and throws herself on the generosity of her kinswoman, Elizabeth	ibid.
	Insidious policy of the English queen	516
	She considers herself as umpire between the queen of Scots and her subjects, and proposes to appoint commissioners to hear the pleadings on both sides	ibid.
	Magnanimous reply of Mary	517
	She is induced to consent to the proposed trial	518
	Conferences held between the Scottish and English commissioners on the subject	519
	Mary is accused by the regent of consenting to the murder of her husband, and of being accessory to the contrivance and execution of it	ibid.

# CONTENTS.

A.D.		Page
1568	He produces proofs in support of his charge	520
	Mary's commissioners break off the conference	521
	She haughtily refuses, either to resign her crown, or to associate her son in the government with her	ibid.
	Elizabeth resolves to detain her a prisoner in England	522
	A marriage projected between the queen of Scots and the duke of Norfolk	523
1569	The confederacy for that purpose discovered, and defeated	524
	Norfolk is committed to the Tower	ibid.
	An unsuccessful attempt made, by the earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, to procure liberty to the Queen of Scots by force of arms	525
1570	Violent death of the earl of Murray	526
	The earl of Lennox elected regent of Scotland	527
	Retrospective view of the religious wars in France	528
	The battle of St. Denis [1568]	ibid.
	— of Jarnac [1569]	529
	The prince of Condé, being wounded and made prisoner, is killed in cold blood	ibid.
	Coligny, the leader of the Hugonots, invests Poitiers	530
	The young duke of Guise obliges him to raise the siege	ibid.
	Coligny defeated in the battle of Moncontour	ibid.
	He again appears formidable	531
	The Hugonots, by a new treaty, obtain liberty of conscience, and several places of refuge	ibid.
1571	Their leaders invited to Paris, and loaded with favours, in order to lull them into security	532
	Sanguinary despotism established by Philip II. in the Low Countries	533
	Insolence and cruelty of the duke of Alva	534
	Conspiracy for the relief of the Queen of Scots	535
1572	It is discovered, and the duke of Norfolk is condemned and executed for his share in it	536
	Scotland continues in a state of anarchy	537
	The earl of Morton succeeds to the regency, on the death of Marre, who had succeeded Lennox	ibid.
	Violent proceedings in that kingdom	538
	Charles IX. of France insidiously caresses the Hugonots	ibid.
	The massacre of Paris (Aug. 24.)	539
	Horrid circumstances with which it was attended	ibid.
	Exultation of the Spanish, and sorrow of the English court on that occasion	540
	Cautious conduct of Elizabeth	541
	The Hugonots, instead of being annihilated, (though sixty thousand of them were slaughtered) are only roused to more vigorous efforts	542
1573	They obtain advantageous terms of peace	ibid.
1574	Death of Charles IX.	543
	His atrocious character	ibid.

# C O N T E N T S.

## L E T T E R    L X V I I I.

*Germany, from the Resignation of Charles V. to the Death of Maximilian II. with some Account of the Affairs of Spain, Italy, and Turkey during that Period.*

A.D.	Page
1557 Ferdinand I. convokes a diet at Ratifbon, which confirms the peace of religion	544
1560 Pius IV. issues a bull for the re-assembling of the Council of Trent	ibid.
1562 The Protestant princes persist in denying the authority of that council	545
1563 It is finally dissolved	548
1564 Death of Ferdinand I.	ibid.
1565 His son and successor, Maximilian II. unavoidably engaged in a war with the Turks	ibid.
Solyman II. sends a fleet and army to reduce the island of Malta	547
His general, Mustapha, after a siege of five months, is obliged to relinquish the enterprize	ibid.
1566 Solyman enters Hungary in person at the head of a powerful army, and invests Sigeth	ibid.
Gallant defence and death of Zerini, the governor	548
The place is taken	ibid.
Death of Solyman II.	ibid.
His son and successor Selim II. concludes a truce with the emperor Maximilian	ibid.
1570 Selim turns his arms against the island of Cyprus	549
Obstinate defence of Famagosta	ibid.
1571 It is compelled to surrender, and the whole island submits to the sultan	ibid.
Great naval armament fitted out by the Christian powers, under Don John of Austria	ibid.
Oct. 5. Battle of Lepanto	550
The Turkish fleet utterly destroyed	ibid.
The Christians, by reason of their want of union, derive little advantage from their victory	551
1573 The Venetians conclude a peace with Selim	ibid.
Don John makes himself master of Tunis, and proposes to erect an independent sovereignty on the coast of Barbary	552
Tunis is invested by a Turkish fleet and army	ibid.
Taken by storm, and the garrison put to the sword	ibid.
Germany enjoys profound peace under the mild government of Maximilian II.	ibid.
1576 His death	ibid.

---

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
MODERNEUROPE.

---

PART I.

From the Rise of the MODERN KINGDOMS to  
the PEACE of WESTPHALIA, in 1648.

---

LETTER XLII.

ENGLAND *from the Death of EDWARD III. to the Accession of HENRY V. with some Account of the Affairs of SCOTLAND during that Period.*

AFTER seeing England victorious over France and Spain, you have seen her, my dear Philip, stript almost of all her possessions on the continent, and Edward III. expiring with much less glory than had distinguished the more early periods of his reign. His successor, Richard II. son of the Black Prince, was little able to recover what had been lost through the indisposition of his father, and the dotage of his grandfather. Happy had it been for him, and for his people, could he have ruled his own kingdom with judgment!

VOL. II.

B

R1.

LETTER  
XLII.

A. D. 1377.

## PART I

A.D. 1377.

RICHARD was certainly a weak prince, but his weakness was not immediately perceived or felt by the nation. He was only, at his accession, a boy of eleven years of age, from whom consequently little could be expected. The habits of order and obedience, which the nobility had been taught by the third Edward, still influenced them; and the authority of Richard's three uncles, the dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester, sufficed to repress for a time that turbulent spirit, to which the great barons were so often subject during a weak reign. The different characters of those three princes rendered them also a counterpoise to each other; so that there appeared no new circumstance in the domestic situation of England, which could endanger the public peace, or give any immediate apprehensions to the lovers of their country.

A.D. 1380.

BUT this flattering prospect proved delusive. Discontents and dissensions soon took place among all orders of men. The first tumult was of the popular kind. War had been carried on between France and England, after the death of Edward III. but in so languid a manner as served only to exhaust the finances of both kingdoms. In order to repair the expences of these fruitless armaments, the English parliament found it necessary to impose a poll-tax, of three groats a head, on every person, male and female, above fifteen years of age. The inequality and injustice of this tax was obvious to the meanest capacity, and the rigorous manner in which it was levied made it yet more grievous. The great body of the people, many of whom were still in a state of slavery, became severely sensible of the unequal lot which fortune had assigned them in the distribution of her favours. They looked up to the first origin  
of

of mankind from one common stock, their equal right to liberty, and to all the benefits of nature. Nor did they fail to reflect on the tyranny of artificial distinctions, the abuses which had arisen from the degradation of the more considerable part of the species, and the aggrandisement of a few individuals <sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
XLII.  
A. D. 1380.

“ When Adam delv'd, and Eve span,  
“ Where was then the gentleman ?”

was their favourite distich : and although these verses, when misapplied, strike at the foundation of all society, they contain a sentiment so flattering to that sense of primitive equality, engraved in the hearts of all men, as never to be repeated without some degree of approbation.

WHEN the discontents of the populace were thus prepared, the insolence of a tax-gatherer, and the spirit of a blacksmith, blew them into a flame. While the blacksmith was at work, in a village of Essex, the tax-gatherer came into his shop, and demanded payment for his daughter. The father replied, that she was below the age prescribed by the statute : the tax-gatherer affirmed she was a full grown woman, and in proof of his assertion attempted an indecency which incensed the blacksmith to such a degree, that he knocked the ruffian dead with his forge-hammer. The by standers applauded the action, and exclaimed that it was full time for the people to take vengeance on their tyrants, and assert their native rights. They flew to arms : the flame of sedition spread from county to county ; and before the government had the

A. D. 1381.

1. Froissard, liv. ii. Walsingham. Knighton.

PART I. least intimation of the danger, the disorder had grown  
beyond all controul or opposition.

A.D. 1381.

THESE mutinous peasants, to the number of one hundred thousand, assembled on Black-heath, under their leader, Wat Tyler; and sent a message to the king, who had taken shelter in the Tower, that they desired a conference with him. Richard sailed down the river in a barge for that purpose; but on approaching the shore, he discovered such symptoms of tumult and insolence, that he judged it prudent to return. Finding, however, that the Tower would be no security against the lawless multitude, and afflicted at the ravages and cruelties of the rioters, who had broken into the city of London; plundered the merchants, and cut off the heads of all the gentlemen they could seize; the young king found it necessary to go out, and ask their demands. They required a general pardon; the abolition of slavery; freedom of commerce in market-towns, without toll or impost; and a fixed rent on lands, instead of the services due by villanage. These requests were highly reasonable; but the behaviour of Wat Tyler, their leader, who in making his demands, frequently brandished his sword in a menacing manner, so incensed William Walworth, lord mayor of London, that he lifted up his mace, or, as others say, his spear, and struck Tyler a violent blow which brought him to the ground, where he was instantly run through the body by another of the king's train. The mutineers seeing their leader fall, prepared themselves for revenge; and the king and his whole company must have perished on the spot, had not Richard discovered an extraordinary presence of mind in that extremity. He ordered his attendants to stop, advanced alone towards the enraged multitude, and accosting them with an affable and in-

intrepid countenance, "What! my good people," said he, "is the meaning of this commotion?—Be not concerned for the loss of your leader. I am your king: I will become your leader: follow me into the field, and you shall have whatever you desire." Over-awed by the royal presence, they implicitly followed him: and he peaceably dismissed them, after granting them their demands <sup>2</sup>.

LETTER  
XLII.

A. D. 1381.

RICHARD's conduct on this occasion, considering that he was only sixteen years of age, raised great expectations in the nation; but in proportion as he advanced in years, they gradually vanished, and his want of capacity, or at least of solid judgment, appeared in every measure which he adopted. His first expedition was against Scotland, into which he marched at the head of an army of sixty thousand men. The Scots did not pretend to make resistance against so great a force: they abandoned, without scruple, their rugged territory to be pillaged and laid waste by the enemy, and made an incursion into the more fertile provinces of England, where they collected a rich booty, and returned in tranquillity to their own country. The English monarch, however, wandered over great part of the comparatively barren kingdom of Scotland, and led his army back into England, without taking vengeance on the enemy for their devastations <sup>3</sup>. His impatience to return, and enjoy his usual pleasures and amusements, over-balanced every higher consideration, and made even revenge a motive too feeble to detain him.

A. D. 1385.

RICHARD, like most weak princes, now resigned himself wholly to the direction of a favourite, Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford, a young nobleman of dis-

2. Ibid.

3. T. Walsingham. Froissard, ubi sup.



**PART I.**

solite manners, whom he loaded with riches, with titles, and with dignities. He first created him marquis of Dublin, and afterwards duke of Ireland, with a parliamentary grant of the sovereignty of that kingdom for life. The usual, and but too often just complaints against the insolence of favourites, were soon loudly echoed, and greedily received, in all parts of England. A civil war was the consequence: the royal party was defeated; and Richard was obliged to resign the government into the hands of a council of fourteen, appointed by the parliament. The duke of Gloucester, who had been at the head of this insurrection, next entered an accusation against five of the king's ministers, who were declared guilty of high treason; and as many of them as could be seized were executed. The duke of Ireland made his escape beyond sea, as did Michael de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, who had discharged the office of lord high chancellor. Both died abroad.

IT might naturally be expected that Richard, thus reduced to a state of slavery by his subjects, and unable to defend his servants from the resentment of his uncles, would remain long in subjection, and never recover the royal power without the most violent struggles: but the event proved otherwise. In less than twelve months he was entirely reconciled to his uncles, and exercised the regal authority in its full extent.

AFTER these domestic disturbances were composed, and the government restored to its natural state, there passed an interval of eight years distinguished by no remarkable event; but during which the king brought himself into the lowest degree of personal contempt, even while his government appeared in a great measure

sure unexceptionable. Addicted to vulgar pleasures, he spent his whole time in feasting and jollity; and dissipated in idle shew, or lavished upon favourites of no reputation, that revenue which the people expected to see him employ in undertakings for the public honour and advantage.

LETTER  
XLII.

THE duke of Gloucester soon perceived the opportunities which this dissolute conduct of his nephew afforded him of insinuating himself into the affections of the nation; and he determined to aspire at popularity, as the ladder to the throne. He seldom appeared at court or in the council: he never declared his opinion but in order to disapprove of the measures embraced by the king and his favourites; and he courted the friendship of every man whom disappointment or private resentment had rendered an enemy to the administration. Richard, however, got intelligence of his designs, and ordered him unexpectedly to be arrested, and carried over to Calais; the only place where he could safely be detained in custody, by reason of his numerous partizans, and where he was soon after murdered. The royal vengeance fell also, though with different degrees of severity, on the earls of Arundel and Warwick, the supposed accomplices of Gloucester, and on the archbishop of Canterbury, Arundel's brother, who was banished the kingdom, Arundel himself was beheaded, and Warwick was doomed to perpetual confinement in the Isle of Man.

A. D. 1397.

THE destruction of the duke of Gloucester, and the supporters of his party, was followed by a misunderstanding among those noblemen who had joined in the procession; and the duke of Hereford, in particular, went so far as to accuse the duke of Norfolk in par-

4. T. Walsingham. Froissard, liv. iv. Rymer, vol. vii.

## PART I.

A. D. 1398.

liament of having spoken "many slanderous words of the king." Norfolk denied the charge; gave Hereford the lie, and offered to prove his innocence by duel. The challenge was accepted; the time and place of the combat were appointed, and the whole nation was held in suspense with regard to the event. But when the two champions appeared in the field, accounted for the fight, the king interposed, to prevent both the present effusion of blood, and the future consequences of the quarrel. He stopped the duel, by the advice and authority of the parliamentary commissioners, appointed to regulate the combat: and, by the same authority, he ordered both the combatants to leave the kingdom. Hereford was banished for ten years, and Norfolk for life.

THE sentence pronounced upon these two noblemen appears to have been impartial, but it surely was not equitable. The one was condemned without being charged with any offence; the other without being convicted of any crime. It was also unpopular. Richard's conduct in this affair was considered as a mark of the pusillanimity of his temper; and the weakness and fluctuation of his councils, at least, appear on no occasion more evident. Henry duke of Hereford, being a man of great prudence and self-command, behaved himself with so much humility after his condemnation, that the king promised to shorten the term of his exile four years; and also granted him letters patent empowering him, in case any inheritance should accrue to him during the interval, to enter into immediate possession. But Hereford, who was son to the duke of Lancaster, had no sooner left the kingdom than Richard's jealousy of the power and riches of that family revived; and he grew sensible, that by Gloucester's death he had only

removed a counterpoise to the Lancastrian interest, which was now become formidable to the throne. He therefore took every method to sully abroad the reputation of Henry duke of Hereford, and to obstruct his alliances, by representing him as guilty of treasonable practices; and when the duke of Lancaster died, he revoked his letters patent to Henry, and retained possession of the family estate<sup>6</sup>.

LETTER  
XLII.  
A.D. 1399.

THESE instances of rapacity and severity, and the circumstances with which they were accompanied, threw upon Richard the universal odium of the people. Hereford, now duke of Lancaster, had formerly acquired the esteem of the public by his valour and abilities. He was connected with most of the principal nobility by blood, alliance, or friendship; his misfortunes added double lustre to his merit; all men made his cause their own: they entered into his resentment; and they turned their eyes towards him as the only person who could retrieve the lost honour of the nation, or reform the abuses of government.

WHILE the minds of men were thus disposed, Richard went over to quell an insurrection in Ireland, and thereby imprudently afforded his exiled cousin an opportunity of gratifying the wishes of the nation. Henry landed at Ravenspur, in Yorkshire, accompanied only by sixty persons; but he was suddenly joined by the earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, two of the most potent barons in England, and the malcontents in all quarters flew to arms. He solemnly declared that he had no other purpose in this invasion than to recover the duchy of Lancaster, unjustly detained from him; and he entreated his uncle, the duke of York, who had been left guardian

6. Tyrrel, vol. iii. from the *Records*.

## PART I.

A. D. 1399.

of the kingdom, not to oppose a loyal and humble supplicant in the recovery of his legal patrimony. His entreaties had the desired effect. The guardian embraced his cause, and he immediately found himself master of England.

RICHARD no sooner received intelligence of this invasion than he hastened over from Ireland, and landed at Milford Haven, with a body of twenty thousand men. But even that small army was seized with the spirit of disaffection, and the king found himself almost entirely deserted. In this extremity he fled to the Isle of Anglesea, where he proposed to embark for France, and there wait the return of his subjects to a sense of their duty. But before he had an opportunity of carrying his design into execution, the earl of Northumberland waited upon him from the duke of Lancaster, with the strongest professions of loyalty and submission; and Richard was so credulous as to put himself in the power of his enemy. He was carried about in an abject manner, exposed to the insults of the populace; deposed, confined in prison, and afterwards murdered. And the duke of Lancaster was proclaimed king, under the name of Henry IV.

THE beginning of the reign of Henry IV. as may naturally be expected from the manner in which he obtained the throne, was stained by many acts of blood and violence. All who opposed his title fell a sacrifice to his rigid policy, and superstition was called in, to swell by new crimes the horrid catalogue. While a subject, Henry was believed to have strongly imbibed the principles of Wickliffe, a secular priest educated at Oxford, who, during the reigns of Ed-

ward III. and Richard II. preached the doctrine of reformation; but finding himself possessed of the throne by so precarious a title, this politic prince thought superstition a necessary engine of public authority. There had hitherto been no penal laws enacted against heresy in England: Henry, therefore, who made nothing of sacrificing his principles to his interest, understanding that the clergy called loudly for the punishment of the disciples of Wickliffe, whose learning and genius had in some measure broken the fetters of prejudice, resolved to procure the favour of the church by the most effectual of all methods, by gratifying her vengeance on those who presumed to dispute her infallibility. A law was accordingly enacted, That when any heretic, who relapsed, or refused to abjure his opinions, was delivered over to the secular arm, by the bishop or his commissaries, he should be committed to the flames by the civil magistrate, before the whole people<sup>s</sup>. This weapon did not long remain unemployed in the hands of the clergy. William Sautré, a clergyman in London, had been condemned by the convocation at Canterbury: his sentence was ratified by the house of peers; the king issued his writ for the execution; and the unhappy sectary suffered the punishment of fire, because he could not think as the church directed. What a fatal prelude to future horrors, proceeding from the same source!

A. D. 1409.

BUT all the prudence and precaution of Henry could not shield him from numerous alarms. He was threatened from France with an invasion, which was only prevented by the disorders in that country; and the revolution in England was speedily followed by an insurrection in Wales. Owen Glendour, descended

8. 2 Hen. IV. c. 7.

from

**PART I.****A.D. 1400.**

from the ancient princes of that country, had become obnoxious on account of his attachment to Richard; and Reginald, lord Grey of Ruthyn, who was closely connected with the new king, and who enjoyed a great fortune in the Marches of Wales, thought the opportunity favourable for oppressing his neighbour, and taking possession of his estate. Glendour, provoked at the injustice, and still more at the indignity, recovered possession by the sword. Henry sent assistance to Grey, the Welch took part with Glendour; a tedious and troublesome war was kindled, which Glendour long sustained by his valour and activity, aided by the natural strength of the country, and the untamed spirit of the inhabitants.

**A.D. 1401.** THE Scots also were tempted by these disorders to make incursions into England; and Henry, desirous of taking revenge upon them, conducted an army as far north as Edinburgh. But finding that the Scots would neither submit or give him battle, he returned without effecting any thing of consequence. Next season, however, Archibald earl of Douglas, who, at the head of twelve thousand men, attended by many of the principal nobility of Scotland, had made an irruption into the northern counties, was overtaken by the Percies of Northumberland on his return, at Homeldon, on the borders of England, where a fierce battle ensued, and the Scots were totally routed, Douglas himself was taken prisoner; as were the earls of Angus, Murray, Orkney, and many others of the Scottish nobility and gentry.

**A.D. 1402.**

WHEN Henry received intelligence of this victory, he sent the earl of Northumberland orders not to ransom his prisoners; a privilege which that nobleman

regarded as a by the then received laws of  
 war. The king intended to detain them, that he  
 might be able, by their means, to make an advance-  
 geous peace with Scotland. But by this selfish policy  
 he gave fresh strength to the powerful family of  
 Northumberland. The impatient spirit of Harry  
 Percy commonly known by the name of Hot-  
 spur, and the furious disposition of the earl of War-  
 wick, younger brother of the earl of Northumber-  
 land, inflamed the discontent of that nobleman; and  
 the precarious title of Hereditary Northumber-  
 land to seek revenge, by overturning that throne  
 which he had at first established. He entered into a  
 correspondence with Glendour: he set the earl of  
 Douglas at liberty, and made an alliance with that  
 martial chieftain. But when war was ready to break  
 out, the earl of Northumberland was unfortunately  
 seized with a sudden illness at Berwick; and young  
 Percy, taking the command of the troops, marched  
 towards Shrewsbury, in order to join his forces with  
 those of Glendour.

1455  
 1456  
 A.D. 1455

THE king had happily a small army on foot, with  
 which he intended to act against the Scots; and know-  
 ing the importance of celerity in all civil wars, he in-  
 stantly hurried down, in order to give battle to the  
 rebels. He approached Percy near Shrewsbury, be-  
 fore that nobleman was joined by Glendour; and  
 the policy of one leader, and impatience of the other,  
 made them hasten to a general engagement. The  
 armies were nearly equal in number, consisting of  
 about twelve thousand men each; and we scarcely find  
 any battle in those ages, where the shock was more  
 terrible or more constant. Henry exposed his person  
 in the thickest of the fight; and the prince of Wales,  
 his gallant son, whose military achievements became  
 after-

A.D. 1455



## PART I.

A.D. 1403.

afterwards so famous, and who here performed  
noviciate in arms, signalized himself in a remarkable  
manner. Percy supported that renown which he  
acquired in many a bloody combat; and Douglas  
his ancient enemy, and now his friend, still opposed  
his rival amid the horror and confusion of the battle.  
This nobleman performed feats of valour which  
are almost incredible. He seemed determined  
the king of England should fall that day by his arm.  
He sought him all over the field; and as Henry had  
counted several captains in the royal garb, in order to  
encourage his troops, the sword of Douglas rendered  
that honour fatal to many. But while the armies  
were contending in this furious manner, the death of  
Hotspur, accomplished by an unknown hand, decided  
the victory; the royalists prevailed. There are  
said to have fallen on both sides near two thousand and  
hundred gentlemen.

THE earl of Northumberland, having recovered  
from his sickness, had levied a fresh army, and  
on his march to join his son: but being opposed  
by the earl of Westmoreland, and hearing of the defeat  
at Shrewsbury, he dismissed his forces, and came with  
a small retinue to the king at York. He pretended  
that his sole intention in arming was to mediate  
between the parties. Henry thought proper to accept  
of the apology, and even granted him a pardon for  
offence. All the other rebels were treated with equal  
lenity: and, except the earl of Worcester and Sir  
Richard Vernon, who were regarded as the chief authors  
of the insurrection, no person engaged in that dangerous  
conspiracy seems to have perished by the hands  
of the executioner.

his rebellion was no sooner quelled than another ready to break out, supported by the earl of Nottingham and the archbishop of York. But it was over before it was ripe for execution, and the king and the archbishop were both beheaded. Northumberland also was concerned in this second rebellion but made his escape into Scotland; whence ready to commit new disorders, he was slain at Hexham, along with lord Bardolf<sup>11</sup>. The defeat of Northumberland, and the submission of the Welch, which followed soon after, freed Henry from all his domestic enemies; and a fortunate event which had thrown the crown of Scotland into his hands, secured him also secure on that quarter.

LETTER  
XLII.

A. D. 1405.

A. D. 1408.

A. D. 1409.

ROBERT III. king of Scotland, though a prince of great capacity, was extremely innocent and inoffensive in his conduct. But Scotland, at that time, was less fitted than England for cherishing a sovereign of such a character. The duke of Albany, Robert's brother, a prince of a boisterous and violent disposition, had assumed the government of the state; not satisfied with present authority, he entered into the criminal purpose of extirpating his brother's children, and of acquiring the crown to his family. He threw into prison David, his eldest son, who there perished by hunger; so that Robert, the younger brother of David, alone stood between the tyrant and the throne. Robert, therefore, on the news of his son's danger, embarked him on board a vessel with a view of sending him into France, and bringing him to the protection of that friendly power. Unfortunately, however, the vessel was taken by the English; and although there subsisted at that time a truce between the two kingdoms, Henry re-

11. T. Walsingham.

## PART I.

fused to restore the young prince to his liberty <sup>12</sup>. But he made ample amends for this want of generosity, by bestowing on James an excellent education, which afterwards qualified him, when he mounted the throne, to reform, in some measure, the rude and barbarous manners of his native country.

THE remaining part of the reign of Henry IV. was chiefly spent in regulating the affairs of his kingdom; which he at length brought into much order, by his valour, prudence, and address. In his latter years however, he began to turn his eyes towards those bright projects, which his more fortunate son conducted so successfully against the French monarchy; but his declining health prevented him from attempting to put any of them in execution. Afflicted for some years with violent fits, which frequently deprived him of all sensation, and threatened his existence, he was carried off by one of them at Westminster in the forty-sixth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign <sup>13</sup>. He left behind him the reputation of a wise prince, a prudent king, but a bad man; and yet, if we consider the circumstances, which he was involved, we can hardly conceive any person to carry his ambition to the same height, and transmit a throne to his posterity, with less violence to humanity.

A.D. 1413.

WE should now examine the affairs of France under Charles VI. as an introduction to the reign of Henry V. of England, who became sovereign of both kingdoms; but we must first carry forward the history of the empire and the church.

12. Euthanas, lib. 10. *Scotichronicon*, lib. xv.

13. Walsingham. Otterbourne.

## LETTER XLIII.

*The GERMAN EMPIRE and its Dependencies, ROME and the ITALIAN STATES, from the Accession of WINCESLAUS to the death of SIGISMUND.*

**T**HE history of the German empire, my dear Philip, becomes always more important to us, in proportion as we advance in the narration, though the empire itself grew daily less consequential. We now approach two principal events in the history of the church: the Great Schism in the West, and the Council of Constance.

LETTER  
XLIII.

WINCESLAUS, at the age of seventeen succeeded A.D. 1378, his father, Charles IV. in the government of the empire, and on the throne of Bohemia, when the church was divided by one of those violent contests so disgraceful to Christianity. The Italians had raised to the pontificate Urban VI. who confirmed the election of the new emperor, and the French had chosen Clement VII. During these troubles Wincellaus appointed Jadoc, marquis of Moravia, his vicar-general in Italy; laid injunctions on him to inquire which of the two persons chosen, was the true pope; to acknowledge and protect him whom he should find to be canonically elected, and to expel by force the other, who had intruded himself into the chair. He A.D. 1379, likewise held a diet at Nuremburg, and afterward one at Frankfort, where the affair of the popes being examined, Urban VI. was acknowledged by the German bishops and archbishops, and Wincellaus and the princes of the empire engaged to protect him in the papacy<sup>1</sup>.

1. Du Puy, *Hist. Gen. du Schisme*, &c. Maimbourg. *Hist. du Grand Schisme & Occident*.

## PART I.

A.D. 1379.

AFTER the diet of Frankfort, the emperor repaired to Aix-la-Chapelle, where he resided some time, because the plague raged in Bohemia; and here he gave himself up to all manner of debauchery, neglecting the affairs of the empire such a degree, that the princes and towns of Germany were obliged to enter into associations for their mutual defence. At the same time Italy was torn to pieces by the schism in the church. Clement, who had taken Rome from his rival, was expelled in his turn by the citizens, and afterwards settled at Avignon, the former residence of the French pontiffs. Urban used his victory like a tyrant. But all priests in power, it has been said, are tyrants. The famous Joan, queen of Naples, of whom I have already had occasion to speak, first experienced the effects of Urban's vengeance.

THIS princess, who had imprudently espoused the cause of Clement, had been several times married, but had no children by any of her husbands; she therefore adopted Charles de Durazzo, the natural heir to her kingdom, and the only remaining descendent of the house of Anjou in Naples. But Durazzo, unwilling to wait for the crown till the natural death of his adoptive mother, associated himself with pope Urban, who crowned him king of Naples at Rome, on condition that he should bestow the principality of Capua on Francis Prignano, nephew to his Holiness. Urban also deposed queen Joan, and declared her guilty of heresy and high-treason.

THESE steps being taken, the pope and Durazzo marched towards Naples. The church plate and church lands were sold, in order to facilitate the conquest. Joan meanwhile, was destitute of both money and troops. In this extremity, she invited to her

her assistance Lewis of Anjou, brother to Charles V. of France. But Lewis, whom she had adopted in the room of the ungrateful Durazzo, arrived too late to defend his benefactress, or dispute the kingdom with his competitor. The pope and Durazzo entered Naples, after having defeated and taken prisoner Otto of Brunswick, the queen's husband. All resistance now appeared to be in vain, and flight alone seemed practicable. But even in this the unfortunate Joan failed: she fell into the hands of the usurper; who, in order to give some colour to his barbarity, declared himself the avenger of the murder of her first husband. Lewis king of Hungary was consulted in regard to the fate of the unhappy queen. He replied, that she must suffer the same death which she had inflicted on his brother and her husband; Andrew: and Durazzo ordered her to be smothered between two matresses<sup>2</sup>. Thus perished the famous Joan I. queen of Naples, who was celebrated by Petrarch and Boccace; and whose life, character, and catastrophe, have a singular resemblance to those of the unfortunate Mary Stuart, queen of Scotland, whom I shall afterwards have occasion to mention.

LETTER  
C. 2  
A. D. 1382.

A. D. 1382.

WHILE one gallant woman thus sunk beneath the arm of power, another rose superior to all resistance. On the death of Olaus, king of Denmark, his mother Margaret ascended the throne, with the unanimous consent of the people; and even recommended herself so strongly to the Swedes, who were oppressed by their own king Albert, that they renounced their allegiance to that prince, and made her a solemn tenant of their crown. She accepted the offer; march-

A. D. 1387.

2. Gianone, *Hist. di Nap.*

## PART I.

A. D. 1388.

ed to their assistance, and defeated Albert, who was deposed, and obliged to retire into the dominions of his brother the duke of Mecklenburg. On this revolution in Sweden, Margaret assumed the reins of government, and was distinguished by the appellation of the Semiramis of the North <sup>3</sup>.

MEANTIME Winceflaus continued immersed in debauchery, and seemed industrious in acquiring the implacable hatred of his subjects by the extraordinary taxes he imposed, and the cruelties which he exercised upon people of all ranks. In order to familiarize himself to blood and carnage, he descended so low, as to contract an intimacy with the public executioner, whom he distinguished by the appellation of his gossip; and in one of his fits of intoxication, he is said to have ordered his cook to be roasted alive <sup>4</sup>.

ON account of these irregularities, and of selling the rights of the empire, both in Italy and Germany, the electors assembled at the castle of Laenstein on the Rhine, deposed Winceflaus, and raised to the imperial dignity Frederick duke of Brunswick and Lunenburg; but he being basely murdered by count Waldeck before his coronation, they elected in his stead Rupert or Robert count Palatine of the Rhine.

WINCESLAUS was so little mortified at the news of his deposition, that he is reported to have said, when he received the intelligence, "We are overjoyed to be delivered from the burden of the empire; because we shall have more leisure to apply ourselves to the government of our own kingdom:" and it must be owned, that during the nineteen years, which

3. Nuitsel. *Hist. Dan.* tom. iv.

4. Dubrav. lib. xxiii. *Annal. de l'Emp.* tom. ii.

he afterwards : — — — — — his conduct was much less exor- — — — — — in the incident Winceslaus was so little con- — — — — — at the loss of the empire, he appears to have — — — — — sensibly affected by some of its probable consequences, though seemingly of less moment ; for he is said to have desired as a last mark of the fidelity of the imperial cities, that they would send him “ some butts of their best wine.”

LETTER  
XLIII.  
~~~~~

THE first expedition of the new emperor was against Galeazo Visconti, whom Winceslaus had created duke of Milan, and who, not contented with this promotion, proposed by force of arms to make himself master of Florence, Mantua, Bologna, and other towns and countries, to be incorporated with his duchy. In order to preserve these territories, and recover the imperial authority in Italy, Robert marched into the duchy of Milan, and encamped before the city of Brixen. But Galeazo was so well provided with troops and military stores, that the emperor was obliged to return to Germany, without being able to effect any thing of importance <sup>5</sup>.

A. D. 1402.

THE retreat of Robert left the field open to Galeazo, who now projected nothing less than the conquest of the whole kingdom of Italy : and fortune at first seemed to second his views. He made himself master of the city of Bologna, and had almost reduced Florence, when he was attacked by a malignant fever, which at once put an end to his life, and his projects. As he left only one daughter, who was not of age, a favourable opportunity was offered Robert of retrieving the affairs of the empire in Italy. But the German princes were so little pleased with his first expe-

A. D. 1403.

<sup>5</sup> Bayre, tom. vii.

<sup>6</sup> Heiss, lib. ii. cap. xxviii.



**PART I.** dition, that they would not grant him supplies for a second. He therefore employed himself in appeasing the troubles of Germany, and aggrandising his own electorate; to which he added the fiefs of Gagenbach, Ortemberg, Offenburg, Zell, Hermanbach, and several other lordships of Alsace, purchased of the bishop of Strasburgh<sup>7</sup>.

IN the mean time Bohemia was involved in new disorders by the preaching of John Hufs, professor of divinity in the university of Prague, who had embraced the opinions of Wickliffe, and was excommunicated by the pope. The publication of this sentence was followed by troubles and seditions. Winceslaus shut himself up in the fortress of Visigrađe, and John Hufs retired to Hussinet, the place of his nativity; where he appealed from the judgment of the pope to the Holy Trinity, and wrote to the cardinals, offering to give an account of his faith, even at the hazard of fire, before the university of Prague, and in the presence of those who had attended his lectures and sermons<sup>8</sup>.

THE Roman church not only suffered from these innovations, but also continued in a state of distraction from the schism which still remained, and which the emperor attempted in vain to cement. Gregory XII. who was acknowledged pope in Italy, convened a council at Aquileia, to which he invited Robert, and other Christian princes, in order to consider this matter. Benedict XIII. who was owned in France, held another council at Catalonia: the cardinals convoked a third at Pisa, and the emperor appointed a

<sup>7</sup>. Barre, tom. vii.

<sup>8</sup>. Mesheim, *Hist. Ecclcs.* vol. iii. et. Auct. cit. in loc.

diet, for the same purpose, at Frankfort ; where, after long debates, the opinions of the assembly were divided between the two popes. The greater part of the archbishops, prelates, and princes, espoused the cause of the cardinals ; but the emperor, the archbishop of Triers, the duke of Bavaria, and some others, declared for Gregory, who proposed that a council should be held at Udina, in Friuli, under the direction of Robert, by whose decision he promised to abide. The emperor therefore sent an archbishop, two bishops, two doctors, and his chancellor, as ambassadors to Pisa, to prove by learned arguments, that the cardinals ought not to depose Gregory. But these ambassadors finding they could make no converts to their opinion, and that the cardinals, attached to Winceslaus, would not even acknowledge their master as emperor, appealed from the council of Pisa to an œcumenical council, and retired without taking leave. The cardinals, however, proceeded to the deposition of the two popes, and raised to the apostolic chair Alexander V. By this measure the schism was increased, there being now three popes instead of two %.

LETTER  
XLIII.  
A. D. 1409.

ROBERT died soon after this pious negotiation, and before he was able to settle the affairs of the Holy See. He was succeeded in the empire, after a disputed election, by Sigismund, brother to the deposed Winceslaus, and king of Hungary ; a prince of experience and abilities, and whose first care was to heal the wounds of the church. For that purpose, he convoked a general council at Constance, with the concurrence of pope John XXIII. successor of Alexander V.

A. D. 1410.

A. D. 1411.

9. Id. *ibid.*

## PART I.

**A. D. 1414.** AT this council, where Sigismund appeared in all his glory, were present a prodigious number of cardinals, prelates, doctors; more than an hundred sovereigns princes; one hundred and eight counts; two hundred barons; and twenty-seven ambassadors from the several European courts, who all vied with each other in luxury and magnificence. There were also five hundred players on instruments, called in those times minstrels; and seven hundred and eighteen courtizans, who were protected by the magistracy <sup>10</sup>.

IN the first session the fathers of the council concluded, that nothing could so effectually contribute to re-establish the union of the church as the resignation of the competitors for the papacy. John XXIII. who presided in the council, assented to this opinion, and promised to renounce his title provided Angelo Corrario, who had assumed the name of Gregory XII. and Peter de Luna, distinguished by that of Benedict XIII. would imitate him in that act of self-denial. This declaration was no sooner made than the emperor rose from his chair, and ran and embraced the feet of his Holiness, applauding his Christian resignation. He was also solemnly thanked by the patriarch of Antioch, in the name of the whole council. But John afterwards repented of this condescension; and, by the assistance of Frederick duke of Austria, fled from Constance in the night, disguised in the habit of a postilion <sup>11</sup>.

**A. D. 1415.**

THIS unexpected retreat at first disconcerted the council, which John declared to be dissolved in consequence of his secession. But the fathers at length a-

<sup>10</sup>. *Annal de l'Emp.* tom. ii.

<sup>11</sup>. Theod. de Niem. in *Vit.* Jo. XXIII.

greed, after many learned arguments, That a council is superior to the pope; confirmed the sentence of John's deposition; decreed that no other pope should be chosen without the consent of the council; and that John, together with his competitors, Angelo Corrario, and Peter de Luna, should be for ever excluded from the papacy. Finding them thus determined, John thought proper to yield to the torrent rather than run the risk of worse fortune in attempting to oppose it. He quietly acquiesced in the sentence of the council, and freely renounced the pontificate, the ensigns of which he immediately laid aside<sup>19</sup>. Soon after this resignation, Gregory XII. sent a legate to the emperor and council to renounce his title in the same manner; but the proud Spaniard, Peter de Luna, would not yield: he remained obdurate to the last.

LETTER  
XIII.  
A. D. 1415.

THE affair of John Huf's came next upon the carpet. John, as had been already observed, had imbibed the opinions of Wickliffe, and converted to his own way of thinking an infinite number of people of all ranks. Among others, his doctrine was embraced by Jerome of Prague, a man of learning, whom he engaged as his colleague, and who propagated the new religion with great warmth. They had been summoned to appear before the court of Rome, but refused to obey the citation. They condescended, however, to attend the council of Constance, in order to justify the doctrine they professed; and Huf's, being provided with a false conduct from the emperor, boldly attempted to defend the articles of his faith before the fathers of the council. That venerable body, however, seemed inclined to condemn him un-

<sup>19</sup> Id. *ibid.*

heard,

**PART I.**  
**A.D. 1415.**

heard, when the emperor desired them to listen what Hufe had to say in his own defence. He was accordingly questioned in presence of Sigismund, and accused of heresy in thirty-nine articles. Part these he denied, and part he offered to defend. But his voice was drowned by the noise purposely made by the cardinals; and on his refusing to abjure all the thirty-nine articles, he was immediately declared fower of sedition, a hardened heretic, a disciple and defender of Wickliffe. As such he was degraded by four bishops, stripped of his sacerdotal habit, and clothed in a lay dress. His hair was cut in the form of a cross: upon his head was put a paper mitre painted with the representation of three devils; and he was delivered over to the secular judge, who condemned him and his writings to the flames, and fixed the day of his execution<sup>23</sup>. He died with great constancy.

AFTER the execution of John Hufe, the council resumed the affair of Peter de Luna, who still obstinately refused to quit his pretensions to the papacy. On this occasion Sigismund offered to go into Spain in person, and engage the mediation of Ferdinand king of Arragon, with whom Peter had taken refuge. By such a journey the emperor hoped to obtain a voluntary renunciation, like that of the other two, before the council should proceed to extremity. He set out accordingly for Spain, accompanied by twelve deputies from the council; and on his arrival at Perpignan, he entered into a negotiation with Benedict, otherwise Peter de Luna, the result of which was sent to the council, though by no means answerable to his

23. Laur. Byzin. *Diar.* Hufstiz. *Chron.* Magdeb. *Biblioth. Angl.*

LETTER  
XLIII.  
A.D. 1416.

expectations. The obstinacy of Benedict was insurmountable, and incensed the emperor to such a degree, that he threatened to obtain by force that assent which the pope refused to grant by fair means; and Benedict, in consequence of these menaces, retired to the fortress of Paniscola, where he resolved to preserve his pontifical dignity to his latest breath. This unexpected flight deprived him of all his partizans. The king of Arragon, with all the princes and bishops of his party, sent deputies to the emperor at Narbonne; where it was agreed, That the council should invite all the former adherents of Benedict to come to Constance, and join their endeavours for re-establishing the peace of the church; and, that on their arrival, a new pope should be chosen<sup>24</sup>.

DURING the absence of Sigismund, the trial of Jerome of Prague engaged the attention of the council. This man had repaired to Constance, with a design to assist John Hus in making his defence; but perceiving he had nothing to hope from the clemency of the fathers, he resolved to retire with all expedition into Bohemia. Being apprehended, however, upon the road, he was loaded with chains, and brought back to Constance; where, in order to avoid the punishment of fire, he solemnly abjured the opinions of Wickliffe and Hus. But ashamed to survive his master, who had encountered death with so much firmness, or not deriving the advantages he expected from his submission, he professed anew the same doctrines; was condemned to the flames as a wicked apostate, and suffered with great fortitude<sup>25</sup>.

24. Theod. Niem. ubi sup. Heiss, lib. ii. cap. 30.

25. Mosheim, *Hist. Eccles.* vol. iii. Spond. *Contin.* tom. ii.

PART I.  
A.D. 1416.

POGGIO the Florentine, secretary to pope John, and one of the first restorers of letters, who was present on this occasion, says he never heard any thing that approached so nearly to the eloquence of the ancient Greeks and Romans, as the speech which Jerome made to the judges. "He spoke," exclaims Poggio, "like Socrates; and walked to the stake with as much cheerfulness, as that great philosopher drank the cup of hemlock!"

A.D. 1417. AFTER the return of Sigismund, the council proceeded against Benedict for contumacy, when the definitive sentence of his deposition was pronounced. Their next care was the election of a new pope: and Otho Colonna, who possessed the accomplishments of a prince, and the virtues of a prelate, was unanimously chosen on St. Martin's day, whence he took the name of Martin V. Never was the inauguration of any pontiff attended with greater pomp. He rode in procession to the cathedral, mounted on a white horse; the emperor and the elector of Brandenburg on foot, leading it by the reins. A numerous crowd of princes, the ambassadors of all the kings, and the fathers of the council, closed the train. When he entered the cathedral, the triple crown was placed upon his head, and he returned in the same august manner<sup>16</sup>.

A.D. 1419. THE important affair of the schism being thus concluded, every thing else was regulated by the council, which broke up in its forty-fifth Session. The disputes about religion, however, still raged with greater violence than ever. The Hussites in Prague were so much offended at being prohibited the cup in the sacrament of the eucharist (contrary, as they affirmed,

16. Barre, tom. vii. *Annal de l'Emp.* tom. ii.

THE SAVIOUR, who gave life  
of the son of man, and that  
life in you, that they  
forced the town down, and  
who were converted.

filled the court of Win-  
ternation, and made an  
illuminous prince, that  
of which he died in  
the kingdom of Pe-  
d, already emperor  
powerful prince was  
then, general of the  
in their glory by

AR LETTER  
ob- XLIV.  
and, A.D. 1380

: two  
under  
etween  
Anjou,  
f France  
s of Lan-  
cles of Ri-  
But a parti-  
be inconfi-  
only to deli-  
make you ac-

ents, or such as  
government and  
1. no enterprize  
government and  
unknown.

shall



## PART I.

general amnesty, the confirmation of their privileges, and the right of using the cup in the communion; a concession which, to them was a kind of triumph<sup>18</sup>.

**AFTER** this pacification, Sigismund enlisted the Hussites in his army, and led them against the Turks, who had made an irruption into Hungary, and were defeated with great slaughter by these hardy veterans. But although Sigismund had been so fortunate as to regain the affections of the Bohemians, he lost it anew by attempting to tyrannize over their consciences; and death only saved him from a second revolt. He nominated as his successor, in the kingdoms of Hungary and Bohemia, Albert, duke of Austria, his son-in-law, who was recognized by these states, and **A.D. 1437.** also raised to the empire. The house of Austria has ever since held the imperial throne.

**SIGISMUND**, with many respectable qualities, was a narrow-minded bigot; and, contrary to the dictates of sound policy as well as of humanity, was guilty of the most detestable of all tyranny, that of violence on the will. His wife Barbara is said to have been a person of a more enlarged way of thinking, though not more to her honour. She denied a future state, and held the supreme good to consist in sensual delight. Conformably to this opinion, she set no bounds to her licentious amours after the death of the emperor. And when a certain lady of reputation mentioned to her the example of the turtle, which after having lost its mate, never chuses another, "Why," cried she, "instance a bird that lives in perpetual solitude, far from the habitations of men, and of which we know little? Is the example more for-

18. *Id. ibid.*

## MODERN EUROPE

§1

le, or more fit for imitation, than that of the peacock and the sparrow, birds always in our view, and whose loves and joys are in continual succession."

LETTER  
XLIV.

THE affairs of France now claim our attention.

### L E T T E R XLIV.

*SINCE from the Death of CHARLES V. in 1380, to the Accession of that Kingdom by HENRY V. of ENGLAND, 1415.*

THE death of Charles V. of France, my dear Philip, which happened, as I have already observed, soon after that of Edward III. of England, at the youth of his son Charles VI. put the two kingdoms in a similar situation. Both were under government of minors : and the jealousies between three uncles of Charles VI. the dukes of Anjou, Berry, and Burgundy, distracted the affairs of France more than the rivalry between the dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester, the three uncles of Richard II. disordered those of England. But a particular account of these distractions would be inconsistent with my present purpose ; which is only to delineate the great line of history, and make you acquainted with the more remarkable events, or such as we had a particular influence upon government and manners. In the reign of Charles VI. no enterprize of consequence was undertaken, and government and manners, properly speaking, were equally unknown.

LETTER  
XLIV.  
A.D. 1380

19. *Æt. Syiv. cap. xxviii. Dubrav. lib. xlviii.*

I shall

## PART I.

I shall, therefore, consider the history of France, during this distracted period, as only an introduction to the invasion of that kingdom by Henry V. of England.

IN proportion as the king advanced in years, the factions were composed. His uncle, the duke of Anjou died; and Charles himself, assuming the reins of government, discovered symptoms of genius and spirit, which revived the drooping hopes of his countrymen. But this promising state of things was of short duration. The unhappy Charles fell suddenly into a fit of frenzy, which rendered him incapable of exercising his authority; and although he partly recovered from that disorder, he was subject to such frequent relapses, that his judgment was gradually impaired, and he became incapable of pursuing any steady plan of government<sup>1</sup>.

THE king's first relapse is said to have been occasioned by the following accident. The queen having married one of her maids of honour to a person of distinction, the nuptials were intended to be celebrated with great pomp at the palace of the queen-dowager, relict of Philip of Valois. Among other amusements there was to be a masquerade: a circumstance which furnished five young noblemen with the extravagant idea of appearing as naked savages; and such was the indelicacy of the times, that the king made one of the party. Their dress, contrived to fit close to their bodies, was of linen covered with rosin; which, while hot, had been powdered with fur. And the secret was so well kept, that, when they appeared, they were not known; but their whim was highly applauded.

1. *Hist. Anonym de Charles VI.*

The duchess of Berri laid hold of the king, seeing him robust and well made, and told him she would not let him go, till she knew who he was. In the mean time the rest began to dance; when the duke of Orleans, out of levity, making a feint of running a lighted torch against one of the savages, set his combustible habit on fire. The flame was quickly communicated to the rest, and this scene of wanton mirth was instantly changed into sorrow and distress. But in the midst of their torments the masks cried out continually, "Save the king! save the king!"—And the duchess of Berri suddenly recollecting that he must be the mask that stood next her, immediately threw her robes over him, and wrapping them close about him, put out the fire. One of the masks by jumping into a cistern of water, saved his life; the other four were so terribly burnt, that they died in two days; and the king was so much affected with the fright, that it occasioned a return of his disorder, which afterwards generally attacked him four or five times a year to the end of his life<sup>2</sup>.

HISTORY scarce affords any parallel of a court or country more corrupt, and at the same time more miserable, than that of this unfortunate monarch and his subjects, in consequence of his infirmity. The administration fell again into the hands of the dukes of Berri and Burgundy, who excluded the duke of Orleans, the king's brother, under pretence of his youth, from any share in the government, and even from the shadow of authority. The case, however, was very different in regard to the duchess of Orleans. Young, beautiful, and insinuating, she acquired such

2. Juv. des Urs. *Hist. Anonym. &c.*

**PART I.** an ascendant over the king, that she governed him at her pleasure. Nay, what is yet more extraordinary, it was she only that could govern him; for in the time of his malady he knew nobody else, not even the queen. Hence it was rumoured by the duchess of Burgundy, who envied the influence of the duchess of Orleans, that she had bewitched the king; and, in order to heighten the odium, it was insinuated that the duke of Orleans had also bewitched the queen. That both were under the influence of enchantment is not to be doubted: but it was only that of youth, wit, and beauty, whose assiduities so often fascinate the susceptible heart; and, when unrestrained by principle or sentiment, lead it in the chains of loose desire.

**A. D. 1405.** **WHILE** things were in this situation the duke of Burgundy died. He was succeeded in the duchy by his son, John count of Nevers, who disputed the administration with the duke of Orleans, and hoped to govern France as his father had done. Propinquity to the crown pleaded in favour of the latter; the former derived consequence from his superior power, the death of his mother having added the county of Flanders to his father's extensive dominions. The people were divided between these contending princes, and the king, now resuming and now dropping his authority, kept the victory undecided, and prevented any regular settlement of the state, by the final prevalence of either party.

3. Juv. des Ursins. Du Tillet. Le Gendre.

4. Isabella of Bavaria, queen of France, and Valentina of Milan, duchess of Orleans, were both remarkably handsome and accomplished, and the duke was alike amorous and ambitious.

BUT at length the dukes of Orleans and Burgundy, seemingly moved by the cries of the nation, and swayed by the interposition of common friends, agreed to bury all past quarrels in oblivion, and enter into a league of mutual amity. They swore before the altar to the sincerity of this friendship; the priest administered the sacrament to both of them; and they gave to each other every pledge that could be deemed sacred among men. All this solemn preparation, however, appears to have been only a cover for the basest treachery, deliberately premeditated by the duke of Burgundy. He had hired ruffians, who assassinated his rival in the streets of Paris<sup>5</sup>. The author of the crime was for some days unknown, as the assassins escaped, and the duke endeavoured to conceal the part which he had taken in it; but being detected, he embraced a resolution still more criminal, and more dangerous to society. He openly avowed and justified the action.

LETTER  
XLIV.  
A.D. 1407.

THIS cause was brought before the parliament of Paris; and that august tribunal of justice heard the harangues of the duke of Burgundy's advocate in defence of assassination, which he denominated tyrannicide, without pronouncing any sentence or condemnation against the detestable doctrine. The same question was afterwards agitated before the council of Constance; and it was with difficulty that a feeble decision in favour of the contrary opinion, was ob-

5. Le Labourer, liv. xxvii. Monstrelet, chap. xxxix. The murder of the duke of Orleans is said, by some authors, to have been occasioned chiefly by his own insolence and licentiousness. (Duhaillan. Brautome.) Having succeeded in an amour with the duchess of Burgundy, he had the effrontery to introduce her husband into a cabinet hung with the portraits of the women he had enjoyed, among which hers occupied a distinguished place. Burgundy concealed his emotion, but thirsted for revenge. Ibid.

**PART I.** tained from those fathers of the church, the ministers  
A. D. 1407. of the Prince of Peace<sup>6</sup>.

BUT the mischievous effects of that tenet, had they been before anywise doubtful, appeared sufficiently from the subsequent incidents. The commission of this crime, which destroyed all trust and security, rendered the war implacable between the French parties, and cut off every means of peace and accommodation. The princes of the blood, combining with the young duke of Orleans and his brothers, made violent war on the duke of Burgundy; and the unhappy king, seized sometimes by one party, sometimes by another, transferred alternately to each of them the appearance of legal authority. The provinces were laid waste by mutual depredations: assassinations were every where committed, from the animosity of the several leaders; or, what was equally terrible, executions were ordered, without any legal trial, by pretended courts of judicature.

THE whole kingdom was distinguished into two parties, the Burgundians, and the Armagnacs; for so the adherents of the young duke of Orleans were called, from the count of Armagnac, father-in-law to that prince. The city of Paris distracted between them, but inclining more to the Burgundians, was a perpetual scene of blood and violence. The king and royal family were often detained captives in the hands of the populace: their ministers were butchered or

6. Monstrelet, ubi sup. Bulay, *Hist. Acad. Paris*, tom. v. Mild as this censure was, pope Martin V. refused to ratify it, being afraid of displeasing the duke of Burgundy. (Id. ibid.) The university of Paris, more just and less timid, boldly condemned the atrocious doctrine and its author. Bulay, ubi sup.

imprisoned before their eyes ; and it was dangerous for any man, amid these enraged factions, to be distinguished by a strict adherence to the principles of probity and honour.

LETTER  
XLIV.

DURING this scene of general violence, there arose into some consideration a body of men, which usually makes no figure in public transactions even during the most peaceful times ; namely, the heads of the university of Paris, whose opinion was sometimes demanded and more frequently offered, in the multiplied disputes between the parties. The schism by which the church was at that time divided, and which occasioned frequent controversies in the university, had raised the professors to an unusual degree of importance ; and this connection between literature and religion, had bestowed on the former a consequence, which reason and knowledge have seldom been able to obtain among men. But there was another society, whose sentiments were still more decisive at Paris, the fraternity of butchers ; who, under the direction of their ringleaders, had declared for the duke of Burgundy, and committed the most violent outrages against the opposite party. In order to counterbalance this power, the Armagnacs made interest with the fraternity of carpenters : the populace ranged themselves on the one side or the other ; and the fate of the capital depended on the prevalence of either party ?.

THE advantage which might be taken of these confusions, was easily perceived in England ; and, according to the maxims which usually prevail among

7. Bulay Juv. des Ursins. P. Æmil. P. Hensault.

D 3

nations,



## PART I.

tions, it was determined to lay hold of the favourable opportunity. Henry IV. who was courted by both the French parties, fomented the quarrel, by alternately sending assistance to each; and his son, Henry V. impelled by the vigour of youth, and the ardour of ambition, determined to push his advantages to a greater length, and to carry war into the heart of France. In consequence of this resolution he assembled a great fleet and army at Southampton, and invited all the military men in the kingdom to attend him. But before I speak of the success of that enterprise, I must say a few words of the reign of Henry V. prior to this period.

A.D. 1415.

## LETTER XLV.

ENGLAND and FRANCE, *from the invasion of the latter Kingdom by HENRY V. to the Death of CHARLES VI.*

LETTER  
XLV.

THE precarious situation of Henry IV. with whose character, my dear Philip, you are already acquainted, had so much infected his temper with jealousy, that he entertained unreasonable suspicions with regard to the loyalty of his eldest son; and, during the latter years of his life, he excluded that prince from all share in public business. The active spirit of young Henry, restrained from its proper exercise, broke out in extravagances of every kind. The riot of pleasure, the frolic of debauchery, and the outrage of intoxication, filled the vacancies of a mind better adapted to the pursuits of ambition and the cares of government. Such a course of life

naturally threw him among companions very unbecoming his rank, but whose irregularities, if accompanied with gallantry and humour, he seconded and indulged. And he was detected in many sallies, which to severer eyes, appeared totally unworthy of his station <sup>1</sup>.

BUT the nation in general considered the young prince with more indulgence. They observed so many gleams of generosity, spirit, and magnanimity breaking continually through the cloud, which a wild conduct threw over his character, that they never ceased hoping for his amendment. And the first steps taken by young Henry, after the death of his father, confirmed all those prepossessions entertained in his favour. He called together his former companions; acquainted them with his intended reformation; exhorted them to imitate his example; but strictly prohibited them, until they had given proofs of their amendment, from appearing any more in his presence: while the wise ministers of his father, who had checked his riots, were received with all the marks of favour and confidence. They found that they had unknowingly been paying the highest court to him <sup>2</sup>. The satisfaction of those who feared an opposite conduct, was augmented by their surprize; so that the character of the young king appeared brighter than if it had never been shaded by any errors.

A. D. 1473.

HENRY'S first care was to banish, as much as possible, all party distinctions. The instruments of the violences of the preceding reign, who had been advanced from their blind zeal for the Lancastrian in-

<sup>1</sup> Walsingham. Hall. Holingshed.

<sup>2</sup> Hall. Holingshed. Hume, chap. xix. Godwin, *Life of Hen. V.*

## PART I.

A.D. 1414.

terest, more than from their integrity or abilities, gave place every where to men of more honourable characters; and virtue and talents seemed now to have a spacious field, in which they might display themselves to advantage. One party distinction, however, remained, which the popularity of Henry was not able to overcome. The Lollards, or disciples of Wickliffe, fast increasing in the kingdom, were become a formidable body, which appeared dangerous to the church, and even to the civil power.

THE head of this sect was sir John Oldcastle, lord Cobham, a nobleman who had distinguished himself by his military talents, and who had, on many occasions, acquired the esteem both of the late and of the present king. His high character, and zeal for the new sect, pointed him out to Arundel, archbishop of Canterbury, as the proper victim of ecclesiastical severity. The primate accordingly applied to the king for permission to indite lord Cobham. The generous nature of Henry was averse from such sanguinary methods of conversion; but after trying all gentle means in vain, and finding that nobleman obstinate in his opinions, he gave full reins to priestly vengeance against the inflexible sectary. Cobham was condemned to the flames, but made his escape from the Tower before the day appointed for his execution. Provoked by persecution, and stimulated by zeal, he was now incited to attempt those criminal measures formerly imputed to him. The king was informed of his designs: his followers were every where persecuted; and he himself, after a variety of distresses, was seized and hanged as a traitor, and his body was burnt on the gibbet, in consequence of the sentence pronounced against him as a heretic.

A.D. 1415.

3. Walsingham. Otterburn. Holingshed.

THE

THE Lollards being thus suppressed, Henry had leave to consider the dying injunction of his father, not to let the English remain long in peace, which was apt to breed intestine commotions, but to employ them in foreign expeditions; by which the prince might acquire honour, the nobility, in sharing his dangers, attach themselves to his person, and all the restless spirits find occupation for their inquietude. The natural disposition of Henry sufficiently inclined him to follow this advice, and the civil disorders of France, as you have already seen, opened a full career for his ambition. He accordingly set sail from Southampton, the place of general rendezvous, and landed near Harfleur, at the head of an army of six thousand men at arms, and twenty-four thousand foot, mostly archers.

LETTER  
XLV.

A. D. 1415.

THE king of England, on landing, immediately invested Harfleur; which was taken by assault, after a siege of six weeks, and the garrison put to the sword. The fatigue of this siege, however, and the unusual heat of the season, had so much wasted the English army, that Henry could enter on no further enterprise, and was obliged to think of returning to England. He had dismissed his transports, which could not safely anchor in an open road upon the enemy's coast; so that he lay under the necessity of marching by land to Calais, before he could reach a place of safety. Nor was this all. A French army of fourteen thousand men at arms, and forty thousand foot, was already assembled in Normandy under the constable d'Albert; a force, if rightly managed, sufficient either to trample down the English in the open field, or to harass and reduce to nothing their small body, before they could finish so long and difficult a march. Henry, therefore, prudently offered to sacrifice his

con-

**PART I.** conquest of Harfleur for a safe passage to Calais; but his proposal being rejected by the French court, he determined to make his way by valour and policy through all the opposition of the enemy. And that he might not discourage his army by the appearance of flight, or expose them to those hazards which naturally attend precipitate marches, he made slow and deliberate journeys <sup>4</sup>.

BUT notwithstanding these precautions, the English monarch was continually harraſſed on his march by flying parties of the enemy; and when he approached the Somme, he ſaw bodies of troops on the oppoſite bank, ready to obſtruſt his paſſage. His provisions were cut off: his ſoldiers languished under ſickneſs and fatigue; and his ſituation ſeemed altogether deſperate. In this extremity, he was ſo fortunate as to ſeize an ungarded ford, over which he ſafely carried his army, and bent his march towards Calais. But he was ſtill expoſed to great and imminent danger from the enemy, who had alſo paſſed the Somme, and threw themſelves full in his way, with a deſign of intercepting his retreat. The whole French army was drawn up in the plains of Azincour, or Agincourt, and poſted in ſuch a manner, that it was impoſſible for the king of England to proceed on his march without coming to an engagement.

NOTHING in appearance could be more unequal than the battle, upon which the ſafety and fortune of Henry now depended. The English army conſiſted of little more than half the number, which had diſembarked at Harfleur: and the troops laboured

4. Le Laboureur. T. Livii. T. Walsingham.

under every discouragement and necessity. The enemy was four times more numerous headed by the Dauphin and all the princes of the blood, and plentifully supplied with provisions. Henry's situation was exactly similar to that of Edward III. at the battle of Cressy, and of the Black Prince at that of Poitiers; and the memory of these great events inspired the English with courage, and made them hope for a like deliverance from their present difficulties. The king also observed the same prudent conduct, which had been followed by those great commanders. He drew up his army on a narrow ground, between two woods, which guarded each flank: and in that posture he patiently waited the attack of the enemy.

1270  
XIV.  
A.D. 1415

HAD the French commander been able to reason justly on the circumstances of the two armies, or to profit by past experience, he would have declined a combat, and have waited till necessity had obliged the English to advance, and relinquish the advantages of their situation; but the impetuous valour of the French nobility, and a vain confidence in superior numbers, made him hazard an action, which proved the source of infinite calamities to his country. The French archers on horseback, and their men at arms, advanced precipitantly on the English archers, who had fixed pallisades in their front to break the impression of the enemy, and who safely plied them, from behind that defence, with a shower of arrows which nothing could resist. The clayey soil, moistened by rain, proved another obstruction to the force of the French cavalry. The wounded men and horses decomposed their ranks; the narrow compass in which they were pent, prevented them from recovering any order; the whole army was a scene of confusion, ter-

ror,

## PART I.

A. D. 1415.

ror, and dismay; when Henry, perceiving his advantage, ordered the English archers, who were light and unincumbered, to advance upon the enemy, and seize the moment of victory. They accordingly fell with their battle-axes upon the French, who were now incapable of either flying or defending themselves, and hewed them in pieces without obstruction. Seconded by the men at arms, who also pushed on against the enemy, they covered the field with the killed, wounded, dismounted, and overthrown. Every appearance of opposition being now over, the English had leisure to make prisoners; but having advanced to the open plain, they there saw the remains of the French rear-guard, which still maintained the form of a line of battle. At the same time they heard an alarm from behind. Some gentlemen of Picardy, having collected about six hundred peasants, had fallen upon the English baggage, and were doing execution on the unarmed followers of the camp, who fled before them. On this alarm Henry began to entertain apprehensions from his prisoners, and he thought it necessary to issue general orders for putting them to death; but on discovering the truth, he stopped the slaughter, and great numbers of those unhappy men were saved<sup>s</sup>.

No victory was ever more honourable, or more complete than this of Azincour. The loss of the French was incredibly great. The constable d'Albert, and seven princes of the blood were slain: five princes were taken prisoners, together with fourteen thousand persons of different ranks; and above ten thousand Frenchmen were left dead on the field

5. T. Elmham. T. Livii. T. Walsingham.

et

of battle<sup>6</sup>. Yet this victory, so fatal to France, was more ostentatious than useful to the conquerors, though their loss was very inconsiderable. Henry was obliged to return to England, in order to raise a fresh supply of men and money; and it was not till after an interval of two years, that any body of English troops appeared again in France.

LETTER  
XLV.

A.D. 1415.

IN the mean time France was exposed to all the furies of civil war; and the several parties became every day more enraged against each other. The duke of Burgundy, who had been worsted by his antagonists, attempted to re-instate himself in possession of the government, as well as of the person of the king: and some quarrels in the royal family, enabled him to carry his scheme into execution. Louis Bois-Bourdon, favourite to queen Isabella, after the death of the elder duke of Orleans, having been accused by the count d'Armagnac of a commerce of gallantry with that princess, had been put to the torture, and afterwards throw into the Seine, in consequence of his forced but indiscreet confession. The queen herself was sent to Tours, and confined under a guard. After suffering these multiplied insults, she no longer scrupled to enter into a correspondence with the duke of Burgundy, though hitherto an enemy to that prince; and as her son Charles, the dauphin, was entirely governed by the faction of Armagnac, she extended her animosity even to him, and sought his destruction with the most unrelenting hatred<sup>7</sup>. She had soon an opportunity of rendering her unnatural purpose in some measure effectual.

A.D. 1416.

THE duke of Burgundy entered France at the head of a great army of Flemings; over-ran most part of

6. Ibid.

7. St. Remi. Monstrelet.

the



## PART I.

A.D. 1416.

A.D. 1417.

the kingdom, and relieved the queen from her confinement. At the same time the duke's partizan raised a commotion in Paris, which always inclined to the Burgundian faction; the person of the king was seized; the dauphin made his escape with difficulty; great numbers of the Armagnac faction were instantly butchered; the count himself, and many persons of note, were thrown into prison; and the populace, deeming the course of public justice too dilatory, broke into the prisons and put to death the nobleman, and all the other noblemen, who were there confined<sup>8</sup>.

A.D. 1418.

WHILE France was thus rent in pieces by civil dissensions, Henry V. having recruited his forces and finances, landed in Normandy at the head of twenty-five thousand men, and carried every thing before him. When the pope's legate attempted to incline him towards peace, he replied, "Do you not see that God has led me hither as by the hand? France has no sovereign: I have just pretensions to that kingdom: every thing here is in the utmost confusion: no one thinks of resisting me. Can I have a more sensible proof, that the Being who disposes of empires has determined to put the crown of France upon my head?"—Such has ever been the language of force; to which weakness, crawling in the dust, has too often listened with an ear of credulity. Hence conquerors, while alive, have been considered as the sons of gods, and the delegates of Heaven; and after being consigned to that earth which they had desolated, have themselves been exalted into divinities!

8. Ibid.

9. Juv. des Ursins.

BUT although Henry seemed so fully assured of the conquest of France, he was induced by prudential motives to negotiate with his enemies. He made at the same time offers of peace to both the French parties : to the queen and the duke of Burgundy, on the one hand, who having possession of the king's person carried the appearance of legal authority ; and to the dauphin, on the other, who being the rightful heir of the monarchy, was adhered to by all men who paid any regard to the true interests of their country. These two parties also carried on a continual negotiation with each other ; and all things seemed settled to their mutual satisfaction, when the duke of Burgundy was slain by the dauphin's party during an interview at Montereau.

LETTER  
XLIV.  
A. D. 141

IN consequence of this act of barbarity, and the progress of Henry's arms, the queen and the new duke of Burgundy, breathing vengeance for the murder of his father, concluded the famous treaty of Troye, by which the crown of France was transferred to the house of Lancaster. The principle articles were, That the king of England should espouse the princess Catherine ; that her father, Charles VI. should enjoy, during his life-time, the title and dignity of king of France, that Henry V. should be declared and acknowledged heir of the monarchy, and be entrusted with the present administration of the government ; that all the princes, peers, vassals, and communities of France, should swear, that they would both adhere to the future succession of Henry, and pay him present obedience as regent ; and that this prince should unite his arms to those of the French king and the duke of Burgundy, in order to subdue

A. D. 14

**PART I.** subdue the adherents of Charles the *pretended* dauphin.  
**A.D. 1420.**

A FEW days after the signing of this treaty Henry espoused the princess Catherine. He carried his father-in-law to Paris; he put himself in possession of that capital, and he obtained from the parliament and the three estates a ratification of the treaty of Troye. He supported the duke of Burgundy in procuring a sentence against the murderers of his father; and he turned his arms with success against the adherents of the dauphin; who, as soon as he heard of the treaty of Troye, took on him the style and authority of Regent, and appealed to God and his sword for the maintenance of his title. But, notwithstanding the bravery and fidelity of his officers, Charles saw himself unequal to his enemies in the field; and found it necessary to temporise, and avoid all hazardous actions with a rival who had acquired so manifest a superiority.

**A.D. 1421.**

To crown all the other prosperities of Henry, his queen was delivered of a son, who was called by his father's name, and whose birth was celebrated by rejoicings no less pompous, or less sincere, at Paris than at London. The infant prince seemed to be universally regarded as the heir of both monarchies. But the glory of Henry, when near its height, was suddenly restrained by the hand of nature, and all his towering projects vanished into air. He was seized with a malady which the surgeons of that age wanted skill to treat with judgment; namely, a fistula, which proved mortal. When he found his end approaching he sent for his brother the duke of Bedford, the

earl of Warwick, and a few more noblemen, whom he had honoured with his confidence. To them he delivered, in great compofure, his laft will with regard to the government of his kingdom and family. He left the regency of France to his eldeft brother, the duke of Bedford; that of England to his younger brother, the duke of Gloucefter, and the care of his fon's perfon to the earl of Warwick <sup>11</sup>.

LETTER  
XLV.

A. D. 1422.

HENRY V. poffeffed many eminent virtues, and his abilities were equally conspicuous in the cabinet and the field. The boldnefs of his plans was no lefs remarkable than his personal valour in carrying them into execution. He had the talent of attaching his friends by affability, and of gaining his enemies by addrefs and clemency. His exterior figure, as well as his deportment, was engaging; his ftature fomewhat above the middle-fize; his countenance beautiful, his proportions elegant; and he excelled in all warlike and manly exercifes <sup>12</sup>.

In lefs than two months after Henry's death, his father-in-law, Charles VI. of France terminated his unhappy life. He had for many years poffeffed only the fhadow of royalty; yet was this mere appearance of confiderable advantage to the Englifh: it divided the duty and affections of the French between the king and the dauphin, who was now crowned at Poitiers, under the name of Charles VII. Rheims, the ufual place of fuch ceremony, being then in the hands of his enemies.

CATHERINE of France, widow of Henry V. married foon after his death Sir Owen Tudor, a gentle-

11. Ibid.

12. T. Livii.

PART I.  
A.D. 1422.

man of Wales, said to be descended from the ancient princes of that country. She bore him two sons; the eldest of whom was created earl of Richinond, the second earl of Pembroke. The family of Tudor, first raised to distinction by this alliance, afterward mounted, as we shall have occasion to see, the throne of England.

## LETTER XLVI.

*The Affairs of FRANCE and ENGLAND continued, from the Accession of CHARLES VII. to the Expulsion of the ENGLISH from their Continental Territories, in 1453.*

A.D. 1422.

IN considering with a superficial eye, the state of affairs between France and England at the accession of Charles VII. every advantage seems to lie on the side of the latter kingdom; and the total expulsion of Charles appears an event which might naturally be expected from the superior power of his competitor. Though Henry VI. was yet in his infancy, the duke of Bedford, the most accomplished prince of his age, was intrusted with the administration. And the experience, prudence, valour, and generosity of the regent, qualified him for his high office, and enabled him both to maintain union among his friends, and to gain the confidence of his enemies. But Charles VII. notwithstanding the present inferiority of his power, possessed some advantages which promised him success. As he was the true and undoubted heir of the monarchy, all Frenchmen who knew the interests, or desired the independency of their native country, turned their eyes towards him as

sole resource: and Charles himself was of a character well calculated to become the object of these evolent sentiments. He was a prince of the most kindly and benign disposition; of easy and familiar manners; and of a just and sound, though not a very profound understanding. Sincere, generous, affable, engaged from affection the services of his followers even while his low fortune might have made it in his interest to desert him; and the lenity of his temper could pardon those sallies of discontent, to which princes in his situation are naturally exposed. The love of pleasure often seduced him into indolence; but, amid all his irregularities, the goodness of his heart still shone forth: and by exerting, at intervals, his courage and activity, he proved that his general remissness proceeded neither from the want of ambition nor of personal valour<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVI.

A. D. 1422.

CONSIDERING these advantages on the side of Charles, the duke of Bedford took care to strengthen the English interest by fresh alliances with the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany; and observing the ardour of the French to serve in France, where Charles treated them with great honour and distinction, he persuaded the English council to form an alliance with James I. who was then a prisoner; to free that prince from his long captivity, and to connect him with England, by marrying him to a daughter of the earl of Somerset, and thus to the young king. The alliance was accordingly formed: James was restored to the throne of his ancestors; and proved, during his short reign, one of the most illustrious princes that had ever

A. D. 1423.

1. P. Emil. Du Tillet. Le Gendre.

**PART I.**

swayed the Scottish sceptre. His affections inclined to the party of France; but the English had never reason, while he lived, to complain of any breach of the neutrality by Scotland. He was murdered by his traiterous kinsman the earl of Athol, in 1437.

**BEDFORD**, however, was not so much employed in negotiations, as to neglect the operations of war. **A.D. 1424.** He reduced almost every fortress on this side of the Loire; and the battle of Verneuil, in which the Scots and French were defeated, threatened Charles with the total loss of his kingdom, when a train of singular circumstances saved him on the brink of ruin, and lost the English such an opportunity of completing their conquests as they were never afterwards able to recall.

**INSTEAD** of taking any possible advantage of the victory gained at Verneuil, or those which he wished, and could not fail to see, the duke of Bedford was obliged to go over to England, in order to compose some dissensions among the ministry, and to endeavour to moderate the measures of his brother, the duke of Gloucester, who had inconsiderately kindled a war **.D. 1425.** in the Low Countries, and carried thither the troops destined for the reinforcement of the English army in France. The affections of the duke of Burgundy were alienated, and his forces diverted by the same war. The duke of Britany returned to his allegiance under Charles VII. The French had leisure to recollect themselves, and gained some inconsiderable advantages. **A.D. 1426.** But the regent, soon after his return, retrieved the reputation of the English arms, by humbling the duke of Britany, and resolved on an undertaking which he hoped would prepare the way for the final conquest of France.

THE

THE city of Orleans was so situated between the provinces commanded by Henry, and those possessed by Charles, that it opened an easy entrance to either; and as the duke of Bedford intended to make a great effort for penetrating into the south of France, it was necessary to begin with the siege of this place, now become the most important in the kingdom. The French king used every expedient to supply the city with a garrison and provisions, and the English left no method unemployed for reducing it. The eyes of all Europe were turned towards this scene of action, where it was reasonably supposed the French were to make their last stand for maintaining the independency of their monarchy, and the rights of their sovereign. After numberless feats of valour, performed both by the besiegers and the besieged, the attack was so vigorously pushed by the English, although the duke of Burgundy had withdrawn his troops in disgust, that Charles gave over the city for lost; and even entertained thoughts of retiring into Languedoc and Dauphiny with the remains of his forces, which were insufficient to attempt the enemy's entrenchments, and of defending himself as long as possible in those remote provinces<sup>2</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVI.

A. D. 1448.

BUT it was fortunate for that gay prince, who lay entirely under the dominion of the softer sex, that the women whom he consulted on this occasion had the spirit to support his sinking resolution. Mary of Anjou, his queen, a princess of great merit and prudence, vehemently opposed such a measure; which he foresaw would discourage all his partizans, and serve as a general signal for deserting a prince who

A. D. 1449.

2. Monstrelet. Polyd. Virg. Stow. Hall. Hollingshed.



**PART I.** seemed himself to despair of success. His mistress, too, the fair Agnes Soreille, who lived in perfect amity with the queen, seconded all her remonstrances, and threatened, if he thus pusillanimously threw away the sceptre of France, that she would seek in the court of England a fortune more correspondent to her wishes. Love was able to rouse, in the breast of Charles, that courage which ambition had failed to excite. He resolved to dispute every inch of ground with an imperious enemy; to perish with honour, in the midst of his friends, rather than yield ingloriously to his bad fortune<sup>3</sup>. And this resolution was no sooner formed than relief was unexpectedly brought him, by another female of a very different character,

**A. D. 1429.**

In the village of Domremi near Vaucouleurs, on the borders of Lorraine, lived a country girl, whose name was Joan d'Arc; and who, in the humble station of servant at an inn, had been accustomed to tend the horses of the guests; to ride them without a saddle to the watering-place, and to perform other offices which commonly fall to the share of men servants. This girl, inflamed by the frequent accounts of the rencounters at the siege of Orleans, and affected with the distresses of her country, but more especially with those of the youthful monarch, whose gallantry made him the idol of the whole sex, was seized with a wild desire of bringing relief to her sovereign in his present unhappy circumstances. Her inexperienced mind, working day and night on this favourite object, mistook the impulses of passion for heavenly inspirations; and she fancied that she saw visions, and heard voices exhorting her to re-establish

3. Ibid.

the throne of France, and expel the foreign invaders. An uncommon intrepidity of spirit made her overlook all the dangers which might attend her in such a path; and the apprehension of her divine mission dispelled all that bashfulness so natural to her sex, her years, and her low condition. She went to Vaucouleurs, procured admission to Baudricourt the governor, and informed him of her inspirations and intentions. Baudricourt observed something extraordinary in the maid, or saw the use that might be made of such an engine, and sent her to the French court, which then resided at Chinon.

LETTER  
XLVI.

A. D. 1419.

JOAN was no sooner introduced to the king than she offered, in the name of the Supreme Creator, to raise the siege of Orleans, and conduct him to Rheims, to be there crowned and anointed: and she demanded, as the instrument of her future victories, a particular sword which was kept in the church of St. Catharine de Fierbois. The more the king and his ministers were determined to give into the illusion, the more scruples they pretended. An assembly of grave and learned divines was appointed to examine Joan's mission, and pronounced it undoubted and supernatural; the parliament also attested her inspiration; and a jury of matrons declared her an unspotted virgin. Her requests were now granted. She was armed cap-à-pie, mounted on horseback, and shewn in that martial habiliment to the whole people. Her dexterity in managing her steed, though acquired in her former station, was regarded as a fresh proof of her mission: her former occupation was even denied; she was converted into a shepherdess, an em-

4. Hall. Monstrelet.

E,

ploy-

## PART I.

A.D. 1429.

ployment more agreeable to the imagination than that of an ostler-wench. Some years were subtracted from her age, in order to excite still more admiration; and she was received with the loudest acclamations, by persons of all ranks<sup>5</sup>. A ray of hope began to break through that cloud of despair in which the minds of men were involved. Heaven had now declared itself in favour of France, and laid bare its out-stretched arm to take vengeance on her invaders.

THE English at first affected to speak with derision of the Maid and her heavenly commission; but their imagination was secretly struck with the strong persuasion, which prevailed in all around them. They found their courage daunted by degrees, and thence began to infer a divine vengeance hanging over them. A silent astonishment reigned among those troops, formerly so elated with victory, and so fierce for the combat. The Maid entered the city of Orleans at the head of a convoy, arrayed in her military garb, and displaying her consecrated standard. She was received as a celestial deliverer by the garrison and inhabitants; and by the instructions of count Dunois, commonly called the bastard of Orleans, who commanded in the place, she actually obliged the English to raise the siege of that city, after driving them from their entrenchments, and defeating them in several desperate attacks<sup>6</sup>.

THE raising of the siege of Orleans was one part of the Maid's promise to Charles; the crowning him at Rheims was the other; and she now vehemently insisted, that he should set out immediately on that journey. A few weeks before, such a proposal would

5. Ibid.

6. Monstrelet. Villar.

appeared altogether extravagant. Rheims lay distant quarter of the kingdom ; was then in the hands of a victorious enemy ; the whole road that led to it was occupied by their garrisons ; and no imagination could have been so sanguine as to hope that an attempt could possibly be carried into execu-

LETTER  
XLVI  
A.D. 1429

But as things had now taken a turn, and it was solely the interest of the king of France to maintain the belief of something extraordinary and divine in these events, he resolved to follow the exhortations of his warlike prophets, and avail himself of the consternation of the English. He accordingly set out for Rheims, at the head of twelve thousand men, and scarcely perceived, as he passed along, that he was marching through an enemy's country. Every town opened its gates to him : Rheims sent him its keys ; and the ceremony of his inauguration was adorned with the holy oil, which a pigeon is said to have brought from heaven to Clovis, on the first establishment of the French monarchy.

HARLES, thus crowned and anointed, became more respectable in the eyes of all his subjects : and seemed to derive, from a heavenly commission, a title to their allegiance. Many places submitted to him immediately after his coronation, and the whole nation was disposed to give him the most zealous testimonies of duty and affection.

A.D. 1430.

THE duke of Bedford, in this dangerous crisis, employed every resource which fortune had yet left him. He acted with so much prudence and address, as to re-establish his alliance with the duke of Burgundy, who had long wavered in his fidelity. He seemed pre-

7. Ibid.

sent

**PART I.** sent every where, by his vigilance and foresight; and  
 A.D. 1430. although his supplies from England were very inconsiderable, he attempted to restore the courage of his troops by boldly advancing to face the enemy. But he chose his posts with so much caution, as always to decline a combat, and to render it impossible for the French monarch to attack him. He still attended that prince in all his movements, covered his own towns and garrisons, and kept himself in a posture to reap advantage from every imprudence or false step of the enemy. He also endeavoured to revive the declining state of his affairs, by bringing over the young king of England, and having him crowned and anointed at Paris. All the vassals of the crown, who lived within the provinces possessed by the English swore a new allegiance, and did homage to Henry VI<sup>s</sup>. But this ceremony was cold and insipid, in comparison of the coronation of Charles at Rheims; and the duke of Bedford expected more effect from an incident, which put into his hands the author of all his misfortunes.

THE *Maid of Orleans*, as she is called, declared, after the coronation of Charles, that her mission was now accomplished, and expressed her inclination to retire to the occupations and course of life which became her sex. But Dunois, sensible of the great advantages which might still be reaped from her presence in the army, exhorted her to persevere till the final expulsion of the English. In pursuance of this advice, she threw herself into the town of Compeigne, at that time besieged by the duke of Burgundy, assisted by the earls of Arundel and Suffolk. The garrison

as her appearance believed themselves invincible. But their joy was of short duration. The Maid was taken prisoner in a sally; and the duke of Bedford, resolved upon her ruin, ordered her to be tried by an ecclesiastical court for sorcery, impiety, idolatry, and magic. She was found guilty by her ignorant or iniquitous judges, of all these crimes, aggravated by heresy; her revelations were declared to be inventions of the devil to delude the people; and this admirable heroine was cruelly delivered over alive to the flames, and expiated by the punishment of fire, the signal services which she had rendered to her prince and her native country.

LETTER  
XLVI.

A. D. 1418

THE English affairs, however, instead of being advanced by this act of cruelty, went every day more and more to decay. The great abilities of the regent were unable to restrain the strong inclination which had seized the French of returning under the obedience of their rightful sovereign. The duke of Burgundy deserted the English interest, and formed an alliance with the French king: the duke of Bedford died soon after, and the violent factions which prevailed in the court of England, between the duke of Gloucester and the cardinal of Winchester, prevented the nation from taking proper measures for repairing these signal losses.

A. D. 1435

In proportion as Henry advanced in years, his feeble character became more fully known in the court, and was no longer ambiguous to either faction. Of the most harmless, inoffensive, simple manners, but of the most slender capacity, he was fitted, both by the

9. Polyd. Virg. Monstrelet.

soft-

**PART I.**

- softness of his temper, and the weakness of his understanding, to be perpetually governed by those who surrounded him; and it was easy to foresee that his reign would prove a perpetual minority. As he had
- A.D. 1442.** now reached the age of manhood, it was natural to think of chusing him a queen: and each party was ambitious of making him receive one from their hand, as it was probable this circumstance would decide forever the victory between them. The cardinal of Winchester proved successful; and Henry was contracted to Margaret of Anjou, daughter of Regnier, titular king of Sicily, Naples, and Jerusalem, descended from a count of Anjou, who had left these magnificent titles to his posterity, without any real power or possessions. She was the most accomplished princess of that age both in body and mind; and seemed to possess those qualities, which would enable her to acquire an ascendant over Henry, and to supply all his defects and weaknesses. The treaty of marriage was ratified in England: and Margaret, on her arrival, fell immediately into close connections with the cardinal and his party; who, fortified by her powerful patronage, resolved on the final ruin of the duke of Gloucester 'o.
- A.D. 1443.**

THIS generous prince, worsted in all court intrigues, for which his temper was not suited, but possessing in an eminent degree the favour of the public, had already received from his rivals a cruel mortification; which it was impossible a person of his spirit could ever forgive, although he had hitherto borne it, without violating public peace. His duchess, the daughter of Richard lord Cobham, had been accused

of the crime of witchcraft; and it was pretended, that there was found in her possession a waxen figure of the king, which she and her associates, Sir Roger Bolingbroke, a priest, and one Mary Jordan of Eye, melted in a magical manner before a slow fire, with an intention of making Henry's force and vigour waste away by the like insensible degrees. The nature of this crime, as the philosophic Hume ingeniously observes, so opposite to all common sense, seems always to exempt the accusers from observing the rules of common sense in their evidence. The prisoners were pronounced guilty : the duchess was condemned to do public penance, and to suffer perpetual imprisonment ; and her supposed accomplices were executed. But the people, contrary to their usual practice on such marvellous trials, acquitted the unhappy sufferers, and ascribed these violent proceedings solely to the malice of the duke's enemies. The cardinal of Winchester and his party, therefore, became sensible that it was necessary to destroy a man whose popularity made him dangerous, and whose resentment they had so much cause to apprehend. He was accused of treason, and thrown into prison, where he was soon after found dead in bed ; and although his body bore no marks of outward violence, no one doubted but he had fallen a victim to the vengeance of his enemies <sup>11</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVI  
A. D. 1443.

A. D. 1447.

WHILE England was thus a prey to faction, the king of France employed himself, with great industry and judgment, in removing those numberless ills, to which France had been so long exposed, from the continuance of wars both foreign and domestic. He restored the regular course of public justice ; he in-

11. Grafton. Stowe. Hollinghed.



## PART I.

roduced order into the finances; he established discipline among his troops; he repressed faction in his court; he revived the languid state of agriculture and the arts; and in the course of a few years, rendered his kingdom flourishing within itself, and formidable to its neighbours. The English were expelled from all their possessions on the continent, except Calais, and although no peace or truce was yet concluded between the two nations, the war was in a manner at an end<sup>12</sup>. England, torn in pieces by civil dissensions, made but one more feeble effort for the recovery of Guienne. And Charles occupied at home in regulating the government of his kingdom, and fencing against the intrigues of his son Lewis, scarcely ever attempted to avail himself of her intestine broils. The affairs of the two kingdoms therefore became for a while distinct. But before I carry farther the history of either, we must take a view of the state of the German empire, from the death of Sigismund to the accession of Maximilian.

12. Monstrelet. Henault. Grafton. Hollingshed.

## L E T T E R XLVII.

*The GERMAN EMPIRE and its Dependencies, ROME  
and the ITALIAN STATES, from the Death of SIGISMUND to the Accession of MAXIMILIAN.*

**S**IGISMUND, my dear Philip, was succeeded in the kingdoms of Hungary and Bohemia, and also in the empire, as I have already observed, by his son-in-law, Albert II. duke of Austria. The only enterprize of moment, in which this prince was engaged, during his short reign, was an expedition against the Turks in Bulgaria, where he was seized with a violent dysentery, before any action took place, and died at the village of Long, in his return to Vienna<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVII.  
A.D. 1438.

A.D. 1439.

ALBERT was succeeded in the imperial throne by his cousin Frederic of Austria, the third emperor of that name. The kingdoms of Hungary and Bohemia were settled on Ladislaus, Albert's infant son, who was committed to the guardianship of Frederic.

THE emperor's first care was to heal a schism, which had rent anew the church. With this view he set out for Basil, where a council was assembled for "the reformation of the church universal, both in its head and its members," conformable to a resolution of the council of Constance: and that council had raised to the papacy Amadeus duke of Savoy, under the name of Felix V. in opposition to Eugenius IV.

A.D. 1440.

1. Heise, liv. iii. chap. i.

who

**PART I.** who had attempted to defeat the purpose of their meeting. Frederic exhorted the fathers to concord, and an accommodation with Eugenius. He had also an interview with Felix, whom he refused to acknowledge for pope, though tempted by an offer of his daughter, a young princess of exquisite beauty, and two hundred thousand ducats as her portion. "This man," said Frederick to one of his courtiers, in a contemptuous tone, "would fain purchase holiness, if he could find a seller." The schism was at length, however, happily closed by the resignation of Felix, who was prevailed upon by the emperor to abdicate the apostolic chair on certain conditions, which were confirmed by Nicholas V. who had succeeded Eugenius<sup>2</sup>.

THE peace of the church being thus restored, and the affairs of Germany in tolerable order, Frederick began to turn his eyes towards Italy, where the imperial authority was gone to utter decay. Alphonso of Aragon reigned at that time in Naples, and joined the emperor, because he feared the power of the Venetians, who were masters of Ravenna, Bergamo, Brescia, and Cremona. Milan was in the hands of Francis Sforza, a peasant's son, but one of the greatest warriors of his age, and now become the most powerful man in Italy. He had married Blanche Maria, natural daughter of Philip Maria Galeazzo, duke of Milan, by whom he was adopted. Florence was in league with the pope against Sforza; the Holy See had recovered Bologna; and all the other principalities belonged to different sovereigns, who had mastered them<sup>3</sup>. In this situation were the affairs of

2. Georgii, *Vit. Nichol. V.* Mosheim, *Hist. Eccl.* vol. iii. *Æn. Syl. Vit. Fred. III.*

3. *Annal. de l'Emp.* tom. ii.

When the emperor resolved upon a journey to Rome, in order to be crowned by the pope, together with Eleanora, sister of the king of Portugal, to whom he was contracted in marriage, and whom he promised to meet at Sienna.

LETTER  
XLVII.  
A.D. 1451.

As soon as Frederic had crossed the Alps, he was met by the Venetian ambassadors, who conducted him to their city, where he made his public entry with great magnificence. He thence repaired to Ferrara, where he found ambassadors from Francis Sforza, duke of Milan, inviting him to return by that city, where he should receive the iron crown; here he also received deputies from Florence and Lucca, craving the honour of entertaining him at their respective cities, which he accordingly visited. In Florence the emperor took the route of Sienna, where he was joined by the princess Eleanora. And at that city he gave audience to the pope's legates, who represented to him, that, by ancient custom, the emperors always took an oath to the pope before they entered the territories of St. Peter's patrimony; and requested, that he would conform to the same.

FREDERIC, in this particular, complied with the request of his Holiness. The oath which he took was expressed in these terms: "I Frederic king of the Romans, promise and swear, by the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, by the wood of the vivifying cross, and by these reliques of saints, that if, by the remission of the Lord, I shall come to Rome, I will exalt the holy Roman Church, and his Holiness."

4. Machiavel, *Hist. Flor.* lib. vi.

PART I.

A.D. 1451.

“ness, who presides over it, to the utmost of  
 “power. Neither shall he lose life, limb, or he  
 “mour, by my counsel, consent, or exhortation  
 “Nor will I, in the city of Rome, make any law  
 “decree touching those things which belong to  
 “Holiness or the Romans, without the advice of our  
 “most holy lord Nicholas. Whatever part of St.  
 “Peter’s Patrimony shall fall into our hands, we will  
 “restore it to his Holiness; and he, to whom  
 “shall commit the administration of our kingdom  
 “Italy, shall swear to assist his Holiness in  
 “sending St. Peter’s Patrimony to the utmost of  
 “power. So help me God, and his holy Evangelists.”

THE emperor now proceeded to Viterbo, where he  
 was in danger of his life from a tumult of the populace  
 so indifferently attended was this successor of Charle-  
 magne!—From Viterbo he repaired to Rome, where  
 he was met by the whole college of cardinals; and  
 it had been customary for the late emperors, when  
 they went thither to be crowned, to continue some time  
 without the walls, Frederic ordered tents to be pitched  
 and there passed one night. He made his public  
 entry next day, when he was crowned king of Lon-  
 bardy, notwithstanding the remonstrances of the de-  
 puties of Milan; he not chusing to put himself in the  
 power of Sforza, who was master of that city, as  
 which properly belonged to the empire, the last duke  
 having died without legitimate issue. Three days af-  
 ter this ceremony, he was married to Eleanora, and  
 together with her received the imperial crown. The  
 emperor and the pope next ratified the Concordance

A.D. 1452.

of the German nation, touching the collation to prelacies and other benefices, which had some years before been agreed to by cardinal Carvajal, Nicholas's legate at the imperial court<sup>6</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVII.

A.D. 1452.

HAVING thus transacted matters at Rome, Frederic set out on his return to Germany; and in his passage through Ferrara was waited upon by Borso, marquis of Este, a prince of extraordinary merit, whom he created duke of Modena and Reggio<sup>7</sup>. On his arrival in Austria, he found himself involved in a number of difficulties, out of which he was never able fully to extricate himself.

THE Hungarians had often entreated Frederic to send home their king Ladislaus, whom he still detained at the imperial court, under pretext of being guardian to that young prince: and they had, by the most earnest and repeated instances, besought him to restore their crown and regalia, which were in his custody. But he found means, under various pretences to postpone his compliance with these demands. The Austrians, joined by a number of Bohemians, and encouraged by several princes of the empire, also sent a deputation to expostulate with Frederic on the same subject; and as he lent a deaf ear to their request likewise, and amused them with fresh evasions, they had recourse to arms, and compelled him to sign an accommodation. It was agreed, That Ladislaus, being yet of too tender years to take upon himself the government of his kingdoms, should be put under the tuition of Ulric count Celley, his uncle by the mother's side, and that the dispute touching the ward-

<sup>6</sup>. Barre, tom. vii. Neucier. sub. ann.

<sup>7</sup>. Id. ibid.

**PART I.** ship of the emperor should be determined at Vienna.<sup>2</sup>  
**A.D. 1452.**

COUNT Celley's ambition was elated by the power which he derived from being tutor to Ladislaus. He attempted to make himself absolute master in Austria: he secured the principal fortresses, by giving the command of them to his creatures; and he gradually removed Eisinger, a Bohemian gentleman, who had headed the insurrection, and the Austrian nobility, from all offices of importance. His friends and favourites only were trusted. The people were incensed at such proceedings; and Eisinger, profiting by their discontent, roused their resentment to such a degree, that the count was obliged to retire into Hungary, after having delivered up the person of Ladislaus, who consented to take the oath imposed upon him by the Bohemians, and was crowned with great solemnity at Prague.<sup>3</sup>  
**A.D. 1453.**

DURING these contests the city of Constantinople was taken by the Turks, after they had subdued the rest of Greece; and by this blow the Roman empire in the East was utterly annihilated, as shall be related more at length in its proper place. Here it is only necessary to observe, that the progress of the Mahometans alarmed all the princes of Christendom, and made them think of uniting, though too late, in order to oppose the common enemy. A diet was convoked at Ratisbon on this subject, and the members unanimously agreed, That there was a necessity for taking some speedy measures to stop the progress of the Infidels. But what these measures should be, was a con-  
**A.D. 1455.**

3. *Æn. Sylv. Hist. Rom.*

9. *Id. ibid.*

sideration referred to another diet assembled at Frankfurt; where, although there was a vast concourse of princes, and great appearance of zeal, very little was done for the common cause. Other diets were afterwards held for the same purpose, but with no better success; a backwardness which was chiefly owing to the timid and slothful disposition of the emperor, who would never heartily embark in the undertaking<sup>10</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVII.  
A. D. 1455.

THE German princes however, at the solicitation of Carvajal, the pope's legate, sent a body of troops to the assistance of John Hunniades, a famous Hungarian general, who had long gallantly defended his country against the Turks, and gained several advantages over them. Hunniades, thus reinforced, marched to the relief of Belgrade, which was besieged by Mahomet II. the conqueror of Constantinople, and the terror of Christendom; and compelled the sultan, after an obstinate engagement, to raise the siege, and retreat with the loss of four thousand men, left dead on the spot<sup>11</sup>. But the death of Hunniades, which happened a few days after the battle, prevented the Christian army from making any progress against the Infidels. The fruits of their victory, and their future projects, perished with their illustrious leader.

A. D. 1456.

IN the mean time Ladislaus, king of Hungary and Bohemia died, and various competitors arose for those crowns, as well as for the dominions of Upper Austria, which belonged to that prince. Among these was the emperor Frederic III. who reaped nothing but damage and disgrace from a civil war which desolated

A. D. 1457.

10. *Æn. Sylv. Europ.*

11. *Ibid.*



**PART I.** Germany for many years, but which was productive of no event that merits attention. His son Maximilian was more fortunate, and better deserved success.

**A.D. 1477.** THIS young prince, who was as active and enterprising as his father was indolent and timid, married, at twenty years of age, the only daughter of Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy. She brought him Flanders, Franche-Comté, and all the Low Countries. Lewis XI. who disputed some of these territories, and who, on the death of the duke, had seized Burgundy, Picardy, Ponthieu, and Artois, as fiefs of France, which could not be possessed by a woman, was defeated by Maximilian at Guinegate; and Charles VIII. who renewed the same claims, was obliged to conclude a disadvantageous peace<sup>12</sup>.

**A.D. 1493.** ABOUT this time died Casimir IV. king of Poland, and father of Uladislaus, who now reigned over Hungary and Bohemia. The death of the Polish monarch had been preceded by that of pope Innocent VIII. who was succeeded in the papacy by Roderic Borgia, under the name of Alexander VI. Nor did the emperor Frederic III. long survive these alterations. He died in the seventy-ninth year of his age, and the fifty-fourth of his reign. No emperor had ever reigned longer, and none less gloriously.

THE reign of Maximilian, already elected king of the Romans, introduces a more interesting period than that over which we have now travelled, and opens a vista into some of the grandest scenes of history. But a variety of objects, my dear Philip, must occupy your attention before I carry farther the affairs of the empire.

<sup>12</sup>. Mezeray, *Chronol. Abreg.* tom. ii.

L E T T E R XLVIII.

ENGLAND *during the Contest between the Houses of YORK and LANCASTER, and till its final Extinction in the Accession of the House of TUDOR.*

**I** Have already had occasion to notice the weakness of Henry VI. His incapacity appeared every day in a stronger light. The more he was known, the more his authority was despised; and as the English had abandoned their dominions in France, and were now engaged in no foreign wars, men of restless and ambitious spirits took occasion to disturb his government, and tear with intestine commotions the bowels of their native country.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A.D. 1450.

**BUT** the miseries of Henry and of England did not arise solely from these causes: a pretender to the crown appeared; and a title which had never been disputed during the prosperous reign of Henry V. was now called in question under his feeble successor. This competitor was Richard duke of York, descended by his mother from Philippa, only daughter of the duke of Clarence, second son of Edward III. and consequently stood in the order of succession before the king, who derived his descent from the duke of Lancaster, third son of that monarch.

**SUCH** a claim could not, in many respects, have fallen into more dangerous hands. The duke of York was a man of valour and abilities, which he had found frequent opportunities of displaying. In the right of his father, the earl of Cambridge, he bore the rank of first prince of the blood: he possessed an

PART I.  
A.D. 1450.

immense fortune; and was allied by marriage, or otherwise, to most of the principal families in the kingdom. He was generally beloved by the people; whose discontents, at this time, rendered every combination of the great more dangerous to the throne.

THE administration of government was now in the hands of the queen and the earl of Suffolk, who had attracted universal odium. Margaret was still regarded as a French woman, and a latent enemy to the kingdom, who had betrayed the interests of England, in favour of her family and her country. Suffolk was considered as her accomplice; and the murder of the duke of Gloucester, in which both were known to have been concerned, rendered them yet more obnoxious to the nation.

THE partizans of the duke of York took advantage of these causes of popular discontent, to impeach the earl of Suffolk in parliament of various crimes and misdemeanours; and the king, in order to save his minister, banished him the kingdom for five years. But his enemies, sensible that he still possessed the queen's confidence, and would be recalled on the first favourable opportunity, employed a captain of a ship to intercept him in his passage to France. He was accordingly seized near Dover; his head was struck off on the side of a long-boat, and his body thrown into the sea<sup>1</sup>.

THE duke of Somerset succeeded to Suffolk's power in the administration, and credit with the queen: and as he was the person under whose government the French

1. Hall. Stowe. Contin. Hist. Greyland.

provinces had been lost, the people, who always judge by events, soon made him equally the object of their animosity. In consequence of these discontents, the house of commons presented a petition to the king, praying him to remove the duke of Somerset for ever from his person and counsels; and as Henry fell about this time into a distemper which increased his natural imbecillity, the queen and the council, unable to resist the popular party, were obliged to yield to the torrent. They sent Somerset to the Tower, and appointed the duke of York lieutenant of the kingdom, with powers to open and hold a session of parliament: and that assembly created him Protector during pleasure <sup>2</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVIII.

A. D. 1454.

In the mean time Henry recovering from his distemper so far as to be able to maintain the appearance of royal authority, his friends urged him to resume the government; and to annul the regency of Richard, to release Somerset from the Tower, and to commit the administration into the hands of that nobleman. The duke of York, sensible of his danger, levied an army, in order to support his parliamentary commission, but without advancing any pretensions to the crown, though his title was generally acknowledged. A battle was fought near St. Alban's, where the Lancastrians were routed, and the dukes of Somerset and Northumberland slain. The king himself was made prisoner by the duke of York, who treated him with great tenderness: and Henry was obliged to resign (what he valued little) the whole authority of the crown into the hands of his rival <sup>3</sup>.

A. D. 1455.

<sup>2</sup> *Parl. Hist.* vol. ii. Rymer, vol. xi. Hollingshed.

<sup>3</sup> Stowe. Hall.

## PART I.

**RICHARD**, however, did not yet lay claim to the royalty; he was still content with the title of Protector; and an outward reconciliation took place between the parties. A solemn procession to St. Paul's was appointed, in order to make known this amity to the people. The duke of York led queen Margaret; and a chieftain of one party marched hand in hand with a chieftain of the opposite. But a contest for a crown could not be thus peaceably accommodated. Each party watched only for an opportunity of subverting the other; and the smallest incident, without any formed design, was sufficient to dissolve the seeming harmony. Two servants of the rival houses quarrelled: their companions took part in the fray; a fierce combat ensued; and both parties, in every county in England, openly made preparations for deciding the contest by arms <sup>4</sup>.

**A.D. 1459.** A BATTLE was fought at Blore-heath, on the borders of Staffordshire; where the Lancastrians were defeated, and chased off the field with considerable loss. But that victory was not sufficient to decide the fate of England; and fortune soon shifted sides. When the two armies approached each other near Ludlow, and a general action was every hour expected, Sir Andrew Trollop, who commanded a choice body of veterans, deserted to the king; and the Yorkists were so much dismayed at that instance of treachery, which made every man suspicious of his fellow, that they separated without striking a blow <sup>5</sup>.

IN this extremity the duke of York fled to Ireland, where he had formerly acquired much popularity;

<sup>4</sup> Fabian. *Chron.* See also Grafton.  
Hollingshed.

<sup>5</sup> Grafton. *Hall-*

and his partizans in England kept themselves every where in readiness, to rise on the first summons from their leaders. That summons was given by the earl of Warwick, governor of Calais, the most extraordinary man of his time; and, from the subsequent events, commonly known by the appellation of the *King-maker*. He landed in Kent, where he was joined by several persons of distinction; and as the people bore him an unlimited affection, his army increased every day. He entered London amid the acclamations of the populace: he advanced to meet the royal army, which hastened from Coventry to attack him; and a battle was fought at Northampton, where the Lancastrians were totally routed. Henry himself, that empty shadow of a king, was again made prisoner, and once more carried in triumph to his capital <sup>6</sup>.

A.D. 1460.

A PARLIAMENT was now summoned at Westminster, where the duke of York soon appeared from Ireland, and put in his claim to the crown. He advanced towards the throne; and addressing himself to the house of peers, pleaded his cause before them as his natural and legal judges. He gave them a deduction of his title by descent; mentioned the cruelties by which the house of Lancaster had paved its way to sovereign power; insisted on the calamities which had attended the government of Henry; and exhorted them to return to the right path, by doing justice to the lineal heir; then respectfully left the house, as no one desired him to seat himself on the throne.

SUCH a degree of moderation is not perhaps to be paralleled in history; and was little to be expected in

6. Ibid.

those

**PART I.** those violent and licentious times, from a prince who had a victorious army at his command. The peers, on their part, discovered an equal share of firmness and composure. They called in some of the most considerable members among the commons to assist in their deliberations: and after having heard, in several successive days, the reasons alleged for the duke of York, they declared his title certain and indefeasible; but in consideration that Henry had enjoyed the crown, without dispute or controversy, during a course of years, they determined that he should continue to possess the title and dignity of king during the remainder of his life; that the administration of government, in the meanwhile, should remain with Richard, and that he should be acknowledged the true and lawful heir of the monarchy. The duke acquiesced in this decision; and Henry himself, being a prisoner, could not well oppose it.

*A. D. 1460.*

THE duke of York, however, enjoyed but a short while the honour of this new settlement, and never attained the envied title of king. After the unfortunate battle of Northampton, queen Margaret had fled with her infant son to Durham, and thence to Scotland; but soon returning, she applied to the northern barons, and employed every argument to procure their assistance. Her affability, insinuation, and address, talents in which she excelled, aided by caresses and promises, wrought a powerful effect on all who approached her. The admiration of her great qualities was succeeded by compassion towards her help-

7. *Parl. Hist.* vol. ii. Cotton. Grafton. Hollingshed. The account of this revolution as here given, and generally received, is contradicted in some particulars by J. Wethamstede, abbot of St. Alban's. But a single authority, how respectable soever, is not sufficient to overthrow universal testimony.

less condition. The nobility of that quarter entered warmly into her cause ; and she soon found herself at the head of an army of twenty thousand men, collected with a celerity which was neither expected by her friends nor apprehended by her enemies.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A.D. 1460.

IN the meantime, the duke of York hastened northward with a body of five thousand men, to suppress, as he imagined, the beginnings of an insurrection. He met the queen near Wakefield ; and though he found himself so much out-numbered by the enemy, his pride would not permit him to fly before a woman. He gave battle, was killed in the action ; and his body being found among the slain, his head was cut off by Margaret's orders, and fixed on the gates of York, with a paper crown upon it in derision of his pretended title. His second son, the earl of Rutland, was taken prisoner, and barbarously murdered in cool blood by lord Clifford, in revenge of the death of his father, who had fallen in the battle of St. Alban's. The earl of Salisbury also was taken prisoner, and immediately beheaded, with several other persons of distinction<sup>9</sup>. This inhuman practice, thus begun, was continued by both parties from a vindictive spirit, which affected to conceal its enormity under the pretence of retaliation.

Dec. 14.

IMMEDIATELY after this important victory queen Margaret marched towards London, where the earl of Warwick was left with the command of the Yorkists. On the approach of the Lancastrians, that nobleman led out his army, reinforced by a strong body of Londoners, and gave battle to the queen at St. Alban's.

<sup>9</sup> Polyd. Virg. Hollinghed. Stow. Contin. Hist. Croyland.

Mar-



PART I.  
 A. D. 1461.

Margaret was again victorious, by the treachery of one Lovelace, who commanded a considerable body of the Yorkists, and withdrew from the combat. She had the pleasure of seeing the formidable Warwick fly before her, and of rescuing the king her husband, from captivity.

BUT Margaret's triumph, though glorious, was of short duration, and not altogether complete. Warwick was still in possession of London, on which she made an unsuccessful attempt; and Edward earl of Marche, eldest son of the late duke of York, having gained an advantage over the Lancastrians at Mortimer's Cross, near Hereford, advanced upon her from the other side, and was soon in a condition to give her battle with superior forces. She was sensible of her danger, in such a situation, and retreated with her army to the North; while Edward entered the capital amid the acclamations of the citizens, and immediately opened a new scene to his party.

THIS young prince, who was remarkable for the beauty of his person, for his bravery, his activity, his affability, and every popular quality, found himself so high in public favour, that he resolved no longer to confine himself within those narrow limits which had been found by experience so prejudicial to his father's cause. He determined to assume the name and dignity of king; to insist openly on his claim, and thenceforth to treat the opposite party as traitors and rebels to his lawful authority. But a national consent, or the appearance of it at least, seemed necessary to precede so bold a measure; and for this purpose, instead of convening a parliament, which might have been attended with dangerous consequences, the populace

populace were assembled in St. John's Fields. An harangue was pronounced to this mixed multitude by Warwick, setting forth the title of Edward, and inveighing against the tyranny and usurpation of the house of Lancaster; after which the people were asked, whether they would have Henry or Edward for their king. They universally exclaimed, "Edward of York!" This popular election was ratified by an assembly of lords and bishops, and the new king was proclaimed under the title of Edward IV.<sup>10</sup>

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A. D. 1461.

YOUNG Edward, now in his twentieth year, was of a temper well fitted to make his way through such a scene of war, havock, and devastation, as was presented before him. He was not only bold, active, and enterprising, but his hardness of heart, and severity of character, rendered him impregnable to all those movements of compassion, which might relax his vigour in the prosecution of the most bloody designs upon his enemies. Hence the scaffold, as well as the field, during this reign, incessantly smoked with the noblest blood of England. The animosity between the two contending families was now become implacable; and the nation, divided in its affections, took different symbols of party. The adherents of the house of Lancaster chose, as their mark of distinction, the *Red Rose*; those of York assumed the *White*: and these civil wars were thus known over Europe by the name of the "*Quarrel between the Two Roses*."

QUEEN Margaret, as I have observed, had retired to the North. There great multitudes flocked to her standard; and she was able, in a few weeks, to assemble

**PART I.** an army of sixty thousand men. The king and the  
**A. D. 1461.** earl of Warwick hastened with an army of forty thousand, to check her progress. The two armies met at Towton, and a fierce and bloody battle ensued. The bow, then commonly in use, was soon laid aside, and the sword decided the combat, which terminated in a total victory on the side of the Yorkists. Edward issued orders to give no quarter; and the routed army was pursued as far as Tadcaster, with great bloodshed and confusion. Above thirty-six thousand men are said to have fallen in the battle and pursuit. Henry and Margaret had remained at York during the action; but learning the defeat of their army, and being sensible that no place in England could now afford them shelter, they fled with great precipitation into Scotland<sup>11</sup>.

I MUST here say a few words of the state of that country. The Scots, notwithstanding the animosity between the two nations, had never made any vigorous attempts to take advantage either of the wars which England carried on with France, or of the civil commotions which arose from the competition for the crown. James I. who had been long a prisoner in England, and had received his education there, as I have had occasion to notice, avoided all hostilities with foreign nations. He was more laudably employed in civilizing his subjects, and training them to the salutary restraints of law and justice. After the murder of this excellent prince, whose maxims and manners were too refined for the people whom he had to govern, the minority of his son and successor James II. and the distractions incident on it, prevented the

11. Ibid.

Scots from molesting England. But when the quarrel between the rival houses of York and Lancaster was become incurable, unless by the total extinction of one of the parties, James II. who had now risen to man's estate, was tempted to make use of that opportunity, in hopes of recovering those places which the English had conquered from his ancestors. He invested the castle of Roxburgh, and had provided himself with some pieces of cannon in order to forward the siege; but one of them unhappily bursting, as he was firing it, put an end at once to his life and his undertaking. His son and successor James III. was yet a minor; and the disturbances common to minorities ensued in the government. The queen dowager, Anne of Guelders, aspired to the regency; the house of Douglas opposed her pretensions<sup>12</sup>: so that the queen of England, when she arrived in Scotland, found there a people little less divided by faction than those from whom she had fled.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A.D. 1461.

THE Scottish council, however, agreed to assist Margaret, on her offering to deliver up to them the important forrefts of Berwick, and to contract her son in marriage with a sister of James their king. And Margaret, with her northern auxiliaries, and some succours from France, ventured once more to take the field, and to make an inroad into England. But she was able to penetrate no farther than Hexham. There she was attacked by lord Montacute, brother to the earl of Warwick, and warden of the Marches, who totally routed her motley army<sup>13</sup>. All who were spared in the field suffered on the scaffold.

A. D. 1464.

THE fate of the unfortunate royal family, after this overthrow, was equally singular and affecting. Mar-

<sup>12</sup>. Hall. Cotton.

<sup>13</sup>. Ibid.

## PART I.

A. D. 1464.

garet fled with her son into a forest, where she endeavoured to conceal herself, but was beset during the darkness of night by robbers, who despoiled her of her jewels, and treated her with the utmost indignity. She made her escape however, while they were quarrelling about the booty; and wandered some time with her son in the most unfrequented thickets, spent with hunger and fatigue, and ready to sink beneath the load of terror and affliction. In this wretched condition she was met by a robber with his sword naked in his hand: and seeing no means of escape, she suddenly embraced the bold resolution of trusting entirely to his faith and generosity. "Approach, my friend!"—cried she, presenting to him the young prince!—"to you I commit the safety of your king's son." Struck with the singularity of the event, and charmed with the confidence reposed in him, the robber became her protector. By his favour she dwelt concealed in the forest, till she found an opportunity to make her escape into Flanders; whence she passed to her father in France, where she lived several years in privacy and retirement<sup>14</sup>. Henry was less fortunate in finding the means of escape. He lay concealed during twelve months in Lancashire: but was at last detected, delivered up to Edward, and thrown into the Tower<sup>15</sup>.

A. D. 1465.

THE youthful monarch, thus rid of all his enemies, resigned himself freely to those pleasures and amusements which his rank, his time of life, and his natural temper, no less turned for love than war, invited him to enjoy. The cruel and unrelenting Edward lived in the most familiar and social manner with his

14. Monstrelet, tom. iii.

15. Hall. Hollingshed.

subjects. He was the peculiar favourite of the young and gay of both sexes; and the beauty of his person, as well as the gallantry of his address, which even in the humblest condition, would have rendered him acceptable to the fair, facilitated all his applications for their favour. But it is difficult to confine the ruling passion within the bounds of prudence. The ardent temperament of Edward led him into a snare, which proved fatal to his repose, and to the stability of his throne.

LETTER  
XLVIII.

A. D. 1465.

THIS young king while in the height of dissipation, had resolved to marry, in order to secure his throne by issue, as well as by alliances: and he had cast his eyes on Bona of Savoy, sister to the queen of France. The negotiation was committed to the earl of Warwick, who went over to Paris, where the princess then resided: his proposals were accepted, and the treaty was fully concluded. Nothing remained but the ratification of the terms agreed on, and the bringing of the princess over to England. Meanwhile the charms of lady Elizabeth Gray, one of the finest and most accomplished women of her time, had inflamed the amorous heart of Edward. Her husband, Sir John Gray of Groby, had been slain in the second battle of St. Alban's, fighting on the side of Lancaster, and his estate confiscated; and when the king came accidentally, after a hunting party, to the house of her father, Sir Richard Wideville, to whom she had retired, she threw herself at his feet, and entreated him to take pity on her impoverished and helpless children.

THE sight of so much beauty in distress strongly affected the susceptible Edward. Love insensibly stole

## PART I.

A. D. 1455.

into his heart, under the disguise of compassion. raised the fair suppliant from the ground with advances of favour ; and as his passion was increase the winning conversation of Elizabeth, he soon found himself reduced to that posture and style of solicitation which had been so lately her's. But all his solicitations were in vain : she obstinately refused to gratify his passion ; and the young and gallant monarch found for once a virtue which his fondest duties could not bend. Inflamed by opposition, filled with veneration for such honourable sentiments, Edward lost sight of all but love. He offered to resign his throne, as well as his heart, with the woman whose beauty of person, and dignity of character, seemed so well to entitle her to both : and the marriage was privately celebrated at her father's seat in Northamptonshire <sup>16</sup>.

WARWICK, who was still at Paris, no sooner received intelligence of the king's marriage than he returned to England, flaming with rage and indignation, at being employed in a deceitful treaty, which kept a stranger to the intentions of the prince, and owed every thing to his friendship. The king was sensible that Warwick had been ill used ; but his pride, or false shame, prevented him from making an apology : and that nobleman was permitted to depart from the court in the same hot temper that he came. The advancement of the queen's relations into office and power, to the exclusion of those of Warwick, whom she regarded as her mortal enemy, heightened his discontent, and made him resolve to do what the king he had made.

16. Hall. Grafton.

Is order to ( ) I ( ) peer, Warwick drew over to his interest ( ) of Clarence, the king's second brother, by offering him in marriage his eldest daughter, and co-heiress of his immense fortune. Many of the ancient nobility envied the sudden growth of the Widevilles. They associated themselves with Warwick; who finding his own name insufficient, and being chased to France, after some unsuccessful struggles, entered into a league with queen Margaret, his inveterate enemy. On his return to England, he was joined by the whole body of Lancastrians. Both parties now prepared for a general decision by arms; and a decisive action was every moment expected, when Edward, finding himself betrayed by the marquis of Montague, and suspicious of his other commanders, suddenly abandoned his army, and fled to Holland. Henry VI. was taken from his confinement in the Tower, and placed once more upon the English throne; and a parliament, called under the influence of Warwick, declared Edward IV. an usurper 17.

LETTER  
XLVII.

A. D. 1471.

BUT this revolution was only the effect of the giddiness of faction. Warwick was no sooner at the helm of government than his popularity began to decline, though he appears to have been guilty of no unpopular act; so fugitive a thing is public favour!—The young king was emboldened to return. He landed at Ravenspur, as Henry IV. had formerly done, upon a like occasion; and although he brought with him only two thousand men, he soon found himself in a condition to face the earl of Warwick, who had taken post at Barnet. The city of London opened its gates to Edward; who thus became at once master of his

A. D. 1471.



PART I.  
A.D. 1471.

capital and of the person of his rival Henry, doomed to be the perpetual sport of fortune. The arrival of queen Margaret, whose presence would have been of infinite service to her party, was every day expected. In the mean time the duke of Clarence, Warwick's son-in-law, deserted to the king, and carried along with him a body of twelve thousand men. But Warwick was now too far advanced to retreat; and as he rejected with disdain all terms of peace offered him by Edward and Clarence, he was obliged to hazard a general engagement. The battle was fought with great obstinacy on both sides. The two armies, in imitation of their leaders, displayed uncommon acts of valour, and the contest for victory remained long undecided; but an accident threw at last the balance on the side of the Yorkists. Edward's cognisance was a sun, Warwick's a star with rays; and the mistiness of the morning rendering it difficult to distinguish them, a body of the Lancastrians were attacked by their friends, and driven off the field. Warwick did all that experience, conduct, or valour could suggest, to retrieve the mistake, but in vain. He had engaged on foot that day, contrary to his usual practice, in order to shew his troops, that he was resolved to share every danger with them; and now sensible that all was lost, unless a reverse of fortune could be wrought by some extraordinary effort, he rushed into the thickest of the engagement, and fell covered with a multitude of wounds. His brother, the marquis of Montague, underwent the same fate; and as Edward had issued orders to give no quarter, a great and undistinguished slaughter was made in the pursuit<sup>18</sup>.

<sup>18</sup>. Grafton. Hall. Contin. *Hist. Greyland*. Phil. de Comines, liv. iii.

QUEEN Margaret and her son prince Edward, now about eighteen years of age, landed from France the same day on which that decisive battle was fought. She had hitherto sustained the shocks of fortune with surprising fortitude; but when she received intelligence of her husband's captivity, and of the defeat and death of the earl of Warwick, her courage failed her, and she took sanctuary in the abbey of Beaulieu, in Hampshire.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A. D. 1471.

ENCOURAGED however, by the appearance of Tudor, earl of Pembroke, and several other noblemen, who exhorted her still to hope for success, she resumed her former spirit, and determined to assert to the last her claim to the crown of England. She accordingly put herself once more at the head of the army, which increased in every day's march, and advanced through the counties of Devon, Somerset, and Gloucester. But the ardent and expeditious Edward overtook her at Tewksbury, on the banks of the Severn, where the Lancastrians were totally routed and dispersed. Margaret and her son were taken prisoners, and brought to the king, who asked the prince in an imperious tone, how he dared to invade his dominions. "I came hither," replied the undaunted youth, more mindful of his high birth than his present fortune, "to revenge my father's wrongs, and rescue my just inheritance out of your hands." Incensed at his freedom, instead of admiring the boldness of his spirit, the ungenerous Edward barbarously struck him on the face with his gauntlet; and the dukes of Clarence and Gloucester, lord Hastings, and Sir Thomas Gray, taking this blow as a signal for farther violence, hurried the prince aside, and instantly dispatched him with their daggers. Margaret was thrown into the

**PART I.** Tower, where her husband Henry had just expired. Whether he died a natural or violent death is uncertain; though it is generally believed that the duke of Gloucester killed him with his own hand <sup>19</sup>.

**A.D. 1471.**

THE hopes of the house of Lancaster being thus extinguished, by the death of every legitimate prince of that family, Edward, who had no longer any enemy that could give him anxiety or alarm, was encouraged once more to indulge himself in pleasure and amusement; and he recovered by his gay humour, and his easy familiar manners, that popularity which must have been in some degree impaired by the cruelties exercised upon his enemies. The example also of his jovial festivity, served to abate the acrimony of faction among his subjects, and to restore the social disposition, which had been so long interrupted between the opposite parties. But although Edward was fond of pleasure, he was not deaf to the calls of ambition; and a projected invasion of France, in order to recover the dominions lost under his predecessor, tended still farther to increase his popularity.

**A.D. 1475.**

THE prospect of a French war has always proved a sure means of uniting the people of England, and of making the members of parliament open their purses. Edward received a considerable supply, and passed over to Calais with an army of fifteen hundred men at arms, and fifteen thousand archers. He was attended by all his chief nobility; who, animated by former successes, were eager to appear once more on the theatre of honour. But their ardour was damped when they found, on entering the French territories, that their ally, the duke of Burgundy, did not bring them the

smallest assistance. Transported by his fervid temper, that prince had carried his troops to the frontiers of Germany, where they were employed in hostilities against the duke of Lorrain. Lewis XI. however, alarmed at the presence of so warlike and powerful a monarch as Edward, proposed an accommodation; and a truce was concluded on terms by no means honourable to France. Lewis stipulated to pay the king of England immediately seventy-five thousand crowns, in order to defray the expence of his armament, on condition that he should quietly withdraw his troops, and fifty thousand crowns a-year during their joint lives<sup>20</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVIII  
A. D. 1475.

THIS treaty reflected little honour on either of the monarchs. It discovered the imprudence of the one, and the pusillanimity of the other. But as Lewis made interest the sole test of his honour, he thought he had over-reached Edward, by sending him out of France on such easy terms. The most honourable article on the side of Lewis, was the stipulation for the liberty of queen Margaret, who was still detained in custody by Edward. Lewis paid fifty thousand crowns for her ransom; and this princess who, in the active scenes of life, had experienced so remarkably the vicissitudes of fortune, passed the remainder of her days in tranquillity and privacy. Margaret seems neither to have possessed the virtues, nor been subject to the weaknesses of her sex; and she was as much tainted with the ferocity, as endowed with the courage of the age in which he lived.

THE dark and unrelenting disposition of Richard, duke of Gloucester, the future scourge of England,

20. Rymer, vol. xii. Phil. de Comines, liv. iv.

began

## PART I.

A.D. 1475.

began more particularly to discover itself after Edward's return from France. The duke of Clarence, by all his services in deserting Warwick, had never been able to regain the king's friendship, which he had forfeited by his former confederacy with that nobleman. He had also the misfortune to offend his brother Gloucester, who secretly conspired his ruin. Several of his friends were accused and executed, under frivolous pretences, in hopes that his resentment would betray him into measures which might furnish matter for an impeachment. He fell into the snare. Instead of securing his own life against the present danger by silence and reserve, he was open and loud in asserting the innocence of his friends, and in exclaiming against the iniquity of their prosecutors. The king ordered him to be committed to the Tower; and he was sentenced to die by the House of Peers, the supreme tribunal of the nation, for arraigning public justice, by maintaining the innocence of men who had been condemned in courts of judicature. The only favour which the king granted him was the choice of his death: and he was privately drowned in a butt of Malmsey<sup>21</sup>; a whimsical choice, which leads us to suppose that he was passionately fond of that liquor.

A.D. 1478.

A.D. 1473.

THE remaining part of Edward's reign was distinguished by no remarkable event. He sunk again into indolence and pleasure, from which he was once more roused by the prospect of a French war. While making preparations with that view, he was seized with a violent distemper, of which he died in the forty-second year of his age. He was a prince of

21. Fabian. Stowe. Hail. Hollingshed.

more vigour than prudence; and consequently less fitted to prevent ills by wise precautions, than to remedy them after they took place. As a man he possessed many accomplishments: his virtues were few, his vices a numerous catalogue.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A.D. 1483.

EDWARD IV. left two sons; the prince of Wales, now Edward V. in his thirteenth year, and Richard duke of York, in his ninth. The duke of Gloucester, their uncle, whose sanguinary disposition I have had occasion to notice, was appointed regent by Edward's desire, and chosen protector by his own artifices. He had already got the two young princes into his possession, contrary to the inclination of their mother, who seemed struck with a kind of presage of their future fate; and his eye was fixed upon the throne, though not only the sons of Edward, but those of the duke of Clarence stood between him and it.

AN attempt to exclude or destroy so many persons possessed of a preferable right, may seem equally imprudent and impracticable. But a man like Gloucester, who had abandoned all principles of honour and humanity, was soon carried by his predominant passion beyond the reach of fear or precaution; and having so far succeeded in his views, he no longer hesitated in removing the other obstructions in his way. He ordered earl Rivers, the queen's brother, Sir Richard Gray, her son, by her former husband, and Sir Thomas Vaughan, who possessed a considerable place in the young king's household, and was firmly attached to his person, to be thrown into prison, and executed without any form of trial. His next step was to draw into his views the duke of Buckingham and lord Hastings, With the first he succeeded; but the last remained

## PART I.

A.D. 1483.

firm in his allegiance to the children of Edward, who had ever honoured him with his friendship. His death was therefore resolved upon; and for that purpose a council was summoned in the Tower, whither that nobleman, suspecting no harm, repaired without hesitation.

GLOUCESTER, on taking his place at the council board, appeared in the easiest and most facetious humour imaginable; but making a pretence soon after to retire, as if called away by urgent business, he returned knitting his brows, grinding his teeth, and exhibiting by frequent change of countenance, symptoms of inward perturbation. A general silence ensued; every one dreading some terrible catastrophe, and all gazing with looks of doubt and anxiety upon each other. Richard at last relieved them from their awful suspense. "What punishment do they deserve," said he, "who have conspired against my life?"—"The death of traitors," replied lord Hastings. "These traitors," cried Richard, "are the sorcerers, my bother's wife, and that witch Shore, his mistress, with others their associates. See to what a condition they have reduced me by their spells and incantations!" laying bare his arm, all shrivelled and decayed. The amazement of the council was increased, it being well known this infirmity had attended him from his childhood; and lord Hastings, who, since Edward's death, had engaged in an intrigue with Jane Shore, was naturally alarmed at such an accusation. "Certainly, my lord," said he, with some hesitation, "if they are guilty of such a crime, they deserve punishment."—"And do you," exclaimed Richard, "reply to me with your *ifs*? You know their guilt: you are yourself a traitor, and

" the

"the chief abettor of the witch Shore; and I swear by St. Paul, that I will not dine until your head is brought me!" He struck the table with his hand: armed men rushed in at the signal: Hastings was seized; hurried away; and instantly beheaded on a log of wood, which accidentally lay in the courtyard of the Tower".

LETTER  
XLVIA.

RICHARD having thus got rid of the man he most feared, and of all who were most likely to oppose his views, ordered lord Stanley, the archbishop of York, the bishop of Ely, and other counsellors of whom he was suspicious, to be committed prisoners to the Tower; and, in order to carry on the farce of accusations, he commanded the goods of Jane Shore to be seized, and summoned her to answer before the council for forcery and witchcraft. But as beauty was her only witchcraft, and conversation her most dangerous spell, no proofs were produced against her which could be received even in that ignorant age. Her persecution, however, did not end here. Though framed for virtue, she had proved unable to resist temptation, and had left her husband, a goldsmith in Lombard-street, to live with Edward, who solicited her favours. But while seduced from her fidelity by this gay and amorous monarch, she still made herself respectable by her other virtues. She never sold her influence. Her good offices, the genuine dictates of her heart, waited not the solicitation of presents or the hopes of reciprocal benefit; to protect the oppressed, and relieve the indigent, were her highest pleasures. Yet all her aimable qualities, could not save her from the bitterness of shame, cruelly



**PART I.** imposed upon her by a barbarous tyrant. Richard ordered her to be tried in the spiritual court for adultery. The charge was too notorious to be denied. She pleaded guilty, and was condemned to do public penance in a white sheet at St. Paul's, after walking barefooted through the city. Her future life was long and wretched. She experienced in old age and poverty the ingratitude of those courtiers whom she had raised into favour. Not one, of all the multitudes she had obliged, had the humanity to bring her consolation or relief. Her frailties as a woman, amidst a courtured to the most atrocious crimes, were thought sufficient to justify all violations of friendship towards her, and all neglect of former obligations; and she was permitted to languish out her days in solitude and want<sup>23</sup>:

So many acts of violence, exercised against all the nearest connexions of the late king, prognosticated the severest fate to his defenceless children; and after the murder of Hastings, Richard no longer made secret of his intention to usurp the crown. As a colour to his pretensions, he not only maintained, that his two nephews were illegitimate, but also his two brothers, Edward IV. and the duke of Clarence; that his mother had admitted different lovers into her bed who were the fathers of these children; that the resemblance to those gallants was a sufficient proof of their spurious birth; and that he alone of all her sons as appeared by his features, was the true offspring of the duke of York. The place chosen for promulgating this foul and impudent assertion was the pulpit before a large congregation, and in Richard's presen-

23. Ibid.

Dr. Shaw, a sycophant entirely at his devotion, was appointed to preach in St. Paul's, and having chosen for his text, from scripture, "Bastard slips shall not thrive!" he enlarged on every circumstance that could discredit the birth of Edward IV. the duke of Clarence, and of all their children. He then broke out into a panegyric on the duke of Gloucester, exclaiming, "It is he who carries in his face, in his soul, the image of virtue, and the marks of a true descent!" And it was expected, as soon as the doctor had pronounced these words, that the audience would cry out, "God save king Richard!" a salutation which would immediately have been laid hold of as a popular consent, and interpreted to be the voice of the nation. But the audience kept a profound silence, and disappointed both the protector and his preacher<sup>24</sup>.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A. D. 1482.

RICHARD, however, had gone too far to recede from his criminal and ambitious purpose. Another place was chosen for a popular harangue: a place where a popular speaker never fails to persuade, and where a voice may be obtained for any measure, however atrocious or absurd. The citizens of London, with the rabble at their heels, were assembled in Guild-hall, where the duke of Buckingham addressed them in an eloquent harangue, setting forth the title and virtues of the protector, and "God save king Richard!" was at last returned by the mob. The sentiments of the nation were now thought sufficiently declared. The voice of the people was the voice of God! Richard was prevailed upon, though with seeming reluctance, to accept of the crown; and he thenceforth acted as legitimate and lawful sovereign<sup>25</sup>.

24. Sir T. More.

25. Ibid.

PART I.

A. D. 1483.

THIS ridiculous farce was soon followed by a scene truly tragical, the murder of the two young princes. Richard gave orders to Sir Robert Brakenbury, constable of the Tower, to put his nephews to death; but that gentleman refused to bear any part in the infamous office. The usurper then sent for Sir James Tyrrell, who promised obedience, and the government of the Tower was given him for one night. He chose three associates, whom he employed to execute his barbarous commission, and conducted them, about midnight, to the door of the chamber, where the princes were lodged. They were in bed, and fallen into a profound sleep. The ruffians suffocated them with bolsters and pillows, and afterwards shewed their naked bodies to Tyrrel, who ordered them to be buried at the foot of the stair-case under a heap of stones<sup>26</sup>. These circumstances were confessed by the perpetrators, in the following reign.

RICHARD

26. Sir T. More. An attempt has lately been made by an ingenious but whimsical writer, to invadate the particulars of this relation, and even to bring into question the fact it tends to establish. But in answer to the *Historic Doubts* of Mr. Walpole, it will be sufficient to reply in the words of the profound and sagacious Hume; That the singular magnanimity, probity, and judgment of Sir Thomas More, make his narrative an evidence beyond all exception; that the testimony of no historian, either of ancient or modern times, can possibly have more weight; that he may justly be esteemed a cotemporary with regard to the murder of the two princes: for although he was but five years of age when that event happened, he lived and was educated among the persons concerned in the principal transactions during the administration of Richard III. And it is plain from his narrative itself, which is often extremely circumstantial, that he had the particulars from eye-witnesses themselves. This authority, therefore, is irresistible; and "sufficient to overbalance an hundred little doubts, and scruples, and objections." (*Hist. of England*, vol. iii. note M.) All cotemporary writers, both English and foreign, charge Richard, directly or indirectly, with the murder of his nephews. Comines openly accuses him of it, (*Memoirs* liv. vi.

RICHARD having thus extirpated all whom he might disturb his government, endeavoured to by favours those whom he thought could give lity to his throne. Several noblemen received honours; and lord Stanley was set at liberty, made steward of the household. But Richard's er arose from a quarter whence he least expected. The duke of Buckingham did not think himself iently rewarded for his services in promoting the nation: he observed the general detestation of ard; and; by the advice of Morton, bishop of he turned his eye towards the young earl of Rich- d, now an exile in Brittany, as the only person ble of freeing the nation from the tyranny under h it groaned.

LETTER  
XLVIII.  
A.D. 1483.

HENRY, earl of Richmond, was grandson of Sir en Tudor and Catharine of France, reliēt of ry V. By his mother he was descended from 1 of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, son of Edward III.

was the only remaining branch of that family; h had so long contended for the crown. In or- to strengthen his interest a match was concerted reen him and Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward

Money was sent over to him, for the purpose evying foreign troops; and the queen-dowager nised to join him on his first appearance, with all friends and partizans of her family.

sup. ix.) and Fabian tells us that, as soon as Richard accepted the gnty, " King Edward V. and his brother, the duke of York, re put under surety keeping in the Tower, in such wise that they never r came abroad." (*Chron.* 235.) Comines supports his accusation very strong circumstances. The court of France, he tells us, was ch struck with horror at Richard's treason and usurpation; that English ambassador was refused an audience. *Mém. ubi sup.*

fol. II.

H

BUT

## PART I.

A. D. 1483.

BUT so extensive a conspiracy, though laid on the solid foundations of good sense and sound policy, could not escape the jealous and vigilant eye of Richard. He soon received intelligence that his enemies, headed by the duke of Buckingham, were forming some designs against him. The duke, unable to resist the force of Richard, was obliged to seek safety in retreat; he was discovered, condemned, and executed; and the other conspirators, who had taken arms in different parts of the kingdom, when informed of this misfortune, despaired of success, and immediately separated themselves <sup>27</sup>. Meantime the earl of Richmond appeared on the coast of England, with a body of five thousand men; but hearing of the fate of Buckingham, and the dispersion of his friends, he returned to the coast of Brittany.

A. D. 1484.

RICHARD, thus triumphant in every quarter, and fortified by an unsuccessful attempt to dethrone him, ventured at last to summon a parliament; a measure which his multiplied crimes, and flagrant usurpation, had hitherto induced him to decline. The parliament had no choice left but to recognize his authority, and acknowledge his right to the crown. His son Edward, a youth of twelve years of age, was created prince of Wales: and the king passed some popular laws in order to reconcile the nation to his government.

ALL Richard's other measures tended to the same object. His queen being now dead, he proposed by means of a papal dispensation, to marry the princess Elizabeth, the true heiress of the crown, and intended for the earl of Richmond, if his enterprize had succeeded. And, strange as it may sound in civilized

the queen-dowager neither scrupled this alliance, was very unusual in England, and regarded as monstrous, nor felt any horror at the thought of marrying her daughter to the murderer of her three sons, of her brother. But the earl of Richmond, repelled at an alliance which must prove fatal to all hopes, and encouraged by the English exiles, repudiated upon a new invasion. All men of probity and honour, he was assured, were desirous to prevent the country from being any longer polluted by that bloody and unprincipled hand which held it <sup>28</sup>. In consequence of these representations, he set sail from Harfleur, in the spring, with a retinue of about two thousand men, and landed at Milford Haven, in Wales. The Welsh, who considered him as their countryman, rallied to his standard; and his cause immediately assumed a favourable aspect.

A. D. 1485,

RICHARD, who knew not in what quarter he might meet the invader, had taken post at Nottingham, in the centre of the kingdom, and having given commissions to different persons in the several counties, whom he empowered to oppose his enemy, he proceeded in person to haste, on the first alarm, to the most exposed to danger. The Welch governors had already deserted to Henry. But the danger to Richard was chiefly exposed, proceeded not so much from the zeal of his open enemies, as from the duplicity of his pretended friends. Scarce any person was sincerely attached to his cause except the duke of Norfolk; and some, who had feigned the most loyalty, were only watching for an opportunity to betray and abandon him. Among these was Stanley; who raised a numerous body of his

<sup>28</sup>. Ibid.

## PART I.

A.D. 1485.

friends and retainers in Cheshire and Lancashire, but without openly declaring himself, his son being in the tyrant's power. And although Henry had received secret assurances of Stanley's friendly intentions, the armies on both sides knew not what to infer from his equivocal behaviour, when they met at Bosworth, near Leicester. Henry's army consisted of six thousand men, Richard's of double that number: and he hastened to decide by arms the quarrel with his competitor.

Soon after the battle began, lord Stanley appeared in the field and declared for the earl of Richmond. This measure had a proportional effect upon both armies: it inspired unusual courage into Henry's soldiers; it threw Richard's into dismay and confusion. The intrepid tyrant, now sensible of his desperate situation, cast his eye across the field, and descrying his rival at no great distance, attempted to decide the victory by a blow. He killed with his own hand Sir William Brandon, standard-bearer to the earl: he dismounted Sir John Cheney; and he was within reach of Henry himself, who declined not the combat, when Sir William Stanley broke in between them, and surrounded Richard with his troops. Though overwhelmed by numbers, he still maintained the combat; and at last sunk amid heaps of slain, who had fallen by his arm <sup>29</sup>.—A life so infamous, it has been said by Voltaire, and by Hume after him, did not merit so glorious a death; but every man surely merits what his talents enable him to earn. Richard was a blood-thirsty tyrant; but he was brave, and he died as a brave man should, with his sword in his

29. Kennet. Sir T. More.

hand:

hand : he was brave to the last. It would indeed have been matter of regret had he died in his bed, after disturbing so cruelly the repose of mankind : but his death was sufficiently violent, to prevent his life from becoming an object of imitation.

LETTER  
XLVIII.

A. D. 1485.

THIS battle was entirely decisive : the king not only being slain, but the whole royal army totally routed and dispersed. The victorious troops, in a transport of joy, bestowed on their general the appellation of king ; and “ Long live Henry the Seventh ! ” resounded from all quarters, and was continued with repeated acclamations. In order to give some kind of form to this military election, the ornamental crown which Richard wore in battle, was placed upon Henry’s head : his title was confirmed by the parliament ; and his marriage with the princess Elizabeth, which took place soon after, united the jarring claims of the houses of York and Lancaster<sup>30</sup>.—Thus ended the race of the Plantagenets, who had sat upwards of three hundred years upon the throne of England, and thus the civil wars, which had so long desolated the kingdom.

We must now return to the History of France.

30. *Ibid.*



FRANCE, *from the Expulsion of the ENGLISH by CHARLES VII. to the Invasion of ITALY by CHARLES VIII. in 1494.*

**W**HILE England, my dear Philip, was torn in pieces by civil wars, France was increasing both in power and dominion. Most of the great fiefs were reunited to the crown: the authority of the prince was raised to such a height, as enabled him to maintain law and order; a considerable military force was established, and the finances were able to support it. The means by which these changes were effected require your particular attention.

A.D. 1453.

CHARLES VII. no sooner found himself in quiet possession of France, by the expulsion of the English, than he devoted himself to the cares of government: he endeavoured to repair the ravages of war by promoting the arts of peace, and to secure the tranquillity and good order of his kingdom by wise regulations. He established a regular army, instead of those troops required to be furnished by the crown vassals, and levied a tax for their support. Besides that army, which was kept in constant pay, each village maintained a free archer, who was exempted from the king's tax; and it was in consequence of this exemption, otherwise peculiar to the nobility, that such a number of persons soon claimed the title of gentlemen, both by name and arms.

THESE politic measures were followed by the most important consequences. A force, always at com-  
mand,

mand, gave vigour to the royal authority : the possessors of fiefs being no longer called upon, had no longer any pretence for arming their followers, to disturb the peace of the state ; so that the feudal polity went rapidly to decay in France, and Charles beheld himself at the head of the largest and best regulated kingdom in Europe.

BUT all the wisdom and generosity of this great monarch could not secure to him that happiness which he endeavoured to procure for his subjects. His son Lewis revolted, and embittered his latter days with sorrow ; nay, brought him to an untimely grave : for being informed that this prince intended to take him off by poison, he abstained from all food till it was too late ; and literally died of hunger, that his unnatural son might not be guilty of parricide<sup>1</sup>.

LEWIS XI. so much celebrated as a politician, and despised as a man, now succeeded to that crown, which he had traiterously attempted to seize, in prejudice to the best of kings and of fathers. His leading object was the aggrandizement of the monarchy, by depressing the power of the nobles, and reuniting the great fiefs to the crown. And as he knew that men of honour and character would not be concerned in an attempt upon the rights and properties of others, he immediately dismissed the respectable ministers, who had ably and faithfully served his father, and selected from among the lowest of the people, men of a disposition similar to his own ; subtle, deceitful, unfeeling, and cruel. But craft may sometimes over-shoot its aim, especially when accompanied with rapacity.

A. D. 1461.

1. Monstrelet. Du Tillet. Mezeray.

## PART I.

A.D. 1465.

The nobles were alarmed ; they entered into an association, and took arms to humble their oppressor. The king also took arms, and prepared to face them. A battle was fought, which decided nothing ; and as Lewis was fonder of negotiating than fighting, a peace was concluded on terms advantageous to the rebels, but which the perfidious tyrant never meant to fulfil. He took into favour many of those whom he had formerly disgraced : he detached from the confederacy the dukes of Bourbon and Brittany ; and he got an assembly of the states to declare those articles of the treaty void, which were most detrimental to his interest <sup>2</sup>.

A.D. 1467.

BUT although Lewis thus artfully defeated a conspiracy that seemed to endanger his throne, his rapacity soon brought him into new troubles : he became the dupe of his own artifice, and had almost perished in his own snare. Philip the Good, duke of Burgundy, was succeeded in his extensive dominions by his son Charles the Bold. Charles had an antipathy against Lewis ; and, what more alarmed that arch-politician, knew him better than any man in Europe. Both parties assembled forces, and the fate of one of them was expected to be decided ; when Lewis, who hated coming to extremities, agreed to pay the duke

2. *Mém de Phil. de Comines.* Dupleix. Mezeray. By exerting all his power and address in influencing the election of representatives ; by bribing or over-awing the members, and by various changes which he artfully made in the form of their deliberations, Lewis XI. acquired such entire direction of the national assemblies, that, from being the vigilant guardians of the privileges and property of the people, he rendered them tamely subservient, in protecting the most odious measures of his reign. (Phil. de Com. tom i.) He first taught other modern princes the fatal art of becoming arbitrary, by corrupting the fountain of public liberty.

# MODERN ERASE

things for them : in the  
 persons, and ~~the same~~  
 in France, that it ~~was~~ in  
 refusal was agreed to, and the  
 of meeting accompanied it  
 By such an act it ~~was~~  
 Charles off his guard, and  
 their conference, at that time  
 had inspired. As a further  
 negotiation, he commanded  
 enter Liege, and persuade  
 against the duke.

THUS wrapt in perfidy and deceit, Lewis thought himself sure of concluding an advantageous treaty. He was mistaken, however, for once. The duke indeed received him with all possible marks of friendship and respect, and seemed highly pleased with so much confidence in an adversary ; but the face of affairs was as soon changed. Intelligence arrived that the people of Liege had broke out into open rebellion, at the instigation of the French emissaries, and had cut the garrison in pieces. Charles, in the first transports of his rage, ordered the king to be shut up in the castle of Peronne ; posted double guards at the gates, and made him thoroughly sensible that he was a prisoner, and at the mercy of his vassal.

In that wretched condition Lewis had continued three days, when he again attempted to set his crooked policy at work, by distributing large sums among the duke's officers; and Charles's anger being now somewhat abated, he was prevailed upon to enter into a negotiation with his prisoner, or rather to prescribe such terms as he thought proper, to a prince whose life

## PART I.

life and liberty were in his power. The most mortifying of these conditions was, that Lewis should march with him against Liege, and be active in the reduction of that place, which had revolted at his own request. Liege was reduced; and Lewis having thus fulfilled, in every particular, the purpose of his vassal, was permitted to depart, before the duke set fire to the town, and massacred the inhabitants<sup>3</sup>.—This affair was treated with so much ridicule at Paris, that all the magpies and jays were taught to cry, “Peronne! Peronne!” a circumstance that proved fatal to many of them; for Lewis, after his return, issued an edict for destroying all those talkative birds, as unnecessary remembrancers of his disgrace<sup>4</sup>.

THE subsequent part of Lewis’s reign was one continued scene of executions, wars, and negotiations. He and his infamous ministers divided the possessions of those, whom his tyrannies had caused to rebel: his ministers themselves conspired against him; and the bishop of Verdun, and Cardinal Balue, men as wicked as himself, suffered those tortures which they had invented for others. His brother Charles, who had been always a thorn in his side, was taken off by poison; the constable de St. Paul, his brother-in-law, the count of Armagnac, the dukes of Alençon and Nemours, lost their heads on the scaffold; and the children of the last named nobleman, by an unheard-of piece of barbarity, were sprinkled with their father’s blood, yet recking from his veins, and sent in that condition to the Bastile<sup>5</sup>.

3. Phil. de Com. liv. ii. chap. vii—xiv.

4. J. Troyes, *Hist. Secrete de Lewis XI.*

5. Du Tillet. The king ordered, says Mezeray, that the two sons of the duke of Nemours, yet infants, should be placed beneath the scaffold on which he was executed, that their father’s blood might fall on their heads. *Abregé Chronol. de Hist. de France.*

WITH the ignominious but politic treaty of Lewis with Edward IV. by which he purchased the retreat of that monarch, you are already acquainted. He was always engaged, either in war or negotiations with his natural enemy the duke of Burgundy, till the death of that prince, who fell in an ambitious and unprovoked attempt upon the liberty of the Swiss. A. D. 1477. This was a fortunate event for Lewis, and he endeavoured to make the most of it. The duke left no male issue, and but one daughter, the sole heiress of his extensive dominions, which comprehended not only the duchy of Burgundy, but Franche-Comté, Artois, Flanders, and almost all the Netherlands. Lewis proposed a marriage between this princess and his son Charles, the dauphin, a boy only seven years old. In the mean time he seized Burgundy, as a male fief, and made himself master of Artois, Bézanzon, and several other places, by the most atrocious acts of treachery and cruelty <sup>6</sup>. This was the way to make sure of something, but surely not to bring about a marriage treaty: the rapacity of this arch-politician, notwithstanding all his penetration, once more betrayed him. The princess, Mary, was filled with diffidence, and her Flemish subjects with detestation. By their advice she married the archduke Maximilian <sup>7</sup>, son of the emperor Frederic III. and hence arose new wars, which long desolated the Low Countries, and bred an implacable hatred between the houses of France and Austria,

LEWIS

6. Phil. de Com. liv. v. chap. xv. Du Clos, *Hist Lewis XI.*

7. There is reason however to believe, that the heiress of Burgundy was influenced, in her choice, by other motives than those of policy; for we are told by Philip de Comines, that while her marriage with the dauphin

**PART I.**      LEWIS, however, put a stop to these wars (as  
 A.D. 1430. did, as soon as possible, to all in which he was  
 gaged) by a truce; and though he could not boast  
 his success in arms, he retained Burgundy, and  
 the other places he had seized. Anjou, Maine, L  
 vance, and Bar, were soon after left him by Ch  
 count du Maine, the last prince of the house of  
 jou, who died without issue. He had united to  
 crown Roussillon and Cerdagne, under pretence  
 mortgage, and the county of Boulogne by purch  
 Thus Lewis, amid all his crimes, and after all  
 struggles, and all his blunders, saw his kingd  
 much enlarged, his subjects in obedience, and his  
 vernment revered at home and abroad. But he  
 only a glimpse of that agreeable prospect; for he  
 suddenly seized with a fit of the apoplexy, w  
 threw him into a lingering illness: and he exp  
 death with all those horrors, which a life of  
 complicated guilt deserved. It at last overtook h

dauphin was under deliberation, madame Hallewin, first lady of the  
 chamber to that prince, gave it as her opinion, "That there was  
 "need of a man than a boy!" (Mem. liv. vi. chap. iii.) Admittin  
 to be the case, and the marriage with the dauphin impracticable,  
 might still have prevented the dominions of Burgundy from being  
 veyed to a rival power, by favouring the suit of the count of Au  
 leme, a prince of the blood-royal of France, and father of Fra  
 towards a match with whom the princess Mary had indicated her  
 will. (Comines ubi sup.) But the rapacious disposition and intri  
 spirit of the French monarch, which obscured his naturally clea  
 sound understanding, with his jealous dread of so highly exalting  
 je&, made him discourage that alliance, and pursue a line of inf  
 policy disgraceful even to Lewis XI. and which contributed, ev  
 ally, to raise up in the house of Austria a rival power that thwarted  
 measures, opposed the arms, and checked, during two centuries  
 progress of the successors of a prince, who first united the interior  
 of France, and established it on such a footing as to render it formi  
 to the rest of Europe.

but not before he had suffered more severe tortures than any criminal punished during his reign<sup>3</sup>.

LETTER  
XLIX.

A. D. 1483.

3. Phil. de Com. liv. vi. chap. xxi. xxii. Du Clos, *Hist. Louis XI.* The picture drawn by these two writers, of the last scene of this monarch's life, in contrast with his cruelties, is deeply shaded with horror. He put to death, we are told, more than four thousand persons, by different kinds of torture, and without any form of trial; that he was usually present himself at their execution, in beholding which he seemed to enjoy a barbarous satisfaction or triumph; that many of the nobility were, by his order, confined in iron cages, invented by the ministers of his tyrannies, and carried about like wild beasts; while others were loaded with heavy and galling fetters, with a ring of a particular construction for the feet, called the *King's Nail* (Comines et Du Clos ubi sup.) In consequence of these barbarities, and a dread of future punishment, he became greatly afraid of death; and during his illness suspicious of every one around him, not excepting his own son, his daughter, and his son-in-law, the lord of Beaujeu, afterwards duke of Bourbon, though in the two last he placed more confidence than in all others. After often shifting his residence and his domestics, under pretence that nature delights in change, he took up his abode at the castle of Picfz-les-Tours, which he ordered to be encompassed with large bars of iron in the form of a grate, with four watch-towers of iron at the four corners of the building. The grates were without the wall, on the farther side of the ditch, and went to the bottom; spikes of iron as thick as possible, were fastened into the wall; and cross-bow men were placed in the ditches and in the watch-towers, to shoot at any man, who dared approach the castle till the opening of the gate. The gate was never opened, nor the draw-bridge let down before eight in the morning, when the courtiers were permitted to enter. Through the day the captains were ordered to guard their several posts, with a main guard in the middle of the court, as in a town closely besieged. (Phil. de Com. liv. vi. chap. xii.) Nor was this all. Every secret of medicine, every allurements of sensuality, and every sacrifice of superstition, was exhausted, in order to protract the tyrant's miserable existence, and set at a distance the ills he feared. The pope sent him the vest which St. Peter wore when he laid mass; the sacred phial was brought from Rheims to re-anoint him; and he invited a holy hermit from Cahors, at whose feet he knecled, and whose intercession with Heaven he attempted to buy, by building him two convents; the most beautiful country girls were procured to dance around him to the sound of music; he paid his physician, whom he feared, the enormous sum of ten thousand crowns a month; and the blood of infants is said to have been spilt in order to soften the acrimony of his scorbutic humours! Phil. de Com. et Du Clos, ubi sup.

THE



**PART I.** THE character of Lewis XI. is one of the most complicated in history. He obtained the end which he proposed by his policy, but at the expence of peace and reputation. His life was a jumble of crimes and contradictions. Absolute, without equity; popular (because he humbled the great), without generosity; unjust by system, yet zealous for administration of justice; living in open violation of the first principles of morals, but resigning him to the most ridiculous superstitions; the tyrant of his subjects, and the timid slave of his physicians! he basified the royalty at the same time that he strengthened it. Yet this prince who rendered religion contemptible, and royalty disgraceful, assumed the title of *Majesty*, and *Most Christian*, since given to his successors, and formerly not claimed by the kings of France.

LEWIS was succeeded by his son, Charles VI. a young prince ill educated, rash, and incapable of application. As he had entered the fourteenth year of his age, he was no longer a minor by the law; he was still so by nature; and Lewis had wisely trusted the government, during the youth of his son, to his daughter Anne, lady of Beaujeau, a woman of great spirit and capacity. The administration, however, was disputed by the duke of Orléans, first prince of the blood, and afterward the celebrated Lewis XII. who proving unsuccessful in his intrigues, betook himself to arms, and entered into a league with the duke of Brittany, and the archduke of Burgundy. The Bretons were defeated in the battle of St. Aubin, and the duke of Orleans was taken prisoner.

9. Mezeray, tom. iv. Henault, tom. i. Could the duke of Orléans have flattered the passion of Anne of Beaujeau, he might, if we believe Brantome, not only have escaped this misfortune, but shared the same misfortune.

## MODERN EUROPE.

111

The death of Duke of Brittany, which had  
 been long expected, threw the affairs of that  
 country into the utmost confusion, and seemed to  
 open the state with total subjection. It was the  
 great evil which now remained situated from the  
 crown of France; and, as the duke had died without  
 heirs, some antiquated claims to his dominions  
 were revived by Charles VIII. But force is the best  
 argument between princes: of that Charles was possessed;  
 the conquest of Brittany seemed inevitable, unless  
 checked by some foreign power.

111111  
 111111  
 111111  
 111111

THE prince to whom the distressed Bretons looked  
 for aid was Henry VII. of England, who was  
 deeply interested in preventing the reduction of their  
 country, as well as bound by ties of gratitude to re-  
 ceive that protection to the young duchess, which  
 had been generously yielded him by her father. But  
 the parsimonious temper of Henry, which rendered  
 him averse to all warlike enterprizes, or distant expe-  
 ditions, prevented him from sending them any effec-  
 tual support. They therefore applied to Maximilian  
 of Austria, now king of the Romans, whose wife,  
 Mary of Burgundy, was lately dead, and offered him  
 the duchess in marriage. The proposal was readily  
 accepted; the nuptials were celebrated by proxy; and  
 the duchess of Brittany assumed the august title of  
 queen of the Romans. But this honour was all she  
 needed by her marriage: for Maximilian, destitute  
 of money and troops, and embarrassed by the con-  
 tinual revolts of the Flemings, was able to send no  
 succours to his consort. The French made progress  
 every day: yet the conquest of Brittany seemed still  
 distant, and accompanied with so many difficulties,

A. D. 1499

that

**PART I.** that the court of France changed its measures; and by  
 a master-stroke in policy astonished all Europe:  
**A.D. 1489.**

**CHARLES VIII.** had been affianced to Margaret, daughter of Maximilian. Though too young for the nuptial union, she had been sent to Paris to be educated, and at this time bore the title of queen of France. Engagements so solemnly entered into could not easily be set aside: but the marriage of Charles with the duchess of Brittany seemed necessary to re-annex that important fief to the crown; and, as a yet stronger motive for such alliance, the marriage of Maximilian with this princess appeared destructive to the grandeur, and even to the security of the French monarchy. The only means of obviating every inconvenience, were therefore concluded to be, the dissolution of the two marriages, which had been celebrated but not consummated, and the espousal of the duchess of Brittany to the king of France.

**THE** measures by which the French ministry carried this delicate scheme into execution, were wise and political. While they pressed Brittany with all the violence of war, they secretly negotiated with the men of most influence in the duchy, representing to them, That the happiest event, which in their present situation could befall the Bretons, would be a peace with France, though purchased by a final subjection to that monarchy. These arguments had some weight with the barons; but the grand difficulty was, how to obtain the consent of the duchess, who had fixed her affections on Maximilian. In order to subdue her obstinacy, the duke of Orleans was set at liberty; and though formerly her suitor, and favoured with her smile, he now zealously employed all his interest

rest in favour of the king. By his advice, Charles advanced with a powerful army to Rennes, at that time the residence of the duchess. Finding herself without resource, she opened the gates of the city; and agreed to the proffered marriage; which was soon after solemnized, and justly considered as the most fortunate event that could have befallen the French monarchy.<sup>10</sup>

LETTER  
XLIX.

A. D. 1491.

THE success of Charles, in this negotiation, was a most sensible mortification to the king of the Romans. He was deprived of a considerable territory which he thought he had acquired, and an accomplished princess, whom he had espoused: he was affronted in the person of his daughter Margaret, who was sent back to him, after she had been treated, during seven years, as queen of France; and he had reason to reproach himself with his own supine security, in neglecting the consummation of his marriage, which was easily practicable for him, and would have rendered the tie indissoluble. The king of England also had reason to accuse himself of misconduct, in regard to this important transaction: for although the affair had terminated in a manner which he could not precisely foresee, his negligence in leaving his most faithful ally so long exposed to the invasion of a superior power, could not but appear, on reflection, the result of timid caution, and narrow politics; and, as Henry valued himself on his extensive foresight, and judgment, the ascendant acquired over him, by such a youth as Charles, roused his indignation, and prompted him to seek vengeance, after all remedy for his miscarriage was become impracticable. He accordingly entered into a league with the king of the

<sup>10</sup> Mezeray, *Henault*, *ubi sup.* Bacon, *Hist. Eng.* VII.

PART I.

Romans, and the king of Spain, who also interested himself in this matter: he obtained liberal supplies from his parliament; and he landed in France with one of the largest, and best appointed armies that had ever been transported from England<sup>11</sup>.

BUT Charles and his ministers found means to divert the impending storm, by dissolving the conspiracy. They drew the king of Spain into a separate treaty, by restoring to him the counties of Roussillon and Cerdagne; and as they knew Henry's ruling passion to be money, he was bought off by the famous treaty of Estaples, the particulars of which I shall afterwards have occasion to mention. Maximilian now alone remained of all those hostile powers; and he was content to conclude a peace, on obtaining restitution of Artois, Franche Comté, and Caroleans which had been ceded as the dowry of his daughter when she was affianced to the king of France<sup>12</sup>.

CHARLES's motives for purchasing peace at so high a price were neither those of indolence nor timidity but of ambition and youthful ardour. He had determined to vindicate his title to the kingdom of Naples, supposed to descend to him from the female house of Anjou, which ended in Charles count of Maine, who had bequeathed all his rights and possessions to the crown of France. This project had long engaged the mind of Charles; but, in order to carry it effectually into execution, it was necessary to begin peace with his neighbours: and that being now secured, he set out for Italy with as little concern as if it had been a mere journey of pleasure<sup>13</sup>.

11. Bacon, ubi sup.

12. Phil. de Com. liv. vii. chap. iii.

13. Ibid. chap. v. Mézeray, tom. i. p. 376.

BUT before I speak of the success of that expedition, and the wars in which it involved Europe, several important matters merit your attention—the taking of Constantinople by the Turks, and the expulsion of the Moors out of Spain.

LETTER  
XLIX.

L E T T E R L.

*The Progress of the TURKS, and the Fall of the GREEK Empire.*

YOU have already seen, my dear Philip, the weakness of the empire of Constantinople at the time of the Crusades; you have seen the imperial city sacked, and the government seized by the champions of the Cross. The Greeks recovered their empire from the French in 1261, but in a mangled and impoverished condition. It continued in the same weak state. The monastic passion seemed to have obscured the rays of common sense. Andronicus, son of Michael Paleologus, who had restored the Greek empire, allowed himself to be persuaded, that God being his protector, all military force was unnecessary; and the superstitious Greeks, regardless of danger, employed themselves in disputing about the transfiguration of Jesus Christ, when they should have been studying the art of war and training themselves to military discipline. One half of the empire pretended, that the light upon Mount Tabor had been from all eternity; and the other half affirmed, that

LETTER  
L.

**PART I.** it had been produced by God only for the purpose of the transfiguration <sup>1</sup>.

In the mean time the Turks, whose force had been broken by the Mogul Tartars, were strengthening themselves in Asia Minor, and soon over-ran Thrace. Othman, from whom the present sultans are descended, and to whom the Ottoman empire owes its establishment, fixed the seat of his government at Prusa, in Bithynia, about the beginning of the fourteenth century. His son Orcan advanced as far as the borders of the Propontis; and John Cantacuzenus, colleague of the emperor Paleologus, was glad to purchase the friendship of an infidel and barbarian, according to the haughty language of the Greeks, by giving him his daughter in marriage <sup>2</sup>.

**CANTACUZENUS**, who had usurped the imperial dignity, ended his days in a monastery; and John Paleologus, after having in vain implored succours in Italy, and humbled himself at the feet of the pope, was obliged to return and conclude a shameful treaty with Amurath, the son of Orcan, whose tributary he consented to become. The Turkish army had crossed the streights of Callipolis, taken the city of Adrianople, and marched into the heart of Thrace, before the return of the emperor <sup>3</sup>. Amurath first gave to the Janizaries that form under which they at present subsist.

In order to create a body of devoted troops, that might serve as the immediate guards of his person and dignity, the sultan commanded his officers to seize annually, as the imperial property, the third part

1. Pachymer.

2. Duca.

3. Ibid.

of the young males, taken in war. After being instructed in the Mahometan religion, inured to obedience by severe discipline, and trained to warlike exercise, these youths were formed into regular bands, distinguished by the name of *Janizaries* or new soldiers. And as every sentiment which enthusiasm can inspire, and every mark of honour that the favour of the prince could confer, were employed to animate them with martial ardour, and fill them with a sense of their own pre-eminence, the Janizaries soon became the chief strength and pride of the Ottoman armies. By their valour Amurath defeated, in the plain of Cassovia, the united forces of the Wallachians, Hungarians, Dalmatians, and Triballians, under the conduct of Lascar, prince of Servia; but walking carelessly over the field of victory, he was assassinated by a Christian soldier, who had concealed himself among the slain. He was succeeded by his son Bajazet, surnamed Ilderim, or the Thunderbolt, on account of the rapidity of his conquests <sup>4</sup>.

LETTER  
L.

A.D. 1389.

THE Greeks, though surrounded by such dangerous enemies, and though their empire was almost reduced to the boundaries of Constantinople, were not more united among themselves than formerly. Discord even reigned in the imperial family. John Paleologus had condemned his son Andronicus to lose his eyes: Andronicus revolted against him; and, by the assistance of the Genoese, who were masters of the commerce, and even part of the suburbs of Constantinople, he shut his father up in prison. After two years confinement, the emperor recovered his liberty and his authority, and built a citadel in order to ob-

<sup>4</sup>. Cantemir, *Hist. Oib. Emp.*



**PART I.**

frustrate the designs of the Turks; but Bajazet, the terrible Bajazet, ordered him to demolish his works—and the works were demolished<sup>5</sup>!—What but ruin, and that both sudden and inevitable, could be expected from a people, whose timidity induced them to destroy the very column of their security.

IN the mean time, the progress of the Turks in Europe alarming the Christian princes, Philip the Good, duke of Burgundy, and the flower of the French nobility, took arms, and followed the call of John-without-Fear, count of Nevers. The main army, which consisted of about one hundred thousand men, of different nations, was commanded by Sigismund, king of Hungary, afterwards emperor of Germany. The Christians besieged Nicopolis, upon the Danube. Bajazet came to relieve it. He examined the disposition of his enemies: he tried their spirit by skirmishes, and found they had courage, but wanted conduct: he drew them into an ambuscade, and gained a complete victory over them. Bajazet has been justly blamed for massacring his prisoners; but it ought to be remembered, that the French had shewn him the example, by putting to death all the Turks they had seized before the battle<sup>6</sup>.

A. D. 1396.

CONSTANTINOPLE was immediately threatened by the conqueror. But Manuel Paleologus, the son and successor of John, purchased a seeming peace, by submitting to an annual tribute of six hundred pieces of gold; by obliging himself to build a mosque, and receive into the city a *cadi*, or judge, to decide the differences between the Mahometans settled there on

5. Ducas.

6. Cantemir, ubi sup.


account of trade. Perceiving, however, a new storm arising, he withdrew, and went to the several courts of Europe to petition assistance, as his father had formerly done: and with no better success. Nobody would stir in his defence. Few princes indeed were in a condition so to do, almost all Christendom being involved in civil wars. The Turks, meanwhile, had laid siege to Constantinople, and its ruin seemed inevitable; when the fatal blow was diverted for a time, by one of those great events, that fill the world with confusion.

LETTER  
L.

A. D. 1396.

THE dominions of the Mogul Tartars, under Genghiz Khan, and his immediate successors, extended (as we have had occasion to see) from the Wolga to the frontiers of China, and as far east as the river Ganges. Tamerlane, or Timur Beck, one of the princes of those Tartars, and a descendant of Genghiz Khan, by the female line, though born without dominions (in the ancient Sogdiana, at present the country of the Usbees), subdued almost as great an extent of territory as his victorious ancestor; and in the sweep of his conquests, gave a blow to the empire of the Turks. He had subjected Persia, India, and Syria, when the Greek emperor, and five Mahometan princes, whom the sultan had stripped of their dominions, invited him into Asia Minor, as the only potentate able to deliver them from the tyranny of Bajazet.

TAMARLANE was no doubt glad of an opportunity of extending his conquests and his renown; but as he had still some respect for the laws of nations, he sent ambassadors to Bajazet, before he commenced hostilities, requiring him to raise the siege of Con-

**PART I.**  Constantinople, and do justice to the Mahometan princes, whom he had deprived of their territories. The haughty sultan received these proposals with the highest rage and indignation. He abandoned his enterprize, and prepared to face his rival. Tamerlane continued his march, denouncing his vengeance.

**A.D. 1402.** They met between Cæsaria and Ancyra, where all the forces in the world seemed assembled, and a great and terrible battle was fought. The dispute was long and obstinate, but fortune at length declared for Tamerlane. Bajazet himself was taken prisoner, and had the affliction to see one of his sons fall by his side, and the mortification to find another the companion of his chains. They were treated with great humanity by the victor, notwithstanding the vulgar story of the iron cage, in which the captive sultan is said to have been shut up. Three hundred and forty thousand men are computed to have fallen on both sides <sup>7</sup>.

In consequence of this victory, Tamerlane became master of Prusa, the seat of the Turkish empire. He pillaged Nice; ravaged all the country as far as the Thracian Bosphorus, and took Smyrna by assault, after one of the most memorable sieges recorded in history. Every place either yielded to the terror of his name or the force of his arms. The victorious Tartar, however, soon abandoned his acquisitions in Asia Minor, which he found it would be difficult to preserve against so brave a people as the Turks, and went to secure those conquests more likely to prove durable <sup>8</sup>.

<sup>7</sup> Sharifod. *Hist. Timur-Beck*. Cantemir, *Hist. Oth. Emp.*

<sup>8</sup> Sharifod. *ubi sup.*

EARLY WHILE MAHOMET PALEOLOGUS, the Greek emperor, thinking the Turkish power entirely broken, closed the mosque in Constantinople, and retook all places in its neighbourhood. The civil wars even the sons of Bajazet, after the death of their father, and the departure of Tamerlane, fortified Mahomet in his ill-founded security. But the Greeks in time made sensible of their mistake. On the death of Mahomet I. who had dethroned and put to death his brother Musa, Amurath II. the son of Mahomet, immediately sat down before Constantinople. He raised the siege to quell the revolt of his son Mustapha; he took Thessalonica, and returned to the imperial city, which was in more danger than ever. The emperor Manuel had died in the year 1434. A. D. 1434.  
 of a monk; and his successor, John Paleologus threw himself into the arms of the Latins. He tried to procure assistance from the West, by uniting Greek and Roman churches; but he gained by his scheme only the hatred of his subjects. They considered him and the bishops of his train, who had been at the council of Florence, as no better than heretics. The bishops were obliged to retract their opinions: and John was much less zealous in maintaining that so-much-desired union when he found it did not answer his purpose. A. D. 1439.

THE Turks, in the mean time were happily divided from Constantinople by their wars in Hungary;

Æneas Sylvius, *Europ.* Mosheim, *Hist. Eccl.* vol. iii. Besides acknowledging that the Roman pontiff was the supreme judge, the true head of the universal church, the Greek emperor and his bishops were obliged to admit, That the Holy Spirit proceeded from the Son, as well as from the Father, and that departed souls are purified in the infernal fire, by a certain kind of fire, before their introduction to the presence and participation of the vision of the Deity. Mosheim, *ubi sup.*

where

## PART I.

where Amurath found an antagonist worthy of himself, in the celebrated John Hunniades, vaivode of Transylvania, and general to Ladislaus VI. king of Poland, whom the Hungarians had raised to their throne. This great commander obliged the sultan to raise the siege of Belgrade; defeated him in a general engagement, and made him sue for peace. Amurath and Ladislaus accordingly concluded a solemn truce of ten years; to which the one swore upon the Koran, the other upon the Gospels: and the sultan, tired of the toils of empire, resigned the sceptre to his son, Mahomet II. But an atrocious perfidy, disgraceful to the Christian name, obliged him to resume it, to the confusion of his enemies.

A. D. 1444.

THE Turks, reposing on the faith of the treaty, which they religiously observed, had carried their forces into Asia. This seemed a favourable opportunity to attack them on the side of Europe: and cardinal Julian Cæsarini, the pope's legate in Germany, a man of a violent and deceitful character, who had signalized himself in the crusade against the Hussites, persuaded Ladislaus that the treaty with the Turks was of no obligation, as it had been concluded without the consent of his Holiness; and that it not only might, but ought to be violated. The pope confirmed this opinion; ordered the truce to be broke, and released Ladislaus from his oath. In so doing, he acted according to the established usage of the church of Rome, and in conformity with the maxim, that "no faith is to be kept with heretics," and consequently not with infidels:—one of the most pernicious doctrines ever devised by superstition; a doctrine which not only contradicts the first principles of reason and

conscience, but which, if carried into practice, must destroy all moral and political order. It would authorise enemies to sport even with oaths; put an end to public faith, dissolve the links of society, and substitute robbery and bloodshed, instead of the laws of nations and the ties of duty.

LETTER

L.

A. D. 1444.

THE arguments of the pope and his legate however prevailed. All the Polish and Hungarian chiefs, except the brave Hunniades, suffered themselves to be carried away by the torrent; and Ladislaus, seduced by false hopes, and influenced by false principles, invaded the sultan's territories. The Turks, enraged at such a breach of faith, breathed nothing but vengeance. The janizaries went in a body to beg Amurath to quit his retreat, and put himself at their head, his son Mahomet being yet young and inexperienced. He consented, and marched in quest of the Christian army, which he found encamped near the city of Yarna, in Moldavia. Ladislaus was ready to receive him, and both armies joined battle. Amurath wore in his bosom the treaty which had been so solemnly sworn to, and so shamefully violated: he held it up in the height of the engagement, when he found the vigour of his troops beginning to slacken, appealing to God, as a witness of the perjury of the Christians, and beseeching him to avenge the insult offered to the laws of nations. Perjury for once received its just reward. The Christians were defeated with great slaughter, after an obstinate resistance. Ladislaus fell with his sword in his hand, all covered with wounds: cardinal Julian sunk by his side; and ten thousand Poles, who guarded their monarch, covered with their dead bodies nearly the same ground on which they were

Nov. 10.

**PART I.** were drawn up<sup>10</sup>. Amurath, thus victorious, resigned once more the rod of empire: what a rare example of philosophy in a Turk! and was again obliged to resume it.

**A.D. 1444.**

THE person who drew the sultan a second time from his retreat, was George Castriot, surnamed Scanderbeg, the son of a prince Albania, formerly Epirus. This young hero had been delivered as an hostage on the subjection of his father's kingdom; had been educated in the court of Amurath, and had risen into favour by his valour and talents. But he still cherished the idea of becoming one day the deliverer of his country: and a favourable opportunity at last offered. He had been sent with the command of an army into Servia, when he heard of his father's death; and as he understood a secretary of the Ottoman court was to pass near his camp, he caused him to be seized, loaded with chains, and compelled him to sign and put the sultan's signet to an order, enjoining the governor of Croia, the capital of Albania, to deliver up the town and citadel to himself. This false order had the desired effect. The place was delivered up, and Scanderberg massacred the Turkish garrison. The Albanians crowded to his standard; and he made so good an use of the mountainous situation of his country, as to defy all the efforts of the sultan's power<sup>11</sup>.

**A.D. 1451.** AMURATH was succeeded in his extensive dominions by his son Mahomet II. justly surnamed the Great, who had been formerly crowned, and obeyed

<sup>10</sup>. Mat. de Michov. lib. iv. Herbert de Fulstin, lib. xiv. P. Cassemir, ubi sup.

<sup>11</sup>. P. Cantemir. Sir Paul Ricaut.

LETTER

L

A.D. 1451.

as emperor, but had resigned to his father the reins of government, as you have already seen, on account of the exigencies of the times; an example of moderation no less extraordinary than the philosophy of Amurath in retiring from the honours of empire in the hour of victory, especially as Mahomet was naturally of a fiery and ambitious temper. The character of this prince has been very differently represented by historians. Voltaire is his professed panegyrist; and in order to free him from the imputation of certain cruel and ferocious actions, has combated the most incontestible facts. Other writers have gone equal lengths to degrade him: he has been painted as a rude and ignorant barbarian, as well as a scholar and a patron of the liberal arts. But they who would do justice to the character of Mahomet, must trace it by other lineaments. He was both a scholar and a barbarian: he united the knowledge of the one to the savage ferocity of the other. He was enlightened, but not civilised. With some taste for the liberal arts, or at least some sense of the value of their productions, he entertained a general contempt for their professors: the Turk always predominated. He was a warrior and a politician in the most extensive meaning of the words: as such he was truly great: and whether we consider the conception or the execution of his enterprises, we shall find equal cause to admire the extent of his understanding and the vigour of his spirit. His first enterprize was against Constantinople, which had so long been the object of the ambition of his ancestors.

THE Greek emperor, John Paleologus II. had been succeeded in 1449, by his son Constantine. This prince possessed courage, but little capacity. He took care, however, to strengthen the fortifica-

tions



## PART I.

A.D. 1452.

tions of his capital, as soon as he was apprised of designs of Mahomet : and he made many advances the sultan, in order to conciliate matters, and in him to lay aside his project. But Mahomet's resolution was taken. Though only twenty-one years of age when he ascended the Ottoman throne, he already conceived the design of making Constantinople the seat of his empire ; and nothing could divert him from his purpose. If he sometimes seemed to listen to terms of accommodation, it was only he might lull his enemies into security, while he ried on his military preparations with unremitting fidelity. At last he cut off all communication the city, both by sea and land, and laid siege to form. Though the garrison was but small, the were defended with great gallantry on the land and the Greeks being actuated by the courage of defence and the Turks were incapable of annoying them the sea, by reason of large chains and booms which secured the mouth of the harbour. But nothing impossible to human genius, when aided by the necessary force. In order to overcome this difficulty Mahomet caused a passage of near two leagues dug over land, in the form of a ship's cradle, with planks, besmeared with grease ; and by the use of engines, and a prodigious number of men drew up in the space of one night, eighty galleys, seventy vessels of smaller size, out of the water these planks, and launched them all into the harbour. What must have been the surprize of the besieged morning, to behold a large fleet riding in their and yet all their booms secure !

THE city was now assailed on all sides. Mahomet caused a bridge of boats to be built across the har-

12. Ducas. Cantemir.

upon which he raised a battery of cannon. And here I cannot help remarking, that the artillery of the Greeks must have been very indifferent, or very ill served, otherwise this bridge could never have been built. The cannon employed by the Turks, are said to have been of an enormous size, some of them carrying balls of one hundred pounds weight. With these great guns they beat down the walls faster than the besieged could repair them: a body of janizaries entered the breach, with Mahomet at their head, while another broke in at a sally-port. The emperor Constantine, whose valour merited a more distinguished fate, was slain among the crowd, and his capital became a prey to the conqueror. But for the honour of Mahomet II. I must observe, that few of the garrison were put to the sword. He arrested the fury of his troops, and granted conditions to the inhabitants, who had sent deputies to implore his clemency<sup>11</sup>. They were allowed a magistrate to decide their civil differences, a patriarch, and the public exercise of their religion. This spiritual indulgence they still enjoy, under certain limitations, and also their patriarch, and the benefit of their civil magistrate.

LETTER  
L.  
A.D. 1453.

HERE I might remark, as has been remarked by rarer historians, that Constantinople (built by the first Christian emperor, whose name it bears) submitted to the Turks under a Constantine, and Rome to the Barbarians under an Augustus!—but such accidental coincidence of names and circumstances, is more worthy the notice of a monkish chronologer than an observer of human nature.

MAHOMET continued to push his conquests on all sides, and with unvaried fortune, till he received a

11. Cantemir. Ricaut.

## PART I.

A. D. 1456.

check from John Hunniades, who obliged him to raise the siege of Belgrade. The knights of Rhodes, present of Malta, opposed him in their island with success. But he subdued Albania, after the death Scanderbeg; and Trebisond, where the family Comneus had preserved an image of the Greek empire. He carried his arms on the other side, as far as Trieste; took Otranto, and fixed the Mahomedan power in the heart of Calabria<sup>14</sup>. He threatened Venice and Rome itself with subjection; hoping to make himself master of Italy, as well as of Greece; and then the triumph of barbarism would have been complete. All Europe trembled at his motions: and what it might; for Europe, unless united, must have fallen beneath his sword. But death freed Christendom from this terrible conqueror, at an age when he might have executed the greatest enterprizes, being only in his fifty-first year. His descendants, however, still possess the finest country in our quarter of the globe, Greece, where civil liberty was first known, and where arts and letters were first brought to perfection, continued to be the seat of ignorance, barbarism, and despotism.

A. D. 1461.

<sup>14</sup>. Ibid.

LETTER LI.

*the Death of PETER the CRUEL, in 1369,  
siege of GRANADA, by FERDINAND and  
, in 1492.*

the Cruel, my dear Philip, after being  
slain by the Black Prince, on account of his  
being subdued and slain, as you have already  
bastard-brother Henry, count of Trastamara  
succeeded to the throne of Castile. No-  
table happened during the reign of this  
under his descendants for almost a century.  
engaged in frequent wars with their neigh-  
bours of Portugal and Arragon. But these  
were seldom decisive; so that Spain continued  
in the same situation, from the death of Peter  
son of Henry IV. of Castile, whose debauchery  
aroused the resentment of his nobles, and pro-  
duced a singular insurrection, which led to the  
decay of the Spanish monarchy.

LETTER  
LI.  
A.D. 1369.

John, surnamed the Impotent, though con-  
founded with women, began his unhappy  
reign in 1394. He was totally enervated by his pleasures,  
and every thing in his court conspired to set  
him an example of the most abject flattery,  
and abandoned licentiousness. The queen, a  
Portuguese, lived as openly with her para-  
sitic gallants, as the king did with his mini-  
ster mistresses. Pleasure was the only object,  
and flattery the only recommendation to favour.

A.D. 1494

of the state went every day into greater  
decline, until the nobility, with the archbishop of To-  
ledo

K

ledo

## PART I.

ledo at their head, combined against the weak and gitious administration of Henry ; arrogated to themselves, as one of the privileges of their order, the of trying and passing sentence on their sovereign, w they executed in a manner unprecedented in hist

A. D. 1464.

ALL the malcontent nobility were summoned meet at Avila. A spacious theatre was erected plain, without the walls of the town ; an image presenting the king, was seated on the throne, clothed in royal robes, with a crown on its head, a sceptre in its hand, and the sword of justice by its side. The accusation against Henry was read, and the sentence of deposition pronounced, in presence of a numerous assembly. At the close of the first article of the charge the archbishop of Toledo advanced, and tore the crown from the head of the image ; at the close of the second, the Conde de Placentia snatched the sword of justice from its side ; at the close of the third article the Conde de Benevente wrested the sceptre from its hand ; and at the close of the last, Don Diego Lopez Stuniga tumbled it headlong from the throne. At the same instant, Don Alphonzo, Henry's brother, a boy about twelve years of age, was proclaimed king of Castile and Leon in his stead<sup>1</sup>.

THIS extraordinary proceeding was followed by all the horrors of civil war, which did not cease some time after the death of the young prince whom the nobles had bestowed the kingdom. The archbishop and his party then continued to carry on war in the name of Isabella, the king's sister, to whom they gave the title of Infanta ; and Henry could

1. Mariana, lib. xiii. Diego Henriques del Castillo.

to suspend all intercourse between one place and another. These evils the joint sovereigns suppressed by their wise policy, at the same time that they extended the royal prerogative.

LETTER

II

A.D. 1479.

ABOUT the middle of the thirteenth century the cities in the kingdom of Arragon, and after their example those in Castile, had formed themselves into an association, distinguished by the name of the Holy Brotherhood. They exacted a certain contribution from each of the associated towns; they levied a considerable body of troops, in order to protect travellers, and pursue criminals; and they appointed judges, who opened courts in various parts of the kingdom. Whoever was guilty of murder, robbery, or any act that violated the public peace, and was seized by the troops of the Brotherhood, was carried before their judges; who, without paying any regard to the exclusive jurisdiction which the lord of the place might claim, who was generally the author or abettor of the injustice, tried and condemned the criminals. The nobles often murmured against this salutary institution; they complained of it as an encroachment on one of their most valuable privileges, and endeavoured to get it abolished. But Ferdinand and Isabella, sensible of the beneficial effects of the Brotherhood, not only in regard to the police of their kingdoms, but in its tendency to abridge, and by degrees to annihilate, the territorial jurisdiction of the nobility, countenanced the institution upon every occasion, and supported it with the whole force of royal authority. By these means the prompt and impartial

5. Zurita. Mariana. Zuniga.

**PART I.** administration of justice was restored, and with it tranquillity and order returned\*.

**A.D. 1480.** BUT at the same time their *Catholic Majesties* (for such was the title they now bore, conferred on them by the pope) were giving vigour to civil government, and securing their subjects from violence and oppression, an intemperate zeal led them to establish an ecclesiastical tribunal, equally contrary to the natural rights of mankind, and the mild spirit of the Gospel. I mean the court of Inquisition; which decides upon the honour, fortune, and even life of the unhappy wretch, who happens to fall under the suspicion of heresy, or a contempt of any thing prescribed by the church, without his knowing his accusers, being confronted with them, or permitted either defence or appeal. Six thousand persons were burnt by order of this sanguinary tribunal, within four years after the appointment of Torquemada, the first inquisitor-general, and upwards of one hundred thousand felt its fury. The same zeal, however, which led to the depopulation, and the barbarizing of Castile and Arragon, led also to their aggrandisement.

THE kingdom of Granada now alone remained of all the Mahometan possessions in Spain. Princes equally zealous and ambitious, like Ferdinand and Isabella, were naturally disposed to turn their eye on that fertile territory; and to think of increasing their hereditary dominions, by expelling the enemy of Christianity, and extending its doctrines. Every thing conspired to favour their project. The Moorish kingdom was a prey to civil wars, when Ferdi

d, having obtained a bull from Sixtus IV. authorising a crusade, put himself at the head of his troops, entered Granada. He continued the war with id success. Isabella attended him in several expeditions: and they were both in great danger at the siege of Malaga, an important city, which was defended with great courage, and taken in 1487. Baza was reduced in 1489, after the loss of twenty thousand men. Guadix and Almeria were delivered up to them by the Moorish king Alzagal, who had at first thrown his brother Alboacen, and afterwards been expelled from his capital, by his nephew Abdali. That prince, so blind or so base, as to confound the ruin of his country with the humiliation of his rival, engaged in the service of Ferdinand and Isabella; who, after reducing every other place of eminence, undertook the siege of Granada. Abdali made a gallant defence; but all communication with the country being cut off, and all hopes of relief at an end, he capitulated, after a siege of eight months, on condition that he should enjoy the revenue of certain places in the fertile mountains of Alpujarros; that the inhabitants should retain the undisturbed possession of their houses, goods, and inheritances; the use of their laws, and the free exercise of their religion.

LETTER  
I.I.

A. D. 1483.

A. D. 1492.

Thus ended the empire of the Arabs in Spain, after it had continued about eight hundred years. They introduced the arts and sciences into Europe, at a time when it was lost in darkness; they possessed many of the luxuries of life, when they were not even known among the neighbouring nations; and

7. Fran. Bermud. de Pedraza, *Antiq. Excel. de Granad.* Mariana. *Herm.* del Puiggar.



## PART I.

A.D. 1492.

they seem to have given birth to that romantic gallantry, which so eminently prevailed in the ages of chivalry, and which, blending itself with the veneration of the northern nations for the softer sex, still particularly distinguishes modern from ancient manners. But the Moors, notwithstanding these advantages, and the eulogies bestowed upon them by Voltaire and other writers, appear to have been always destitute of the essential qualities of a polished people; humanity, generosity, and mutual sympathy.

THE conquest of Granada was followed by the expulsion, or rather the pillage or banishment of the Jews, who had engrossed all the wealth and commerce of Spain. The inquisition exhausted its rage against these unhappy people, many of whom pretended to embrace Christianity, in order to preserve their property. About the same time their Catholic Majesties concluded an alliance with the emperor Maximilian, and a treaty of marriage for their daughter Joan with his son Philip, archduke of Austria, and sovereign of the Netherlands. About this time also the contract was concluded with Christopher Columbus for the discovery of *new* countries; and the counties of Roussillon and Cerdagne were agreed to be restored by Charles VIII. of France, before his expedition into Italy. But the consequences of these measures, and the interest which Ferdinand took in the Italian wars, must form the subject of future Letters.

I SHOULD now, my dear Philip, return to the great line of European history; but for the sake of perspicuity, I shall first make you acquainted with the affairs of England under Henry VII. as his son Henry VIII.

VIII. had a considerable share in the continental transactions, and derived his importance chiefly from the prudent policy of his father. LETTER  
LI.

L E T T E R    LII.

ENGLAND, *during the Reign of HENRY VII.*

**H**ENRY VII. the first prince of the house of Tudor, ascended the throne of England, as you have already seen, in consequence of the victory at Bosworth, and the death of Richard III. His title was confirmed by the parliament: his merit was known; and his marriage with the princess Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV. united the jarring claims of the houses of York and Lancaster, and seemed to give universal satisfaction to the nation. He had therefore every reason to promise himself peace and security. LETTER  
LII.  
A. D. 1485.

BUT Henry, although in many respects a prudent and politic prince, had unhappily imbibed a violent antipathy against the adherents of the house of York, which no time or experience was ever able to efface. Instead of embracing the present favourable opportunity of abolishing party distinctions, by bestowing his smile indiscriminately on the friends of both families, he carried to the throne all the partialities that belong to the head of a faction. To exalt the Lancastrian party, and depress the retainers of the house of York, were still the favourite ideas of his mind. The house of York was generally beloved by the nation; and for that very reason it became every day

## PART I.

A.D. 1485.

day more the object of Henry's hatred and aversion : hence his amiable consort was treated with contempt, his government grew unpopular, and his reign was filled with plots and insurrections.

A.D. 1486.

THE first insurrection was headed by the viscount Lovel, Sir Humphry Stafford, and Thomas, his brother, who had all fought in the cause of Richard, and against whom, among many others, the parliament, at Henry's instigation, had passed an act of attainder, though it is not conceivable, how men could be guilty of treason for supporting the king in possession against the earl of Richinond, to whom they had never sworn allegiance, and who had not even assumed the title of king. Enraged at such an instance of severity, they left their sanctuary at Colchester, and flew to arms. The king sent the duke of Bedford against them with a chosen body of troops, and a promise of pardon to such as would return to their duty. Lovel, afraid of the fidelity of his followers, privately withdrew, and fled to Flanders. His army submitted to the king's clemency. The other rebels, who had undertaken the siege of Worcester, immediately dispersed themselves. The two Staffords took sanctuary in the church of Colnham, a village near Abingdon; but as it was found that church had not the privilege of protecting rebels, they were taken thence. The elder was executed at Tyburn, the younger obtained a pardon.

THIS rebellion was immediately followed by another, of a more dangerous nature, as it laid deeper hold of the public discontents. Henry's jealousy confined in the Tower Edward Plantagenet, earl of War-

rick, son of the duke of Clarence. This unhappy prince had been formerly detained, in a like confinement, at Sheriff-Hutton in Yorkshire, by the jealousy of his uncle Richard. A comparison was drawn between Henry and that tyrant; and as the Tower was the place where Edward's children had been murdered, a fate not more gentle was feared for Warwick. While the compassion of the nation was thus turned towards youth and innocence, exposed to oppression, a report was spread, that Warwick had made his escape. A general joy communicated itself from face to face, and many seemed desirous to join him. Such a favourable opportunity was not neglected by the enemies of Henry's government.

LETTER  
LII.  
A. D. 1486.

ONE Richard Simon, a priest of Oxford, and a zealous partizan of the house of York, attempted to gratify the popular wish by holding up an impostor to the nation. For this purpose he cast his eyes upon Lambert Simnel, a baker's son, who being endowed with understanding beyond his years, and address above his condition, seemed well calculated to personate a prince of royal extraction. Simnel was taught to assume the name and character of the earl of Warwick; and he soon appeared so perfect in many private particulars relative to that unfortunate prince, to the court of king Edward, and the royal family, that the queen-dowager was supposed to have given him a lesson. But how apt soever father Simon might find his pupil, or whatever means he might take to procure him instruction, he was sensible that the imposture would not bear a close inspection; he therefore determined to make trial of it first in Ireland.

THAT

## PART I.

A. D. 1486.

THAT island was zealously attached to the house of York, and bore an affectionate regard to the memory of Clarence, Warwick's father, who had resided there as lord lieutenant: and Henry had been so impolitic as to allow it to remain in the same condition in which he found it. All the officers appointed by his predecessor still retained their authority; so that Simnel no sooner presented himself to Thomas earl of Kildare, the deputy, and claimed his protection as the unfortunate Warwick, than that credulous nobleman believed his tale, and embraced his cause. Other noblemen, to whom he communicated the fiction, were no less sanguine in their zeal and belief: the story diffused itself among the people of inferior condition, naturally more violent and credulous, who listened to it with still greater ardour; and the inhabitants of Dublin, with one consent, tendered their allegiance to Simnel, as the true Plantagenet. They lodged the pretended prince in the castle of Dublin, crowned him with a diadem taken from a statue of the blessed Virgin, and publicly proclaimed him king, under the appellation of Edward VI. The whole island followed the example of the capital: not a sword was drawn in favour of Henry<sup>2</sup>.

THE king was a good deal alarmed, when he received intelligence of this revolt. Though determined always to face his enemies, he scrupled at present to leave England, where he suspected the conspiracy had been framed, and where he knew many persons of condition, and the people in general, were disposed to give it countenance. He therefore held frequent consultations with his ministers

2. Ibid.

and

and counsellors relative to the measures most proper for the safety of his kingdom, and the means of discovering the origin of the imposture. In consequence of these deliberations, the queen-dowager was taken into custody, and confined in the nunnery of Bermondesey for life. Unwilling, however, to accuse so near a relation of a conspiracy against him, the king alledged, that she was thus punished for yielding up the princess Elizabeth, now queen, to the tyrant Richard, after she had been secretly promised to him. Henry's next step was no less deliberate. He ordered Warwick to be taken from the Tower, led in procession through the streets of London, conducted to St. Paul's, and there exposed to the view of the whole people<sup>3</sup>. This expedient had its full effect in England, but in Ireland the people still persisted in their revolt: and Henry had soon reason to apprehend, that the attempt to disturb his government was not laid on such slight foundations, as the means employed seemed to indicate.

LETTER  
LII.  
A.D. 1486.

JOHN earl of Lincoln, son of John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, and of Elizabeth, eldest sister of Edward IV. was engaged to take part in the conspiracy. This nobleman, alarmed at the king's jealousy of all eminent persons of the York party, and more especially at his rigour towards Warwick, had retired into Flanders, where lord Lovel was arrived a little before him. He resided some time in the court of his aunt, the duchess of Burgundy, by whom he had been invited over. Margaret's bosom flamed with indignation against the oppressor of her family: and she determined to make him repent of his unreasonable enmity. After consulting with Lincoln and Lovel, she therefore hired a body of two thousand

3. Bacon's *Hist. of Henry VII.*

## PART I.

A.D. 1487.

veteran Germans, under the command of Mart Swart, a brave and experienced officer, and sent the over along with these noblemen to join Simnel Ireland.

June 6.

THE courage of the Irish was much raised by this accession of military force, and the countenance of persons of such high rank; so that they formed the bold resolution of invading England, which they believed the spirit of disaffection to be no less prevalent than in Ireland. They accordingly landed at Fouldrey in Lancashire, and were joined by Sir Thomas Broughton, a man of great interest in the county; but the people in general, averse against association with Irish and German invaders, convinced of Simnel's imposture, and kept in awe by the king's reputation in arms, either remained in tranquillity or gave assistance to the royal army, which was advancing towards the enemy. The earl of Lincoln, therefore, who commanded the rebels, finding hopes but in victory, determined to bring the matter to a speedy decision; and Henry, emboldened by his native courage no less than by the superiority of his numbers, intrepidly advanced to the combat. The two armies met at Stoke, in the county of Nottingham, where a bloody and obstinate battle was fought. All the leaders of the rebels were resolved to conquer or die, and they inspired their troops with the like resolution. They were at last, however, obliged to give way; and if Henry's victory was purchased with losses, it was entirely decisive. Lincoln, Broughton and Swart, perished in the field of battle, together with four thousand of their followers. Lovel was supposed to have undergone the same fate, as he was

DEI

never more heard of. Simnel and his tutor Simon were taken prisoners. Simon was committed to close custody for life : and his sacred character only could have saved him from a severer fate. Simnel was too contemptible either to excite apprehension or resentment in Henry : he was therefore pardoned, and employed as a scullion in the king's kitchen ; from which condition he was afterwards advanced to the rank of one of his majesty's falconers <sup>4</sup>.

LETTER  
LII  
A.D. 1487.

HENRY having thus restored tranquillity to his kingdom, and security to his government, had leisure not only to regulate his domestic affairs, but also to look abroad. From Scotland, the most contiguous state, he had nothing to fear. There reigned James III. a prince of little industry and narrow genius. With him Henry concluded a treaty, when he might have demanded his crown : so truly pacific was the disposition of this monarch ! — Of the states on the continent I have already spoken. They were fast hastening to that situation, in which they have remained, without any material alteration, for near three centuries. The balance of power began to be understood. Spain was become formidable by the union of the crowns of Arragon and Castile, in the persons of Ferdinand and Isabella ; but these princes were employed in wresting Granada from the Moors. France, during the last fifty years, had made a mighty increase in power and dominion : and she was now attempting to swallow up Brittany, the last independent chief of the monarchy. England alone was both enabled by her power, and engaged by her interests, to support

<sup>4</sup> Polyd. Virg. Bacon, ubi sup.



**PART I****A.D. 1491.**

the independency of that duchy ; the most dangerous opposition was therefore expected from this quarter. But Henry's parsimonious temper and narrow politics, as I have had occasion to mention in the history of France, prevented him from yielding the Bretons any effectual support ; and Maximilian, king of the Romans, to whom they afterwards applied, being unable to protect them, they were obliged to submit to the arms of Charles VIII. who prudently married the heiress of that duchy, in order to conciliate their affections.

**A.D. 1492.** HENRY, who saw the importance of Brittany to France, and who valued himself on his extensive foresight and sound judgment, was now ashamed of having allowed his most useful ally to be crushed by a superior power. All remedy for his miscarriage was become impracticable, but he talked loudly of vengeance. The conquest of France, in his language, was an easy matter : and he set out on that enterprize at the head of a splendid army, after obtaining large supplies from his parliament. The nobility, who had credulously swallowed all the boasts of the king, were universally seized with a thirst of military glory : they dreamed of nothing less than carrying their triumphant banners to the gates of Paris, and putting the crown of France on the head of their sovereign. Henry, in the mean time, had nothing less at heart than war ; the gratification of his ruling passion was the only purpose of this mighty armament ; avarice being in him a more powerful motive than either revenge or glory. Secret advances had been made toward peace before his invasion, and commissioners had been appointed to treat of the terms. The demands

mands of Henry were wholly pecuniary ; and the king of France, who deemed the peaceable possession of Brittany an equivalent for any sum, and who was all on fire for his projected expedition into Italy, readily agreed to the proposals made him. He engaged, by the treaty of Estaples, concluded about a month after the English landed in France, to pay Henry seven hundred and forty-five thousand crowns : partly as a reimbursement of the sums advanced to the dukes of Brittany, partly as arrears of the pension due to Edward IV. and not hitherto discharged :—and he stipulated a yearly pension to Henry and his heirs of twenty-five thousand crowns <sup>5</sup>.

LETTER  
III.

A. D. 1492.

Nov. 3.


Thus, as lord Bacon observes, the English monarch made profit upon his subjects for the war, and upon his enemies for the peace. But although the treaty of Estaples filled the coffers of Henry, it did very little honour to England ; as it put a shameful seal to the subjection of Brittany, which, properly supported, would have been a continual thorn in the side of France, and have effectually prevented that monarchy from ever becoming formidable to the liberties of Europe. The people however agreed, that the king had fulfilled the promise which he made to the parliament when he said, that he would make the war maintain itself, and all ranks of men seemed now perfectly satisfied with his government. He had every reason to flatter himself with durable peace and tranquillity. His authority was fully established at home, and his reputation for policy was great abroad : the hopes of all pretenders to his throne were cut off, as well by his marriage, as the issue which it had brought him ; yet at this height of his prosperity, his

5. Ibid.

VGL. II.

L

inde-

**PART I.**  indefatigable enemies raised against him an adversary, who long gave him inquietude, and sometimes even brought him into danger.

**A. D. 1492.**

THE old duchess of Burgundy, sister of Edward IV. still burning with resentment on account of the depression of her family and its partizans, determined to play off another impostor upon Henry. With that view she caused a report to be propagated, that her nephew, Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, had made his escape from the Tower, when his elder brother was murdered, and that he was still alive. Finding this rumour greedily received, her next care was to provide a young man proper to personate the unfortunate prince: and for that purpose she fixed upon Perkin Warbec, the son of a renegado Jew of Tournay.

THIS youth was born in England, and by some believed to be the son of Edward IV. on account of a certain resemblance observable between him and that amorous monarch. A few years after the birth of Perkin, his reputed father returned to Tournay; where his son did not long remain, but, by different accidents, was carried from place to place; so that his parentage and past life became thereby unknown, and difficult to be traced by the most diligent enquiry. The variety of his adventures had happily favoured the natural versatility and sagacity of his genius; and he seemed to be a youth perfectly fitted to act any part, or assume any character. In this light he had been represented to the duchess of Burgundy, who immediately desired to see him, and found him to exceed her most sanguine expectations; so comely did he appear in his person! so graceful in his air! so courtly

ly in his address ! so full of dignity in his whole demeanour, and good sense in his conversation !

LETTER  
LII.

A.D. 1492.

A YOUNG man of such quick apprehension soon learned the lessons necessary to be taught him, in order to his personating the duke of York ; but as some time was required, before every thing requisite could be prepared for this enterprize, Margaret sent him into Portugal, where he remained a year, unknown to all the world. When that term was expired he landed in Ireland, which still retained its attachment to the house of York ; and immediately assuming to himself the name of Richard Plantagenet, there drew to him many partizans among that ignorant and credulous people. The news of this phenomenon reached France ; and Charles VIII. prompted by the secret solicitations of the duchess of Burgundy, sent Perkin an invitation to visit him at Paris. The impostor repaired to the court of France, where he was received with all the marks of respect due to the duke of York. The whole kingdom was full of the accomplishments, as well as the singular adventures and misfortunes of the young Plantagenet. From France, the tide of admiration and credulity diffused itself into England ; and Sir George Nevil, Sir John Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen more, went over to Paris, in order to offer their services to the supposed duke of York, and to share his fortunes.

PERKIN however was dismissed France, in consequence of the peace of Estaples. He now retired to the duchess of Burgundy, craving her protection, and offering to exhibit before her all the proofs of that birth to which he laid claim. Margaret affected ignorance of his pretensions ; she even put on the appear-

## PART I.

A.D. 1493.

ance of distrust, and desired to be instructed, before all the world, in his reasons for assuming the name which he bore. She put many particular questions to him, seemed astonished at his answers, and at last burst into joy and admiration of his wonderful deliverance, embracing him as her nephew; the true image of Edward, the sole heir of the Plantagenets, and the legitimate successor to the English throne. She assigned him an equipage suitable to his pretended birth, appointed him a guard, engaged every one to pay court to him, and on all occasions honoured him with the appellation of *The White Rose of England*.

THE Flemings, swayed by Margaret's authority, readily adopted the fiction of Perkin's royal descent; and as no surmise of his real birth had yet been given, the English from their frequent communication with the Low Countries, were every day more and more prepossessed in favour of the impostor. Not only the populace, ever fond of novelty and desirous of change, but men of the highest birth and quality, disgusted at the severity of Henry's government, began to turn their eyes towards this new claimant. Their passions and prejudices inclined them to give credit to Perkin's pretensions; and as little opposition had been made to the prevailing opinion, a regular conspiracy was formed against the king's authority, and a correspondence settled between the malcontents in Flanders and those in England <sup>6</sup>.

HENRY was informed of all these particulars, and proceeded resolutely, though deliberately, in counter-working the designs of his enemies. His first ob-

6. Polyd. Virg. Bacon, *Hist. Hen. VII.*

jest was, to ascertain the death of the real duke of York, which he was able to do with a tolerable degree of certainty, two of the persons concerned in the murder being yet alive, and agreeing in the same story. But he found more difficulty, though in the end he was no less successful, in discovering who the extraordinary person was, that so boldly advanced pretensions to his crown. For this purpose he dispersed his spies over all Flanders and England: he engaged many to pretend that they had embraced Perkin's party; he bribed the young man's servants, his confidants, and even his confessor. By these means, he was at last made acquainted with the whole plan of the conspiracy, and with the pedigree, adventures, life, and conversation of the pretended duke of York.

LETTER  
LII.

A.D. 1483.

THE impostor's story was immediately published for the satisfaction of the nation; and as soon as Henry's projects were matured, he made the conspirators feel the weight of his resentment. Almost in the same instant he arrested lord Fitzwalter, Sir Simon Mountfort, and Sir Thomas Thwaites, who were convicted of high treason for promising to aid Perkin, and presently executed. Sir William Stanley, the lord high-chamberlain, was also arrested; but greater and more solemn preparations were thought necessary for the trial of a man, whose authority in the nation, and whose domestic intimacy with the king, as well as his former services, seemed to secure him against any accusation or punishment. Henry however was determined to take vengeance on all his enemies. He therefore won over Sir Robert Clifford, Perkin's particular confidant, who returning to England, on a promise of pardon, accused Stanley as his chief abettor; and after six weeks delay, which was interposed

A. D. 1494

**PART I.** in order to shew the king's lenity and coolness, the chamberlain was brought to his trial, condemned, and beheaded 7.

**A. D. 1495.** THE fate of Stanley made great impression on the minds of the people, and struck Perkin's adherents with the deepest dismay; as they found from Clifford's desertion, that all their secrets were betrayed. The jealous and severe temper of the king kept men in awe, and quelled not only the movements of sedition, but the very murmurs of faction. A general distrust took place: all mutual confidence was destroyed, even among particular friends. Henry, in the meantime, elated with success, and little anxious of dispelling those terrors, or of gaining the affections of the nation, gave every day more and more rein to his rapacious temper, and employed the arts of perverted law and justice, in order to extort fines and compositions from his subjects. His government was in itself highly oppressive; but it was so much the less burthen some, as he took care, like Lewis XI. to restrain the tyranny of the nobles, and permitted nobody to be guilty of injustice or oppression but himself.

PERKIN now finding his correspondence with the nobility cut off by Henry's vigilance and severity, and the king's authority daily gaining ground among the people, resolved to attempt something which might revive the drooping hopes of his party. With this view he gathered together a band of outlaws, pirates, robbers, and necessitous persons of all nations, with whom he put to sea, and appeared off the coast of Kent; but finding the inhabitants determined to

oppose him, | retu | to Flanders, and afterward  
made a descent upon Ireland. The affairs of Ireland,  
however, were now in so good a posture, that he there  
met with little success; and being tired of the savage  
life he was obliged to lead, while skulking among the  
wild natives, he bent his course towards Scotland,  
and presented himself to James IV. who then reigned  
in that kingdom. Perkin had been previously re-  
commended to this prince by the king of France;  
and the insinuating address, and plausible behaviour  
of the youth himself, seem further to have gained  
him credit with James, whom years had not yet taught  
distrust or caution, and who carried his confidence so  
far, as to give him in marriage the lady Catherine  
Gordon, daughter of the earl of Huntley, a young  
lady eminent both for beauty and virtue.

LETTER  
LII.  
A. D. 1495.

THE jealousy which then subsisted between the  
courts of England and Scotland was a new recom-  
mendation to Perkin; so that James, who had resolved  
to make an inroad into England, attended by some of  
his borderers, carried the impostor along with him, A. D. 1496.  
in hopes that the appearance of the pretended prince  
might raise an insurrection in the northern counties.  
But in this expectation he found himself deceived.  
Perkin's pretensions were now become stale even in  
the eyes of the populace; no Englishman of any con-  
dition joined him. James, after repeated incursions,  
attended with various success, therefore, found it ne-  
cessary to conclude a truce with Henry, Perkin being A. D. 1497.  
privately ordered to depart the kingdom.

IRELAND once more afforded a retreat to the im-  
postor. There he hid himself for some time in the

3. Bacon. *Hist. Hen. VII.* Polyd. Virg.



**PART I.**  
            
**A.D. 1497.**

wilds and fastnesses: but impatient of a condition which was both disagreeable and dangerous, he held consultation with his followers, Horne, Skelton, and Astley, three broken tradesmen, and by their advice resolved to try the affections of the Cornish malecontents, who had lately risen in rebellion on account of an oppressive tax, and whose mutinous disposition subsisted, notwithstanding the lenity, that had been shewn them. No sooner therefore did the pretence prince appear at Bodmin in Cornwall, than the populace, to the number of three thousand, flocked to standard; and Perkin, elated with this appearance of success, took on him, for the first time, the appellation of Richard IV. king of England. That the expectations of his followers might not be suffered to languish, he presented himself before Exeter; and many fair, though fruitless promises, invited that city to join him. The inhabitants shut their gates against him, and he laid siege to the place.

HENRY was happy to hear, that the impostor had landed in England, and prepared himself with alacrity to attack him; for, as he usually said, he desired only to see his enemies. Perkin, informed of the king's preparations, immediately raised the siege of Exeter; and although his followers now amounted to the number of seven thousand, and seemed still resolute to maintain his cause, he himself despaired of success, and secretly withdrew to the sanctuary of Beaulieu in the New Forest. The Cornish rebels submitted to the king's mercy, and found it was not yet exhausted in their behalf; a few of their chiefs excepted, they were dismissed with impunity. Henry was more at a loss how to proceed with regard to Perkin himself. Some counselled him to make the privileges of the church

church yield to reasons of state; to drag the impostor from the sanctuary, and inflict on him the punishment due to his temerity. But Henry did not think the evil so dangerous, as to require such a violent remedy. He therefore employed some sagacious persons to persuade Perkin to deliver himself into the king's hands under promise of pardon. He did so; and Henry conducted him, in a kind of mock triumph to London.

LETTER  
LII.

A.D. 1498.

BUT although the impostor's life was granted him, he was still detained in custody; and having broke from his keepers, he was afterwards confined in the Tower, where his habits of restless intrigue and enterprise followed him. He found means to open a correspondence with the earl of Warwick, who was confined in the same prison; and he engaged that unfortunate prince to embrace a project for his escape, which Perkin offered to conduct by murdering the lieutenant of the Tower. The conspiracy did not escape the king's vigilance; and Perkin by this new attempt, after so many enormities, having rendered himself totally unworthy of mercy, was arraigned, condemned, and hanged at Tyburn. Warwick also was brought to trial, found guilty, and executed.

A.D. 1499.

THIS violent act of tyranny, by which Henry destroyed the last remaining male of the line of Plantagenet, begat great discontent among the people. They saw, with concern, an unhappy prince, who had long been denied the privileges of his birth, and even cut off from the common benefits of nature, now deprived of life itself, merely for attempting to shake off that

**PART I.** oppression under which he laboured. But these domestic discontents did not weaken the king's government; and foreign princes, deeming his throne now perfectly secure, paid him rather more deference and attention.

**A.D. 1497.** THE prince whose alliance Henry valued most was Ferdinand of Spain, whose vigorous and steady policy, always attended with success, had rendered him in many respects the most considerable monarch in Europe. And the king of England had at last the satisfaction of completing a marriage, which had been projected and negociated during the course of seven years, between Arthur prince of Wales and the infant Catherine, fourth daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella: he near sixteen years of age, she eighteen. But this marriage proved unprosperous. Prince Arthur died a few months after the celebration of the nuptials; and the king, desirous to continue his alliance with Spain, and also unwilling to restore Catherine's dowry, obliged his second son Henry, now prince of Wales, to be betrothed to the infant. Prince Henry made all the opposition of which a youth only twelve years old could be supposed capable: but as the king persisted in his resolution, the marriage was at last concluded between the parties. It was productive of the most important consequences!

ANOTHER marriage was also celebrated the same year, which, in the next age, gave birth to great events: the union of Margaret, Henry's eldest daughter, with James IV. of Scotland. When this alliance was deliberated on in the English council, some objected that England might, in consequence of such marriage,

fall

all under the dominion of Scotland. "No!" replied Henry; "though Scotland should give an heir to the English crown, that kingdom will only become an accession to England"—and the event as proved the justice of the observation.

LETTER  
LII.  
A. D. 1502.

THE situation of Henry's affairs, both at home and broad, was now in every respect fortunate. All the efforts of the European princes, as we shall afterwards have occasion to see, were turned to the side of Italy; and the various events which there arose made Henry's alliance be eagerly courted by each party, yet interested himself so little as never to touch him with concern or anxiety. Uncontrouled therefore by apprehension or opposition, he gave full scope to his natural propensity; and avarice, which had ever been his ruling passion, being increased by age, and encouraged by absolute authority, broke through all restraints of shame or justice. He had found two ministers, Empson and Dudley, perfectly qualified to second his rapacious and tyrannical inclinations, and to prey upon his defenceless people. These instruments of oppression were both lawyers; the first of mean birth, of brutal manners, and of an unrelenting temper; the second better born, better educated, and better bred, but equally unjust, severe, and inflexible. By their knowledge of law, they were qualified to pervert the forms of justice to the oppression of the innocent: and Henry supported them in all their iniquities. The sole purpose of the king and his ministers was to amass money, and bring every one under the yoke of their authority.

## PART I.

PART I. BUT while Henry was enriching himself with the spoils of his oppressed people, he did not neglect the political interests of the nation. Philip, archduke of Austria, and his wife Joan, heirs of Castile, being thrown upon the English coast on their passage to Spain

A.D. 1506. Henry entertained them with a magnificence suitable to his dignity, and at an expence by no means agreeable to his temper. But notwithstanding so much seeming cordiality, interest in this, as in all other things, was the only rule of his conduct. He resolved to draw some advantage from the involuntary visit paid him by his royal guests; and while he seemed only intent on displaying his hospitality, and in furnishing the means of amusement, he concluded a treaty of commerce highly beneficial to England.

HENRY's views did not terminate here: from the interests of the nation he turned them to his own. Edmund de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, nephew to Edward IV. and brother to the earl of Lincoln, slain at the battle of Stoke, had retired to Flanders in disgust. The king did not neglect the present opportunity of complaining to the archduke of the reception which Suffolk had met with in his dominions. "I really thought," replied Philip, "that your greatness and felicity had set you far above apprehensions from any person of so little consequence: but to give you satisfaction, I shall banish him from my state." "I expect that you will carry your complaisance farther," said Henry: "I desire to have Suffolk put into my hands, where alone I can depend on his submission and obedience."—"That measure," observed Philip, "will reflect dishonour

"upon you, as well as myself. You will be thought  
 "to have used me as a prisoner."—"Then," replied  
 Henry, "the matter is settled: I will take upon me  
 "that dishonour; and so your honour is safe." Philip  
 found himself under the necessity of complying; but  
 he first exacted a promise from Henry, that he would  
 spare Suffolk's life <sup>11</sup>.

LETTER  
 LII.  
 A. D. 1506.

HENRY survived these transactions about two years,  
 but nothing memorable occurs in the remaining  
 part of his reign. His declining health made him  
 turn his thoughts towards that future state of exist-  
 ence, which the severities of his government had ren-  
 dered a very dismal prospect to him. In order to al-  
 lay the terrors under which he laboured, he endea-  
 voured to procure a reconciliation with Heaven by  
 distributing alms, and founding religious houses. Re-  
 morse even seized him at times for the abuse of his  
 authority by Empson and Dudley, though not to such  
 a degree as to make him stop the rapacious hand of  
 those oppressors, until death, by its nearer approaches,  
 appalled him with new terrors; and then he ordered,  
 by a general clause in his will, that restitution should  
 be made to all those whom he had injured <sup>12</sup>. He  
 died of a consumption, at his favourite palace of Rich-  
 mond, in the fifty-second year of his age, and the  
 twenty-third of his reign; which was, on the whole,  
 fortunate for his people at home, and honourable  
 abroad.

A. D. 1509.

HENRY VII. was a prince of great talents, both  
 civil and military. He put an end to the civil wars  
 with which the English nation had long been har-

11. Bacon, ubi sup.

12. Ibid. Holingshed. Polyd. Virg.  
 raised;

## PART I.

raised: he maintained the most perfect order in the state: he repressed the exorbitant power of the barons: and he indirectly increased the consequence of the commons, by enabling the nobility to break their ancient entails; as the prodigal were thereby encouraged to dissipate their fortunes and dismember their estates, which became the property of men who had acquired money by trade or industry. And while he possessed the friendship of some foreign princes, he commanded the respect of all. Hence his son Henry VIII. as we shall afterward have occasion to see, became the arbiter of Europe. In the mean time we must take a view of transactions in which England had no share, and which introduced the most important æra in the history of Modern Europe.

## LETTER LIII.

*A general View of the Continent of EUROPE, from the Invasion of ITALY by CHARLES VIII. in 1494, till the League of CAMBRAY, in 1508.*

LETTER  
LIII.

I Have hitherto, my dear Philip, generally given you a separate history of all the principal European states; because each state depended chiefly on itself, and was in a great measure distinct from every other in its political interests. But that method will, in future, often be impracticable, by reason of the new system of policy which was adopted about the beginning of the sixteenth century, and in consequence of which a union of interests became necessary in order to form a balance of power. This system took its  
rise

from the political state of Europe at that time, and was perfected by the Italian wars, which commenced with the expedition of Charles VIII. in support of his claim to the kingdom of Naples.

LETTER  
LXXI.  
A.D. 1494.

THIS prince having married the heiress of Brionne, as I have already had occasion to observe, and purchased peace from the only powers able to molest him, the emperor of Germany, and the kings of France and Spain, set out on his favourite project, the conquest of Naples. To that kingdom he had pretensions as heirs to the house of Anjou.

THE army with which Charles undertook this great enterprise did not exceed twenty thousand men; yet with these he was able to over-run all Italy. The Italians, who had utterly lost the use of arms, and who had continual wars, had become every day more unwarlike, were astonished to meet an enemy, that made the field of battle not a pompous tournament but a scene of blood: they were terrified at the aspect of war, and shrunk on its approach. The impetuosity of the French valour appeared to them irresistible.

Pope Alexander VI. of infamous memory, the Venetians, and Ludovico Sforza, surnamed the Moor, duke of Milan, who had invited Charles into Italy, alarmed at his progress, which was equally unwished for and unexpected, endeavoured to throw obstacles in his way almost as soon as he had crossed the Alps.

All opposition however was in vain. Charles entered in triumph the city of Florence, where the family of Medicis still held the chief authority. He drove Sienna and Pisa from the Tuscan yoke: he imposed such terms to the Florentines as his circumstances rendered necessary, and their situation obliged them



## PART I.

A.D. 1494.

them to comply with : he marched to Rome, & Alexander VI. had ineffectually intrigued against and he took possession of that city as a conqueror. The pope had taken refuge in the castle of St. Angelo : but no sooner did he see the French cannon pointed against its feeble ramparts, than he offered to submit; and it cost him only a cardinal's hat to purchase his peace with the king. The president Brissac, who from a lawyer was become an archbishop, persuaded Charles to this accommodation. In reward for his services he obtained the purple. The king's confessor was likewise in the secret; and Charles, in whose interest it was to have deposed the pope, forgave and afterwards repented of his lenity.

No pontiff surely ever more deserved the indignity of a Christian prince. He and the Venetians had applied to the Turkish emperor, Bajazet II. and successor of Mahomet II. to assist them in driving the French monarch out of Italy. It is also asserted that the pope had sent one Bozzo in quality of ambassador to the court of Constantinople, and that the alliance between his Holiness and the Sultan was purchased by one of those inhuman crimes, which are not committed without horror, even within the walls of Constantinople.

ALEXANDER VI. by an extraordinary chain of events, had at that time in his possession the person of Zizim, brother to Bajazet II. The manner in which this unfortunate prince fell into the hands of the pope was as follows :

2. Georgii Flori, *de Bel. Ital.* Phil. de Com liv. vii. chap.

ZIZIM, who was adored by the Turks, had dis-  
 troyed the empire with Bajazet, and was defeated.  
 Fortune prevailed over the prayers of the people; and  
 his unhappy son of Mahomet II. the terror of the  
 Christian name, had recourse in his distress to the  
 knights of Rhodes, now the knights of Malta. They  
 at first received him, as a prince to whom they were  
 bound to afford protection by the laws of hospitality,  
 and who might one day be of use to them in their wars  
 against the Infidels; but they soon afterward treated  
 him as a prisoner, and Bajazet agreed to pay them  
 forty thousand sequins annually, on condition that  
 they should not suffer Zizim to return into Turkey.  
 The knights conveyed him to one of their commande-  
 ries at Poitou, in France; and Charles VIII. re-  
 ceived; at the same time, an ambassador from Bajazet  
 II. and a nuncio from pope Innocent VIII. Alexander's  
 predecessor, relative to this valuable captive. The  
 sultan claimed him as his subject, and the pope wanted  
 to have possession of his person, as a pledge for the  
 safety of Italy against the attempts of the Turks.  
 Charles sent him to the pope. The pontiff received  
 him with all the splendour and magnificence which the  
 sovereign of Rome could shew to the brother of the  
 sovereign of Constantinople; and Paul Jovius says,  
 that Alexander VI. sold Zizim's life in a treaty  
 which he negotiated with Bajazet. But be that as it  
 may, the king of France, full of his vast projects, and  
 certain of the conquest of Naples, now wanted to be-  
 come formidable to the sultan, by having the person of  
 his unfortunate prince in his power. The pope de-  
 livered him to Charles, but poisoned, as is supposed.  
 It is at least certain that he died soon after; and the  
 character of Alexander VI. makes it probable, that

LETTER  
 LIII.

A. D. 1494.

A. D. 1495.

**PART I.**  
**A.D. 1435.**

three hundred thousand ducats, said to have offered by Bajazet, were esteemed an equivalent for such a crime<sup>2</sup>.

MATTERS being thus settled between the king and the pope, who took an oath not to disturb Charles in his conquests, Alexander was set at liberty, and appeared again as pontiff on the Vatican. At There, in a public consistory, the French monarch came to pay him what is called the homage of obedience, assisted by John Gannai, first president of the parliament of Paris, who might certainly have been better employed elsewhere than at such a ceremony. Charles now kissed the feet of the person whom days before, he would have condemned as a criminal; and to complete the ludicrous scene, he served him with the eucharist at high mass<sup>3</sup>.

CHARLEMAGNE, as we have seen, caused himself to be declared emperor of the West at Rome : (VIII. was, in the same city, declared emperor of the East ; but after a very different manner. Constantine, nephew to the prince of that name, who had lost Constantinople and his life, made an emigration, in favour of Charles and his successors, of the eastern empire which could not be recovered<sup>4</sup>.

AFTER this ceremony, Charles continued his progress towards Naples ; where Alphonso II. struck terror at the approach of the French army, gave the world an example of a new kind of cowardice and pusillanimity. He fled privately to Sicily, and

2. Phil. de Commin. Paul. Jov. Arnoldi Feroxi. 3  
 Guicciardini. 4. Phil. de Commin.

refuge in a cloister; while Ferdinand his son, now become king by his abdication, finding himself unable to retrieve the public affairs, rendered desperate by his father's flight, released his subjects from their oath of allegiance, and retired to the island of Ischia. Charles thus left master of his favourite object, the kingdom of Naples, after having marched thither, from the bottom of the Alps, with as much rapidity, and almost as little opposition, as if he had been on a progress through his own dominions; took quiet possession of the Neapolitan throne, and intimidated, or gave law, to every power in Italy<sup>s</sup>.

LETTER  
LIII.

A. D. 1495.

SUCH; my dear Philip, was the result of this expedition, which must be considered as the first great exertion of those new powers which the princes of Europe had acquired, and now began to exercise. Its effects were no less considerable than its success had been astonishing. The Italians, unable to resist the force of Charles, permitted him to hold on his course undisturbed. But they quickly perceived, that although no single power, which they could rouse to action, was a match for such an enemy, yet a confederacy might accomplish what its separate members durst not attempt. To this expedient, therefore, they had recourse; the only one that remained, to deliver or preserve them from the French yoke; and while Charles inconsiderately wasted his time at Naples, in festivals and triumphs on account of his past successes, or was fondly dreaming of future conquests in the East, to the empire of which he now aspired, they formed against him a powerful combination of almost all the Italian princes and states; the

s. And. de la Vig. *Cong. de la Nap.* Phil. de Commin.

## PART I.

A.D. 1495.

heads of which were the pope, the Venetians, the duke of Milan, supported by the emperor Maximilian, who had lately succeeded his father Frederic III. and by their Catholic majesties, Ferdinand and Isabella <sup>6</sup>.

A.D. 1496.

THE union of so many powers, who suspended, or forgot their particular animosities, that they might act with concert against an enemy who had become formidable to them all, awakened Charles from his thoughtless security. He saw now no prospect of safety but in returning to France. The confederates had assembled an army of thirty thousand men, in order to obstruct his march. Charles had only nine thousand men with him. The two armies met in the valley of Fornova; and though the French with daring courage, which more than made up for their inferiority in numbers, broke the army of the allies and gained a victory, which opened to their monarch a safe passage into his own territories, he was stripped of all his conquests in Italy, in as short a time as he had gained them. The exiled Ferdinand, by the aid of Gonsalvo de Cordova, surnamed the Great Captain, whom their Catholic majesties had sent to his assistance, speedily recovered the whole kingdom of Naples. He died soon after, and left his uncle Frederic in full possession of the throne<sup>7</sup>; so that the political system of Italy resumed the same appearance as before the French invasion.

CHARLES, after his return to France, gave himself up to those pastimes and pleasures which had been the bane of his Italian expedition. In the meantime his health decayed, and he died without issue in

6. Phil. de Comin. Mariana.

7. G. Flori. Guicciardini.

ty-eighth year of his age, and the seventeenth of sign; "a man of a small body and short stature, as Comines, but so good that it is not possible to find a better creature, and so sweet and gentle in disposition, that it is not known that he ever either gave or took offence in his life." He was succeeded on the throne of France by the duke of Orleans, who took the title of Lewis XII. to which was afterwards added the most glorious of all appellations, that of *father of his People*.

LETTER  
LIII.  
A. D. 1498.

Lewis was thirty-six years of age when he ascended the throne; and from that moment he forgot all personal resentments. When some of his courtiers reminded him in mind, that certain persons who had formerly been his enemies, were now in his power, he made that ever memorable reply:—"The king of France revenges not the injuries of the duke of Orleans." It is one thing, however, to deliver a fine sentence, and another to make it the rule of one's conduct. Lewis did both. But his fatal ambition of conquering Italy brought many misfortunes upon himself and his kingdom, notwithstanding his prudence and paternal affection for his subjects.

The claim of Lewis XII. to Naples, was the same as that of Charles VIII. and he demanded the duchy of Milan in right of one of his grandmothers, daughter of Galeazzo Visconti, first duke of that territory; and stipulated, in the marriage-contract of his daughter Valentine, that in case of failure of heirs in the family of Visconti, the duchy of Milan should descend to the posterity of this Valentine and the duke of Orleans. That event took place. The

7. G. Flori, Guicciardini.

M 3

family

**PART I.** family of Visconti became extinct in 1447; but the house of Orleans had hitherto been prevented, by various accidents, from making good their claim; and the duchy of Milan was still held by the descendants of Francis Sforza, a soldier of fortune, who having married the natural daughter of the last legal duke, raised himself by his valour and talents to the ducal throne. Lewis now prepared to assert his right with ardour, and he succeeded. But before I relate the particulars of that conquest, it will be necessary to say a few words of pope Alexander VI. and his son Cæsar Borgia, on account of their alliance with the king of France, and the share which they had in the wars of Italy: remarking by the way, that Ludovico Sforza, surnamed the Moor, having murdered his nephew, and taken possession of the duchy of Milan, had been confirmed in it, in 1494, by the investiture of the emperor Maximilian, who married his daughter<sup>8</sup>.

ALEXANDER VI. was at that time engaged in two great designs: one was to recover for the Patrimony of St. Peter, the many territories of which it was said to have been deprived; and the other, the exaltation of his son Cæsar Borgia. Infamous as his conduct was, it did not in the least impair his authority. He was publicly accused of a criminal correspondence with his own sister, whom he took away from three husbands successively: and he caused the last to be assassinated, that he might bestow her in marriage on the heir of the house of Este. The nuptials were celebrated in the Vatican by the most shameless diversions that debauch had ever invented for the confusion of modesty. Fifty courtezans danced naked before

8. Du Mont. *Corp. Diplom.* tom. iii.

to have defeated the duke of Milan, his father-  
land vassal, is at that time in a condition  
of him. He could with difficulty make head  
of the Swiss, who had entirely freed themselves  
of the Austrian dominion : He therefore acted,  
on this occasion, the feigned part of indifference.

LETTER  
LIII.  
A. D. 1497.

The French monarch terminated amicably some  
affairs which he had with Philip the Handsome, the  
emperor's son, and father of Charles V. and this  
he did homage to France for the counties of  
Flanders and Artois. Lewis likewise renewed the  
treaty concluded by Charles VIII. with England ;  
being now secure on all sides, he made his army  
cross the Alps.

A. D. 1499.

His army did not exceed twenty thousand men ;  
in the space of twenty days, the French made  
themselves masters of the duchy of Milan and the re-  
public of Genoa, while the Venetians occupied the  
city of Cremona. The king, clad in ducal  
array, entered the city of Milan, in triumph ; and the  
Ludovico Sforza, being betrayed soon after,  
the Swiss in his pay, was sent prisoner into France,  
put up in the castle of Loches, where he lay un-  
der guard during the remainder of his days.

A. D. 1500.

OLD Lewis here have set bounds to his ambition,  
and with the conquest of Milan, he was enabled  
in that situation to prescribe laws to all the Italian  
states and states, and to hold the balance among  
them. But the desire of recovering the kingdom of  
Naples engaged him in new projects ; and as he fore-



## PART I.

A.D. 1500.

saw opposition from Ferdinand, the Catholic king, who had formerly expelled the French from that country, and who was connected both by treaties and affinity with Frederic, king of Naples, he endeavoured by offers of interest, to which the ears of that monarch was never deaf, to engage him in an opposite confederacy. A plan was accordingly settled for the expulsion of Frederic, and the partition of his dominions. Frederic, unable to resist the force of

A.D. 1501.

the combined monarchs, each of whom was far his superior in power, resigned his sceptre. But he had the satisfaction to see Naples prove the source of contention among his conquerors. Lewis and Ferdinand, though they had concurred in making the conquest, differed about the division of it. From allies they became enemies; and Gonsalvo de Cordova, partly by the exertion of those military talents which

A.D. 1503.

gave him a just title to the appellation of the Great Captain, bestowed upon him by his countrymen, partly by such shameless and frequent violations of the most solemn engagements, as leave an indelible stain upon his memory, stripped the French of all they possessed in the Neapolitan dominions, and secured the entire possession of the disputed kingdom to his no less perfidious master <sup>12</sup>.

MEANWHILE Alexander VI. subdued the fief in Romania by the arms of his son Cæsar Borgia. There is not one act of oppression, subtle artifice, heroic courage, or atrocious villainy, which this son left unpractised. He made use of more art and dexterity to get possession of eight or ten little towns, and to rid himself of a few noblemen, who stood in his way, than Alexander the Great, Julius Cæsar,

<sup>12</sup>. Paul Jov. Guicciardini. Mezeray.

z-Kan, or Tamerlane had employed to subdue  
 eater part of the habitable globe. Every thing  
 d to conspire to his aggrandisement. His father  
 rmed with the spiritual, and he with the tem-  
 power of the church. But his good fortune  
 f short duration : he laboured, without knowing  
 r the Patrimony of St. Peter.

LETTER  
 LIII.

A. D. 1503.

EXANDER VI. died in 1503, and left behind him  
 re detestable memory in Europe than Nero or  
 ula had done in the Roman empire ; the sanc-  
 of his station adding a double tinge to his guilt.  
 papacy, however, was indebted to him for an  
 sion to its temporal dominions. Cæsar Borgia  
 ll the fruits of his crimes, and the church profited  
 em. Most of the cities which he had conquered  
 : another master, on the death of his father : and  
 Julius II. obliged him soon after to deliver up  
 est.

BANDONED by friends, allies, and relations, Bor-  
 in a short time, had nothing left of all his wicked  
 tness ; and, to complete his miserable catastrophe,  
 who had betrayed so many, was at last betrayed.  
 salvo de Cordova, the Great Captain, with whom  
 had trusted his person, sent him prisoner into  
 n. Lewis XII. took from him the duchy of Va-  
 inois and his pension. All the world forsook him.  
 ing found means, however, to escape from prison,  
 ough refuge in Navarre ; and courage, which  
 ot properly a virtue, but a happy qualification,  
 mon alike to the wicked and the virtuous, did not  
 rt him in his distresses. While in this asylum,  
 ill maintained every part of his character. He  
 carried

**PART I.** carried on intrigues, and he commanded in person army of the king of Navarre, his father-in-law during a war which that prince entered into by persuasion of Borgia, to dispossess his vassals of their estates, as this inhuman tyrant had robbed the vassals of the Holy See. He was slain fighting " : " A glorious end !" says Voltaire ; but it is surely only glorious to fall in a good cause, and Borgia's was confessedly a bad one. We have no occasion, therefore to think his fall too favourable. He wrought his own ruin, after having completed his disgrace ; a less striking than if he had suffered by the hand of the public executioner.

- A.D. 1504.** LEWIS XII. made a new attempt to recover the kingdom of Naples, and was again disappointed. The second disappointment was occasioned by the ambition of his minister, cardinal d'Amboise, who sold his master's interest for a promise of the papacy ; by the policy of Ferdinand, and by the bravery of the Grenada Captain. Lewis was now sincerely desirous of peace and willing to secure the possession of Milan, he engaged, by the treaty of Blois, to pay the emperor Maximilian a large sum for the investiture of that duchy. By this treaty also, the king of France promised his daughter in marriage to Charles of Austria, grandson of Maximilian and Ferdinand, with Brittany, Burgundy, and all his Italian dominions, as his dowry, in case he died without heirs male. But this article of the treaty was wisely opposed by the states of France "4 : and the princess Anne was given in marriage to the count of Angoulême, first prince of the blood, and presumptive heir to the crown

13. Ibid.

14. Mezeray, tom. iv. Henault. tom. i.

afterward

afterwards Francis I. Thus Brittany, which had been twice annexed to the French monarchy, and twice near being severed from it, was now incorporated with it, and Burgundy also was preserved.

LETTER  
LIII.  
A. D. 1506.

DURING the course of these transactions Isabella, queen of Castile died, and Philip of Austria went to take possession of that kingdom, as heir to his mother-in-law. He also died in a short time; and, to the astonishment of all Europe, left the king of France governor to his son Charles.

THE balance of power was now happily poised among the principal European states, and might long have maintained general tranquillity, had not the active and enterprising genius of an ambitious pontiff, excited anew the flames of war and discord among them. But the cause of that discord, my dear Philip, and its consequences, must be investigated in a future Letter.

LETTER

## L E T T E R    L I V .

EUROPE *from the* LEAGUE of CAMBRAY *to the*  
*Death of* LEWIS XII.

LETTER  
 LIV.

A.D. 1508.

**JULIUS II.** to whom the popes are particularly indebted for their temporal dominion; had formed the project of driving all foreigners out of Italy. But he was desirous in the first place, of humbling the Venetians, who had not only declined entering into his views, but had refused to restore the places which they had dismembered from the territory of the church: The league of Cambray was the consequence of their refusal.

LET us take a view of that republic, which excited the jealousy of so many princes and states, and cemented this famous confederacy.

VENICE, my dear Philip, took its rise, as I have had occasion to notice, during the inroads of the Barbarians, in the fifth century. The little islands of the Adriatic gulf afforded an asylum to the neighbouring inhabitants who originally lived by fishing, and afterwards grew rich and powerful by commerce. They again got footing on the Terra Firma; and Venice now extended her dominion from the lake of Como to the middle of Dalmatia. The Turks had despoiled her of what she had taken from the Christian emperors in Greece; but she still retained the large island of Candia or Crete, and soon got possession of Cyprus.

THE civil constitution of Venice, established on a firm basis, had suffered no considerable alteration for several

centuries; and the republic, during the same  
of time, had conducted its affairs with an uni-  
and vigorous spirit of policy, which gave it great  
tage over other states, whose views and measures  
ed as often as the form of their government, or  
ersons who administered it. But the constitu-  
f this republic had one essential fault; it wanted  
nterpoise to the power of the nobles, and did  
fer proper encouragement to the common peo-  
No private citizens of Venice can rise to the  
of a senator, or occupy any considerable employ-  
in a state.

LETTER  
LIV.  
A D. 1502

ON a partial aristocracy, which lodges all power  
hands of a few members of the community, is  
ally jealous. The Venetian nobles distrusted  
own subjects, and were afraid of allowing them  
se of arms: the military force of the republic,  
fore, consisted wholly of foreign mercenaries.  
was the command of these ever trusted to noble  
tians, lest they should acquire such influence  
the army as might endanger public liberty. A  
r of fortune was placed at the head of the armies  
e commonwealth; and to obtain that honour  
e great object of the Italian *Condottieri*, or leaders  
nds, who made a trade of war, during the four-  
and fifteenth centuries, and hired out troops  
ferent princes and states<sup>1</sup>.

REPUBLIC that disarmed its subjects, and ex-  
d its nobles from military command, must have  
ed on warlike enterprizes at great disadvan-  
; but its commerce was an inexhaustible source

1. *Sandi Storia Civil. Veneziana.*

**PART I.****A. D. 1508.**

of opulence. All the nations in Europe depended upon the Venetians, not only for the precious commodities of the East, which they imported by the way of Egypt, but for various manufactures fabricated them alone, or finished with a dexterity and elegance unknown in other countries. From this extensive commerce, the state derived such immense supplies as concealed the vices in its constitution, and enabled it to keep on foot such armies as were an overmatch for the force which any of its neighbours could bring into the field. Venice became an object of terror to the Italian states. Her wealth was viewed with envy by the greatest monarchs, who could not with her private citizens in the magnificence of their buildings, in the richness of their dress and furniture or in splendor and elegance of living. And Julius II. whose ambition and abilities were equal to those of any pontiff who had ever sat on the papal throne by working upon the fears of the Italians, and upon the avarice of the princes beyond the Alps, induced them to form against this proud republic one of the most extensive confederacies that Europe had ever beheld.

THE emperor, the king of France, the king of Spain, and the pope, were principals in the league of Cambray, to which almost all the princes of Italy acceded; the least considerable of them hoping for their share in the spoils of a state, which they deemed to be devoted to inevitable destruction. The Venetians might have diverted this storm, or have broken the force; but with a presumptuous rashness, to which there is nothing similar in the course of their history they waited its approach. The impetuous valour of the French rendered ineffectual all their precautions for the safety of the republic; and the battle of Agnad

del; fought near the river Adda, entirely ruined the army on which they relied for defence. Julius II. seized all the towns which they held in the ecclesiastical territories; and Ferdinand re-annexed the places which they had got possession of on the coast of Calabria, to his Neapolitan dominions. Maximilian, at the head of a powerful army, advanced towards Venice on one side; the French pushed their conquests on the other; and the Venetians surrounded by so many enemies, and left without one ally, sunk from the height of presumption to the depths of despair. They abandoned all their territories on the continent, and shut themselves up in their capital, as their last refuge, and the only place which they hoped to preserve.

LETTER  
LIV.

A. D. 1509.

JULIUS having thus, in the humiliation of the Venetians, attained his first object, began to think of the second, more worthy of his enterprising genius, 'the expulsion of every foreign power out of Italy.' For this purpose it was necessary to dissolve the League of Cambray, and sow dissensions among those princes whom he had formerly united. He absolved the Venetians, on their ceding to him the places claimed by the Holy See, from that anathema which had been pronounced against them; and he concluded an alliance with the republic against those very French whom he had called in to oppress it. Their imperiousness had rendered them peculiarly obnoxious to the Italians; and Julius II. who was a native of Genoa, was greatly desirous of revenging upon Lewis the triumphant ostentation with which he had punished the revolt of that city, whose records he caused to be burnt, and whose

. Guicciardini. Mezeray. *Hist. de la Ligue faite a Cambray*, par M. de Sévigné.

Vol. II.

N

principal



## PART I.

A.D. 1509.

principal citizens he obliged to kneel at the foot of his throne, while he pronounced their sentence ; which, after all, was only to pay a trifling fine. On Lewis, therefore, the haughty pontiff was determined that the tempest first should fall ; and, in order to pave the way for this bold project, he at once sought for a ground of quarrel with that monarch, and courted the alliance of foreign princes. He declared war against the duke of Ferrara, the confederate of Lewis ; he solicited the favour of Henry VIII. who had lately ascended the throne of England, by sending him a sacred rose, perfumed with musk, and anointed with chrism : he detached Ferdinand from the league, and drew him over to his party, by granting him the full investiture of the kingdom of Naples ; and what he chiefly valued, he formed a treaty with the Swiss, whose subsidy Lewis had refused to augment, and whom he had offended by some contumelious expressions <sup>3</sup>.

A.D. 1510.

THE confederacy of Cambray being thus dissolved, the face of affairs soon began to wear a very different appearance in Italy. The Venetians, now recovered from their consternation, were able to make head against the emperor, and even to regain part of the territory which they had lost. The pope and his allies made war upon the duke of Ferrara, the ally of France. They were opposed by the French troops, and obliged to raise the siege of Bologna ; but they afterwards formed that of Mirandola, where Julius appeared in person, visited the trenches, hastened the operations, and entered the breach, with all the ardour of a young soldier in pursuit of military glory <sup>4</sup>.

3. *Id. Ibid. Spelm. Concil*

4. Guicciardini.

LEWIS, in the mean time, was at a loss how to act : over-awed by his veneration for the vicar of Christ, he was afraid to let his generals take those advantages which fortune threw in their way. He was, therefore, desirous to divest Julius of that sacred character, which chiefly rendered him formidable. With this view, in conjunction with Maximilian, who was himself ambitious of the papacy, and by the authority of some disgusted cardinals, he summoned a general council at Pisa, in order to reform the church, and check the exorbitancies of the sovereign pontiff. But Lewis was as irresolute in supporting the council, as in instructing his generals. Julius saw his timidity, and availed himself of it. He summoned a council, at the Lateran : he put Pisa under an interdict, and all the places that should give shelter to the schismatical council ; he excommunicated the cardinals and prelates who attended it ; he even pointed his spiritual thunder against the princes who adhered to it : he freed their subjects from all oaths of allegiance, and gave their dominions to every one who could take possession of them <sup>s</sup>.

LETTER  
LIV.

A. D. 1511.

AMBITION lays hold of the slightest pretences to accomplish its designs. The crafty Ferdinand, who had obtained the surname of Catholic, but who regarded the cause of the pope and of religion solely as a cover to his selfish politics, made this anathema of Julius a pretext for robbing the king of Navarre of his dominions, as an ally of France, and consequently included in the bull fulminated against the adherents of the council of Pisa. The method which he took to effect this conquest, was no less singular than the measure. Henry VIII. his son-in-law, na-

s. Spelm. Concil.

N 2

turally

PART I.  
A. D. 1511.

turally sincere and sanguine in temper, was marked with a hearty desire of protecting the pope from oppression, to which he believed him exposed by the French monarch. Impatient also of acquiring distinction in Europe, to which his power and valour entitled him, he could not long remain idle amid the noise of arms: he was, therefore, to join that alliance, which the pope, Spain, and France had formed against Lewis. Ferdinand saw his intemperate ardour, and made him the instrument of his own base ambition.

THIS artful prince, who considered his connexion with Henry only as the means of taking advantage of his inexperience, advised him not to enter France by the way of Calais, where he himself should not have it in his power to assist him: he exhorted him rather to send forces to Fontarabia, whence he could easily make a conquest of Guienne, a province in which it was imagined the English had still many adherents. He promised to forward this conquest by the junction of a Spanish army: and so zealous he seem to promote the interests of his son-in-law, that he even sent vessels to England, in order to transport the forces which Henry had levied for that purpose. But the marquis of Dorset, who commanded the English army, was no sooner landed in Gascony, than Ferdinand suggested the necessity of subduing the kingdom of Navarre, which lies on the frontiers between France and Spain.

DORSET, however having no orders to make any where but in France, refused to take any part in that enterprize: he therefore remained in his quarters at Fontarabia. But so subtle was the contrivance of Ferdinand

Ferdinand, that the English army, even while it lay in that situation, was almost equally serviceable to his purpose, as if it had acted in conjunction with his own. It kept the French army in awe, and prevented it from advancing to succour the kingdom of Navarre; so that the duke of Alva, the Spanish general, having full leisure to conduct his operations, after subduing the smaller towns, made himself master of Pampeluna, the capital, and obliged John d'Albert the sovereign, to seek refuge in France. Dorset was obliged to return to England, with his army much diminished by want and sickness, without being able to effect any thing for the interests of his master; and Henry, enraged at his ill success, was with difficulty made sensible of the fraudulent conduct of Ferdinand, his deceitful father-in-law <sup>6</sup>.

LETTER  
LIV.

A.D. 1512.

WHILE these things were transacting on the other side of the Pyrenees, events of still greater moment happened beyond the Alps. Though the war which England waged against France, brought no advantage to the former kingdom, it was of much prejudice to the latter; and by obliging Lewis to withdraw his forces from Italy, lost him the superiority which his arms, in the beginning of the campaign had acquired in that country. Gaston de Foix, his nephew, had been entrusted with the command of the French forces; and, at the age of twenty-three, exhibited, in a few months, such feats of military skill and valour, as were sufficient to render illustrious the life of the oldest general. His career terminated with the famous battle of Ravenna; which, after the most obstinate dispute, he gained over the Spanish and papal armies. He perished the moment his victory was

April 11.

6. Herbert, *Hist. Hen. VIII.* Polyd. Virg.

**PART I.** complete, and with him perished the fortune of the  
**A. D. 1512.** French arms in Italy. The Swiss, who had now rendered themselves formidable by their bands of disciplined infantry, invaded the duchy of Milan with a numerous army, and excited its inconstant inhabitants to a revolt against the dominion of France, Genoa followed the example of that duchy; and Lewis, in the course of a few weeks, totally lost his Italian conquests. Maximilian Sforza, the son of Ludovico, was again reinstated in the possession of Milan, and the Genoese recovered their liberty<sup>7</sup>.

**A. D. 1513.** THE expulsion of the French gave much pleasure to the pope; more especially as he owed it to the Swiss, whom he had honoured with the title of *Defenders of the Holy See*, and whose councils he hoped always to govern. Julius II. however, enjoyed this satisfaction but a short time. He died suddenly, at an advanced age, and was succeeded in the pontificate by John of Medicis, son of the celebrated Laurence, who had governed Florence with so much reputation, and obtained the appellation of *Father of the Muses*. John took the name of Leo X. and proved one of the most illustrious pontiffs that ever sat on the papal throne. Humane, generous, affable, the patron of every art, and the friend of every virtue, he had a soul no less capable of forming great designs than his predecessor; but he was more delicate in employing means for the execution of them. By the negotiations of Leo, who adhered to the political system of Julius, the emperor Maximilian was detached from the French interest; and Henry VIII. notwithstanding his disappointments in the former campaign, was still encouraged to prosecute his warlike measures against Lewis<sup>8</sup>.

7. Guicciardini.

8. Father Paul. Guicciardini. Herbert.

in order to prevent disturbance from Scotland, while English arms should be employed on the continent, Henry dispatched an ambassador to James IV. his brother-in-law, with instructions to accommodate all differences between the two kingdoms. Some complaints had already been made on both sides; but matters might easily have been settled, had it not been for Henry's projected invasion of France, which excited the jealousy of the Scottish nation. The ancient league which subsisted between France and Scotland, was esteemed the most sacred bond of connection, and universally believed by the Scots, essential to the preservation of their independency against a people so much superior as the English. Henry's ambassador therefore easily foresaw, though James made professions of maintaining a neutrality, that a war with Scotland would in the end prove inevitable; and he gave warning of the danger to his master, who sent the earl of Surry to put the borders in a posture of defence, and to resist the expected invasion of the enemy.

LETTER  
LIV.

A. D. 1513.

MEANWHILE the king of England, all on fire for military fame, invaded France by the way of Calais. Not all the allies, on whose assistance he relied, the English alone fully performed their engagements. Maximilian, among others, failed to perform his; although he had received, in advance, a subsidy of an hundred and twenty thousand crowns. That he might make some atonement, however, for his breach of faith, he appeared in person in the Low Countries, and joined the English army with a small body of German and Flemish troops, that were useful in giving an

PART I.  
A. D. 1513.

example of discipline to Henry's new levied forces. The emperor carried his condescension yet farther. He did not pretend, with a handful of men, to act as an auxiliary, but enlisted himself in the service of the English monarch; wore the cross of St. George, and received a hundred ducats a day for the use of his table <sup>10</sup>.

AN emperor of Germany, serving under a king of England, and living by his bounty, was surely a spectacle truly extraordinary; but Henry treated him with the highest respect, and he really directed all the operations of the war. The first enterprize which they undertook was the siege of Terouane, a town situated on the borders of Picardy. During the attack of this place was fought the famous battle of Guinegate, where the cavalry of France fled at the first onset, and in which the duke of Longueville, Buffi d'Amboise, Clermont, Imbercourt, the chevalier Bayard, and many other officers of distinction, were made prisoners. This action, or rather rout, is commonly called the *Battle of Spurs*; because the French, on that occasion, made more use of their spurs than their military weapons <sup>11</sup>.

AFTER so considerable an advantage, Henry, who was at the head of a complete army of fifty thousand men, might have made incursions to the gates of Paris, and spread confusion and desolation every where. It therefore gave Lewis great joy, when he heard, that the king of England, instead of pushing his victory, had returned to the siege of Terouane. That place, however, was soon obliged to capitulate, and the an-

10. Polydore Virg.

11. *Hist. de Chev. Bayard. Mem. de Bellai.*

xities of the French were again renewed with regard to the motions of the English. The Swiss at the same time had entered Burgundy with a formidable army; and the Catholic king, though he had made a truce with Lewis, seemed disposed to seize every advantage which fortune should present to him. Never was the French monarchy in greater danger, or less in a condition to defend itself against those powerful armies which assailed or threatened it on every side.

LETTER  
LIV.

A.D. 1513.

LEWIS, though fruitful in expedients, was now at a loss what course to follow, or where to place his safety: his troops were dismayed, his people intimidated, and he had no ally to assist him. But France was saved by the blunders of her enemies. The Swiss allowed themselves to be wheedled into a negotiation by Tremouille, governor of Burgundy, without enquiring whether he had any powers to treat; and that nobleman, who knew he should be disavowed by his master, stipulated whatever they were pleased to demand, happy to get rid of such dangerous invaders at the expence of a little money and many empty promises. Henry discovered no less ignorance in the conduct of war than the Swiss in negotiation. By the interested counsel of Maximilian, he laid siege to Tournay, which then belonged to France, and afforded the troops of that kingdom a passage into the heart of the Netherlands. Soon after the reduction of this place, which nowise advanced the conquests of Henry, he was informed of the retreat of the Swiss; and as the season was now far advanced, he thought proper to return to England, and carried with him the greater part of his army<sup>12</sup>. Such, my dear Philip, was the

2. *Mém. de Fleuranger.* Guicciardini.

issue,



**PART I.** issue of a campaign much boasted of by the English monarch; but which, all circumstances considered, was unprofitable, if not inglorious.

**A. D. 1513.**

**Sept. 9.** THE success which, during this season, attended the English arms in North Britain was more decisive. James IV. had assembled the whole force of his dominions, and crossed the Tweed at the head of a brave, though tumultuous army of fifty thousand men. But instead of making use of the opportunity, which the absence of Henry afforded him, to push his conquests, he wasted his time in the arms of a fair captive. His troops became dissatisfied, and began to be pinched with hunger; and as the authority of the prince was yet feeble among the Scots, and military discipline extremely lax, many of them stole from the camp, and retired homewards. Meanwhile the earl of Surry, having collected a body of twenty-six thousand men, approached the enemy, who lay on some high ground near the hills of Cheviot. He drew them from their station, by feigning to enter their country; and an obstinate battle was fought in the field of Flouden, where the king of Scotland and the flower of his nobility were slain<sup>13</sup>.—Henry, on this occasion, discovered a mind truly great and generous. Though an inviting opportunity was now offered him of extending his dominion over the whole island, he took compassion on the helpless condition of his sister Margaret, and her infant son; and readily granted peace to Scotland, as soon as it was applied for.

**A. D. 1514.**

Soon after this peace, which put Henry in a condition to prosecute his views on the continent to more

13. Buchanan. Drummond. Herbert.

antage, as he had nothing to fear from his northern neighbours, a general pacification took place between the contending powers. Lewis renounced the council of Pisa, now transferred to Lyons, and X. granted him absolution. Ferdinand the Catholic renewed the truce with France; and he and Isidore entered into a treaty with Lewis for the marriage of his second daughter, Renée, to Charles, son of Spain, their common grandson. Lewis himself espoused the princess Mary of England, and agreed to pay Henry a million of crowns, the arrears by the treaty of Estaples. These two monarchs entered into an alliance for their mutual defence<sup>14</sup>.

LETTER  
LIV.  
A.D. 1514.

LEWIS XII. thus rescued from his numerous difficulties, had the happiness of beholding once more his affairs in good order, and all Europe in tranquillity.

But he enjoyed this happiness only a short while. Tired with the beauty and elegant accomplishments of his young queen, he forgot in her arms his advanced age, and was seduced into such a round of joy and pleasure as proved very unfavourable to his declining health<sup>15</sup>. He died about three months after the marriage, in his fifty-fourth year, and when he was meditating anew the conquest of Milan—he was left to immortalize the name, and swell the fortunes of his successor.

A.D. 1515.

Du Tillet.

Brantome, *Eloge de Louis. XII.* "The good king," says another "for the sake of his wife, totally altered his manner of living, whereas before he used to dine at eight o'clock in the morning, he now did not till noon. He had also been accustomed to go to bed at six in the evening, and he now frequently sat up till midnight." (*Hist. de Chev.* c.) Nothing can mark more strongly than this passage the difference between the mode of living in that and the present age!

T H E R E

## PART I.

A.D. 1515.

THERE is no perfection in human beings, my d  
Philip, and consequently not in kings, whatever t  
flatterers may tell them; but few men, either pri  
or subjects, seem to have possessed more social  
benevolent virtues than fell to the share of Lewis 2  
He was universally beloved by his people: the po  
lace and the nobility equally adored him, and uni  
mously called him their Father; a title with wh  
he was particularly pleased, and which he made it  
study of his life to deserve. He began his reign  
abolishing many taxes; and at the time of his de  
notwithstanding his wars and his disasters, he had  
minished the public burdens above one half. His  
misfortunes, or, in a political sense, his errors,  
deared him to his subjects; for it was well kno  
that he might have maintained his conquests in It  
if he would have levied larger sums upon his peo  
But his heart would not permit him to distress the  
he esteemed any loss light, compared with that  
their affections. His moderation was no less rema  
able than his humanity. When told that some of  
courtiers smiled at his œconomy, which they co  
dered as too rigid, and that certain authors had ta  
the liberty to ridicule it in their writings, he wa  
no means displeased. "I would rather," replied  
magnanimously, "that my people should laugh  
"my parsimony, than weep at their own  
"pressions<sup>16</sup>."

16. *Hist. de Louis XII.* pub. par Theod. Godefroy,

## LETTER LV.

*General View of EUROPE continued, from the Accession of FRANCIS I. in 1515, to the Death of the Emperor MAXIMILIAN, in 1519; including the Rise of the REFORMATION in GERMANY.*

LEWIS XII. was succeeded on the throne of France by his son-in-law Francis, count of Anjou, first prince of the blood, whose military genius, it was foreseen, would soon disturb the peace of Europe. Young, brave, ambitious, and enterprising, he immediately turned his eyes towards Italy, as the scene of glory and of conquest. His object was the recovery of Milan. But before he set out on that expedition, he renewed the treaty which his predecessor had concluded with England; having nothing to fear from Spain, where Ferdinand was on the verge of the grave, he marched his army towards the Alps, under pretence of defending the kingdom against the incursions of the Swiss. Ignorant of his hostile intentions, that warlike people taken up arms, at the instigation of the pope, in order to protect Maximilian Sforza, duke of Milan, whom they had restored to his dominions, and thought themselves bound in honour to support.

LETTER  
LV.

A. D. 1515.

THESE hardy mountaineers took possession of all the passes in the Alps, through which they thought the French must enter Italy; and when informed that Francis had made his way into Piedmont, by a secret route, they descended undismayed into the plain, and gallantly opposed themselves on foot to the heavily-armed cavalry of France. The two armies

met

## PART I.

A.D. 1515.  
Sept. 13.

met at Marignan, near Milan; where was fought one of the most furious and obstinate battles mentioned in the history of modern times. The action began towards evening: night parted the combatants; but next morning the Swiss renewed the attack with unabated ardour, and it required all the heroic valour of Francis to inspire his troops with courage sufficient to resist the shock. The Swiss, though broken at last by the cavalry, and galled by the cannon, long kept their ground; and did not retire till they had lost upwards of twelve thousand of their best troops, about one half of their whole number. The loss of the French was very considerable: twenty thousand men fell on both sides; and the old mareschal Trivulzio, who had been present at eighteen pitched battles, used to declare, that in comparison of the battle of Marignan, every other engagement he had seen was but *the play of children*, but that this was a *combat of heroes*<sup>1</sup>.

THE surrender of the city of Milan, and the conquest of the whole duchy, were the consequences of this victory. Maximilian Sforza resigned his claim, in consideration of a pension; and Francis having concluded a treaty with the pope, and with the Swiss, returned into France, leaving to Charles duke of Bourbon the government of his Italian dominions<sup>2</sup>.

IN the mean time the success and glory of the French monarch began to excite jealousy in the breast of the old emperor Maximilian: nor was the rapid progress of Francis, though in so distant a country; regarded with indifference even by the king of England. Henry dispatched a minister to the court of Vienna, with secret orders to propose certain pay-

<sup>1</sup> *Mém. de Fleurbaey.*<sup>2</sup> *Guicciardini. Mém. de Mezeray.*

ments to the emperor: and Maximilian, who was ever ready to embrace any overture to excite fresh troubles, and always necessitous, immediately invaded Italy with a considerable army. But that prince being repulsed before Milan, by the French garrison, and hearing that twelve thousand Swiss were advancing to its relief, retired hastily into Germany; made peace with France and with Venice, ceded Verona to that republic for a sum of money, and thus excluded himself, in some measure, from all future access into Italy<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
LV.

A. D. 1515.

A. D. 1516.

THIS peace, which restored universal tranquillity to Europe, was preceded by the death of Ferdinand the Catholic, and the succession of his grandson Charles to his extensive dominions; an event which had long been looked for, and from which the most important consequences were expected. Charles, who had hitherto resided in the Low Countries, which he inherited as heir of the house of Burgundy, was now near the full age of sixteen, and possessed a recollection and sedateness much above his years; but his genius had yet given no indications of that superiority, which its maturer state displayed. That capacious and decisive judgment, which afterwards directed so ably the affairs of a vast empire, was left to be discovered by those great events to which it gave birth, and those occasions which made it necessary. At present there was little call for it.

CARDINAL Ximenes, archbishop of Toledo, a person of equal virtue and sagacity, had prudently been appointed, by the will of Ferdinand, sole regent

3. *Ibid.*

## PART I.

A.D. 1516.

of Castile, till the arrival of his grandson. This man, whose character is no less singular than illustrious, who united the abilities of a great statesman with the abject devotion of a superstitious monk, and the magnificence of a prime minister with the austerity of a mendicant, maintained order and tranquillity in Spain, notwithstanding the discontents of a turbulent and high-spirited nobility. When they disputed his right to the regency, he coolly shewed them the testament of Ferdinand, and the ratification of that deed by Charles; but these not satisfying them; and argument proving ineffectual, he led them insensibly towards a balcony, whence they had a view of a large body of troops under arms and a formidable train of artillery. "Behold," said the cardinal, raising his voice, and extending his arm, "the powers which I have received from his Catholic Majesty: by these I govern Castile! and will govern it, till the king, your master and mine, shall come to take possession of his kingdom." A declaration so bold and determined silenced all opposition; and Ximenes maintained his authority till the ar-

A.D. 1517. rival of Charles<sup>4</sup>.

THE fate of this minister merits our attention; though not immediately connected with the line of general history. The young king was received with universal acclamations of joy; but Ximenes found little cause to rejoice. He was seized with a violent disorder, supposed to be the effect of poison; and when he recovered, Charles, prejudiced against him by the Spanish grandees and his Flemish courtiers, slighted his advice, and allowed him every day to

sink into neglect. The cardinal did not bear this treatment with his usual firmness of spirit. He expected a more grateful return from a prince, to whom he delivered a kingdom far more flourishing than it had been in any former age, and authority more extensive and better established than the most illustrious of his ancestors had ever possessed. Conscious of his own integrity and merit, he could not therefore refrain from giving vent, at times, to indignation and complaint. He lamented the fate of his country, and foretold the calamities to which it would be exposed from the insolence, the rapaciousness, and the ignorance of strangers. These persons agitated the soul of Ximenes, when he received a letter from the king, genteely dismissing him from his councils, under pretence of easing his age of that burden, which he had so long and so ably sustained. This letter proved fatal to the minister. His haughty mind could not endure disgrace, nor his generous heart the stings of ingratitude: he expired a few hours after reading it.

LETTER  
LV.  
A. D. 1517.

WHILE Charles was taking possession of the throne of Spain, in consequence of the death of one grandfather, another was endeavouring to obtain for him the imperial crown. With this view Maximilian assembled a diet at Augsburg, where he strove to gain the favour of the electors by many acts of beneficence, in order to engage them to chuse that young prince as his successor. But Maximilian himself having never been crowned by the pope, a ceremony deemed essential in that age, as well as the preceding, he was considered only as king of the Romans,

A. D. 1518.

5. Marfallier, *Vie de Ximen.* Baudier, *Hist. de Ximen.*



## PART I.

A.D. 1518.

or emperor *elect*; and no example occurring in history of any person being chosen successor to a king of the Romans, the Germans, ever tenacious of their forms obstinately refused to confer upon Charles a dignity for which their constitution knew no name<sup>6</sup>.

BUT the diet of Augsbург had other business. Thither was summoned Martin Luther, for "propagating new and dangerous opinions." These opinions were no other, my dear Philip, than the first principles of the Reformation; which soon diffused themselves through Germany, which were afterwards embraced by so many nations, and which separated on half of Europe from the Romish church. Of the origin of this great schism some account will be necessary: for although I would by no means engage you in theological disputes, you ought to know the grounds of a controversy, which produced so remarkable a revolution in the religious world, in the creeds and ceremonies of Christians, that you may be the better enabled to judge of its effects upon society upon industry, literature, policy, and morals. In this light only I mean to consider it: the road to heaven I leave to heavenly directors.

IN the course of these Letters I have had occasion to observe the rise of the pope's spiritual power, as well as of his temporal dominion; to trace the progress, and to remark the abuses of each. A repetition here would therefore be unnecessary. The spiritual despotism of Gregory VII. the temporal tyranny of Alexander VI. and the bloody ambition of Julius II. make too strong an impression on the mind

6. Barre, tom. vi.

to be soon effaced. After that enormous privilege which the Roman pontiffs assumed of disposing of crowns, and of releasing nations from their oath of allegiance, the most pernicious to society was that of absolving individuals from the ties of moral duty. This dangerous power, or one equivalent to it, the pope claimed as the successor of St. Peter, and the keeper of the spiritual treasury of the church, supposed to contain the super-abounding good works of the saints, together with the infinite merits of Jesus Christ. Out of this inexhaustible storehouse of superabundant merit, his holiness might retail, at pleasure, particular portions to those who were deficient. He assumed, in short, and directly exercised, the right of pardoning sins; which was, in other words, granting a permission to commit them; for if it is known, as had long been the case in the Romish church, at what price the punishment of any crime may be bought off, the encouragement to vice is the same as if a dispensation had been granted before hand. And even that was frequently indulged.

LETTER  
LV.  
A. D. 1518.

THE influence of such indulgences upon morals, may easily be imagined; especially in ages when superstition had silenced the voice of conscience, and reason was bewildered in Gothic darkness; when the church had every where provided sanctuaries, which not only screened from the arm of the civil magistrate persons guilty of the greatest enormities, but often enabled them to live in affluence. Yet that great historian, and profound philosopher, Mr. Hume, has endeavoured to prove, that protestant writers are mistaken in supposing, that a dissolution of morals should ensue, "because a man could purchase for a shilling, "an *indulgence* for the most enormous and unheard of

PART I. "crimes?" But you, I hope, will think otherwise,  
 when you have duly weighed the foregoing con-  
 siderations.

A.D. 1518.

MR. Hume seems here to have forgot, that all men are not philosophers: or blinded by the love of paradox, to have lost sight of common sense. He seems even to have lost sight of his argument; for he adds, that "after these indulgences, there still remained "hell-fire, the civil magistrate, and the remorses of "conscience," to awe mankind to their duty. Now the first of these assertions is literally false; for the very words of an indulgence bore, that it restored the person to whom it was granted, "to that innocence and purity which he possessed at baptism:" and, according to the doctrine of the Romish church, the infant is then fit for heaven. But the indulgence did not stop here: it concluded thus; "so that when "you die, the gates of punishment shall be shut, "and the gates of the paradise of delight shall be "opened." The terror of the civil magistrate, as I have already shewn, could be very small, when the church afforded shelter to every criminal that sought her sanctuaries, and took into her bosom the whole body of the clergy. Conscience, indeed, so often represented by this doubting sage as an erring guide, as a principle superinduced and local, conscience could not be banished the human breast; but its voice, if not entirely silenced by superstition, was too feeble to be listened to by the self-deluding and head-strong passions of man, when flattered by the hope, or encouraged by the assurance of a papal indulgence.

7. *Hist. of England*, vol. iv. note A.  
 Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book ii.

8. *Seckend. Comment. lib. i.*

THESE indulgences, or plenary pardons, of which I have been led insensibly to speak, and which not only served as a remission of sins to the living, but as a release to the dead from the pains of purgatory, were first invented by Urban II. as a recompence for those who engaged in the wild expeditions to the Holy Land. They were afterwards granted to such as contributed money for that or any other pious purpose: and the sums so raised were frequently diverted to other uses. They were employed to swell the state, to furnish the luxuries, or accomplish the ambitious enterprizes of the popes. John XXII. reduced this spiritual traffic into a system; and Leo X. that great patron of arts and of letters, having exhausted the papal treasury in rewards to men of genius, in magnificent works, and expensive pleasures, thought that he might attempt, without danger, those pious frauds so successfully practised by the most ignorant of his predecessors: Leo published a general sale of *Indulgences*.

LETTER  
LV.  
A.D. 1518.

If any thing could apologize for a religious cheat that tends to the subversion of morals, Leo's apology was ready. He was engaged in building that superb temple, St. Peter's cathedral, founded by his predecessor, and the Turks were preparing to enter Germany. He had no occasion to forge pretences for this extension of papal authority. But Leo, though a polite scholar, and a fine gentleman, was but a pitiful pope. Liberal minded himself, and surrounded by liberal minded men, he did not foresee, that the lamp of knowledge, which he held up to mankind, would light them to the abode of Superstition; would shew them her errors, her impostures, her usurpations, and their own slavish condition. He did not reflect, that impo-

**PART I.**

**A. D. 1518.** fitions employ'd with success in one age, may prove dangerous experiments in another. But he had soon occasion to remember it.

THE abuse of the sale of indulgences in Germany, where they were publicly retailed in alehouses, and where the produce of particular districts was farmed out, in the manner of a toll or custom, awakened the indignation of Martin Luther, an Augustine friar, and professor of theology in the university of Wittenberg. Luther was also incensed, it is said, that the privilege of vending this spiritual merchandise had been taken from his order, and given to the Dominicans. But, be that as it may, he wrote and he preached against indulgences. His writings were read with avidity, and his discourses were listened to with admiration. He appealed to reason and scripture, for the truth of his arguments, not to the decisions of councils, or of popes. A corner of the veil was now happily lifted. The people, ever fond of judging for themselves (and in matters which concern themselves only, they have an undoubted right,) flattered by this appeal, began to call in question that authority which they had formerly revered, which they had blindly adored; and Luther, emboldened by success, extended his views, and ventured to declaim against other abuses. From abuses he proceeded to usurpations; from usurpations to errors; and from one error to another, till the whole fabric of the Romish church began to totter,

LEO, in the mean time, alarmed at the progress of this daring innovator, had summoned him to answer for his doctrines at Rome. But that citation was remitted at the intercession of Frederic, surnamed the  
Wife,

Wise, elector of Saxony, who had hitherto protected Luther; and his cause was ordered to be tried in Germany, by cardinal Cajetan, a Dominican, eminent for scholastic learning and the pope's legate at the imperial court. For this end, among others, Cajetan attended the diet at Augsburg; and thither Luther repaired without hesitation, after having obtained the emperor's safe-conduct, though he had good reason to decline a judge chosen from among his avowed adversaries. The cardinal received him with decent respect, and endeavoured, at first, to gain him by gentle treatment; but finding him firm in his principles, and thinking it beneath the dignity of his station to enter into any formal dispute, he required him, by virtue of the apostolic powers with which he was vested, to retract his errors, (without shewing that they were such) and to abstain, for the future, from the publication of new and dangerous opinions. Luther, who had flattered himself with a hearing, and hoped to distinguish himself in a dispute with a prelate of such eminent abilities, was much mortified at this arbitrary mode of proceeding. His native intrepidity of mind, however, did not forsake him: he boldly replied, that he could not, with a safe conscience, renounce opinions which he believed to be true; but offered to submit the whole controversy to the judgment of the learned, naming certain universities. This offer was rejected by Cajetan, who still insisted on a simple recantation; and Luther, by the advice of his friends, after appealing to a general council, secretly withdrew from Augsburg, and returned to his own country. The progress of this extraordinary man,

LETTER  
LV.  
A.D. 1518.

9. *Scid. Hist. Reform.* Robertson, ubi sup.

**PART I.** and of that reformation to which he gave birth, I shall afterwards have occasion to trace.

**A.D. 1519.** THE diet of Augsberg was soon followed by the death of the emperor Maximilian; an event in itself of little moment, as that prince had, for some years, ceased to be of any consequence. But as it left vacant the first station among Christian princes, of which two great monarchs were equally ambitious, it became memorable by its effects. It gave rise to a competition, and awakened a jealousy, which threw all Europe into agitation: it broke that profound peace which then reigned in Christendom, and kindled wars more general and lasting than any which modern times had beheld.—But before we enter on that interesting æra, I must carry forward the Progress of Society; notice the improvements in arts and in letters, and exhibit some account of those great naval discoveries, which produced so important a revolution in the commercial world, and gave to Europe a new continent, while religion and ambition were depopulating the old. Meanwhile it will be proper to remark, That, during the reign of Maximilian, Germany was divided into Circles, in each of which a provincial and particular jurisdiction was established, to supply the place of a public and common tribunal. In this reign also was instituted the Imperial Chamber, composed of judges nominated partly by the emperor, partly by the several states, and vested with authority to decide finally concerning all differences among the members of the Germanic body. The Aulic Council too, which takes cognizance of all feudal cases, and such as belong to the emperor's immediate jurisdiction, received under this prince a new form.

form<sup>10</sup>. By these regulations, order was given to that confused government, and some degree of vigour restored to the imperial authority.

LETTER  
LV.  
A.D. 1519.

L E T T E R LVI.

*Progress of SOCIETY in EUROPE, from the Beginning of the Fourteenth, to the Middle of the Sixteenth Century, with a retrospective View of the Revival of LETTERS.*

WE have already, my dear Philip, traced the Progress of Society to the beginning of the fourteenth century. We have seen corporation-charters granted; civil communities formed; and the great body of the people, released from that servitude under which they had so long groaned, applying themselves to trade and industry. We have also seen universities generally established; the study of the Roman law introducing a more perfect system of jurisprudence; an acquaintance with the learned languages awakening an ambition of literary merit; manners taking a more liberal turn, and commerce beginning to circulate the conveniencies of life. But Society had still many advances to make, before it arrived at that state of refinement, in which we now behold it, or to which it had attained under the pontificate of Leo X.

LETTER  
LVI.

THESE advances it is now our business to trace. By the way, however, I must remind you, That, in the course of the general narrative, I have taken oc-

10. Dutt. *De Pace Publica Imperii.*



## PART I.

caſion to notice the Progreſs of Society with reſpect to the command of national force; the vigour which government acquired, by the increaſe of the royal authority; the alterations which took place in the art of war, in conſequence of the invention of gun-powder; the eſtabliſhment of ſtanding armies, and the ſupplies neceſſary for the ſupport of ſuch a body of men. I have alſo had occaſion to mention the new ſyſtem adopted by princes, for national defence and ſafety, by maintaining a balance of political power, and the means by which that ſyſtem was perfected. I ſhall, therefore, devote this letter ſolely to ſuch objects as cannot come within the line of general hiſtory; the progreſs of manners, of arts, and of polite literature. The ſciences, as ſince cultivated, were not yet known. True philoſophy belongs to a more modern æra.

MANKIND are no ſooner in poſſeſſion of the conveniencies of life, than they begin to aſpire after its elegancies. About the beginning of the fourteenth century, ſuch a taſte became general in Europe. The Italian cities, which had early acquired liberty, and obtained municipal charters, carried on, at that time, a flouriſhing trade with India, through the ports of the Red Sea. They introduced into their own country manufactures of various kinds, and carried them on with great ingenuity and vigour. In the manufacture of ſilk in particular, they made ſo rapid a progreſs, that, about the middle of the fourteenth century, a thouſand citizens of Genoa appeared in one proceſſion, clad in ſilk robes. They attempted new arts; among which may be numbered, the art of taking impreſſions from engravings on plates of copper, the manufacture of cryſtal glaſs for mirrors, of paper made of linen rags, and of earthenware in imi-

tation of procelain. And they imported from warmer climates the art of raising several natural productions, formerly unknown in Europe which now furnish the materials of a lucrative and extended commerce; particularly the culture of silk, and the plantation of the sugar-cane. Originally the produce of Asia, and esteemed peculiar to the East, the sugar-cane was transplanted from the Greek islands into Sicily, from Sicily into Italy, from Italy into Spain, and from Spain and Portugal into the newly discovered islands in the Western Ocean<sup>1</sup>.

THE discovery of those islands, and also of the American continent, was the effect of another modern invention, namely the Mariner's Compass; which, by rendering navigation at once more secure and more adventurous, facilitated the intercourse between remote nations, and may be said to have brought them nearer to each other.

BUT the progress of navigation, and the discoveries to which it gave birth, demand a particular Letter. Yet here I must observe, that commerce, during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, was by no means confined to the Italian states. Flanders had long been as famous for the manufacture of linen and woollen cloths, as Italy was for that of silk. All the wool of England, before the reign of Edward III. except a small quantity wrought into coarse cloths for home consumption, was sold to the Flemings or Lombards, but chiefly to the former, and manufactured by them; and it was not till the middle of the fifteenth century (so late were our ancestors of availing themselves of

1. Guiciardini, *Deserit. Paesi Bassi*.

their

## PART I.

A. D. 1508.

their natural commercial advantages ! ) that the English were capable of fabricating cloth for foreign markets. Bruges was at once the staple for English wool, for the woollen and linen manufactures of the Netherlands, for the naval stores and other bulky commodities of the North, and for the precious commodities of the East, as well as domestic productions, carried thither by the Italian states<sup>2</sup>. It was the greatest emporium in Europe.

NOTHING so much advances society as an intercourse with strangers. In proportion as commerce made its way into the different countries of Europe, they successively turned their attention to those objects, and adopted those manners which occupy and distinguish polished nations. Accordingly we find the Italians and Flemings taking the lead in the liberal as well as in the commercial arts, and exhibiting the first examples of cultivated life.

PAINTING and architecture were revived in Italy toward the end of the thirteenth century. They continued to make rapid progress under different masters, and were both carried to perfection during the period under review. Tapestry, then in high estimation, had long been manufactured with the greatest ingenuity in the Low Countries ; and the Flemings, in their turn, became painters and architects, before the rest of Europe were furnished with the necessary arts. Ghent and Bruges, Venice and Genoa, were splendid cities, adorned with stately buildings, while the inhabitants of London and Paris lived in wretched cottages, without so much as a chimney to carry up the smoke. The fire was made on the ground in the

2. *Id. ibid.* Anderson, *Hist. Com.* vol. i.

middle of the apartment, and all the family sat round it, like the Laplanders in their huts. This rude method of building and living, continued to be common in considerable towns, both in France and England, as late as the beginning of the sixteenth century.

LETTER  
I. VI.

LEARNING and politeness are supposed to keep pace with each other. But this observation seems to have been made without due attention, to have been formed into a maxim by some dogmatist, and implicitly adopted by succeeding writers; for if applied to the abstract sciences, it seems equally void of foundation, whether we consider the fact itself, the nature of those sciences, or the manners of the literati in different ages. Politeness arises from the habits of social life, and the intercourse of men and of nations; it is therefore more likely to accompany commerce than learning. But it must be allowed, at the same time, that manners receive their last polish from works of imagination and sentiment; which soften the mind by pictures of natural and moral beauty, and dispose it to tenderness and social affection.

THESE reflections, my dear Philip, naturally lead us to the most curious and interesting inquiries; "the revival of letters, and the progress of genius and manners." The method in which you now study history, does not permit me to treat those subjects so fully as their importance may seem to require; yet shall I take care to omit nothing essential for a gentleman to know, while I studiously avoid every thing that belongs to the mere antiquary. An attempt to trace, with critical minuteness, through dark and ignorant

## PART I.

ages, the obscure sources of refinement, is like travelling over barren mountains and uninhabited deserts, in search of the remote fountain of the Nile, instead of contemplating the accumulated majesty of that river; when, greatly bountiful, its mysterious waters shed health and plenty over an extensive kingdom, and furnish the means of an enriching commerce, which feeds and employs millions, and calls forth every power of the mind, and cherishes every virtue of the heart.

THE first permanent step towards the revival of letters in Europe, was the erection of schools under lay preceptors. Alfred and Charlemagne, those early luminaries of the modern world, had shed a temporary lustre over the ages in which they lived. They had encouraged learning both by their example and patronage, and some gleams of genius began to break forth; but the promising dawn did not arrive at perfect day. The schools erected by these great monarchs were confined solely to the churches and monasteries, and monks were almost the only instructors of youth. The contracted ideas of such men, partly arising from their mode of life, partly from their religious opinions, made them utterly unfit for the communication of liberal knowledge. Science, in their hands, degenerated into a barbarous jargon, and genius again sunk in the gloom of superstition. A long night of ignorance succeeded. Learning was considered as dangerous to true piety, and darkness was necessary to hide the usurpations of the clergy, who were then exalting themselves on the ruins of the civil power. The ancient poets and orators were represented as seducers to the path of destruction. Virgil and Horace were the pimps of hell, Ovid a le-

cherous fiend, and Cicero a vain declaimer, impiously elated with the talent of heathenish reasoning. Aristotle's logic alone was recommended, because it was found capable of involving the simplest arguments, and perplexing the plainest truths. It became the universal science : and Europe for almost three centuries, produced no composition that can afford pleasure to a classical reader. Incredible legends, unedifying homilies, and trite expositions of scripture, were the only labours of the learned during that dark period. But the gloom at last began to disappear, and the sceptre of Knowledge was wrested from the hand of Superstition. Several enlightened persons among the laity, who had studied under the Arabs in Spain, undertook the education of youth about the beginning of the eleventh century, in the chief cities of Italy ; and afterward in those of France, England, and Germany. Instruction was communicated in a more rational manner : more numerous and more useful branches of science were taught ; a taste for ancient literature was revived ; and some Latin poems were written, before the close of the twelfth century, not unworthy of the latter times of the Roman empire <sup>4</sup>.

THE human soul during this period, seems to have roused itself, as from a lethargy. The same enthusiasm, which prompted one set of men to signalize their valour in the Holy Land, inspired another with the ardour of transmitting to posterity the gallant actions of the former, and of animating the zeal of those pious warriors, by the fabulous adventures of former Christian heroes. These performances were

4. Warton, *Hist. of English Poetry*, vol. i.

## PART I

composed in verse ; and several of them with much elegance, and no small degree of imagination. But many bars were yet in the way of literary refinement. The taste of the age was too rude to relish the beauties of classical composition : the Latin language, in which all science was conveyed, was but imperfectly known to the bulk of readers ; and the scarcity of parchment, together with the expence of transcribing, rendered books so extremely dear, as to be only within the reach of a few. Learning, however, continued to advance, in spite of every obstruction ; and the invention of paper in the fourteenth century, and of printing about the middle of the fifteenth, made knowledge so general within a century after, that Italy began to compare, in arts and in letters, her modern with her ancient state, and to contrast the age of Leo X. with that of the second Cæsar.

In the mean time, a singular revolution had taken place in the empire of Genius, introduced by one no less singular in the system of Manners. Women among the ancient Greeks and Romans, seem to have been considered merely as objects of sensuality, or of domestic conveniency. They were devoted to a state of seclusion and obscurity, had few attentions offered them, and were permitted to take as little share in the conversation, as in the general commerce of life. But the northern nations, who paid a kind of devotion to the softer sex, even in their native forests, had no sooner settled themselves in the provinces of the Roman empire, than the female character began to assume new consequence. Those fierce barbarians, who seemed to thirst only for blood, who involved in one undistinguished ruin the monuments of ancient grandeur and ancient ingenuity, and who devoted to  
the

the flames the knowledge of ages, always forbore to offer any violence to the women. They brought along with them the respectful gallantry of the North, which had power to restrain even their savage ferocity ; and they introduced into the West of Europe, a generosity of sentiment, and a complaisance toward the ladies, to which the most polished nations of antiquity were strangers.

THESE sentiments of generous gallantry were fostered by the institution of Chivalry, which lifted woman yet higher in the scale of life. Instead of being nobody in society, she became its *primum mobile*. Every knight devoting himself to danger, declared himself the humble servant of some lady, and that lady was generally the object of his love. Her honour was supposed to be intimately connected with his, and her smile was the reward of his valour : for her he attacked, for her he defended, and for her he shed his blood. Courage, animated by so powerful a motive, lost sight of every thing but enterprize. Incredible toils were cheerfully endured ; incredible actions were performed ; and the boldest inventions of fiction were more than realized. The effect was reciprocal. Women, proud of their influence, became worthy of the heroism they had inspired : they were not to be approached but by the high-minded and the brave ; and men, in those gallant times, could only hope to be admitted to the bosom of the chaste fair, after having proved their fidelity and affection by years of perseverance and of peril.

A SIMILAR change took place in the operations of war. The perfect hero of antiquity was superior to fear, but he made use of every artifice to annoy his enemy : impelled by animosity and hostile passion,



## PART I.

like the savage in the American woods, he was only anxious of attaining his end, without regarding whether fraud or force were the means. But the true Knight, or modern hero of the middle ages, who seems to have had, in all his rencounters, his eye fixed on the judicial combat, or Judgment of God, had an equal contempt for stratagem and danger. He disdained to take advantage of his enemy : he desired only to see him, and to combat him upon equal terms, trusting that Heaven would interpose in behalf of the just ; and as he professed only to vindicate the cause of religion, of injured beauty, or oppressed innocence, he was farther confirmed in this enthusiastic opinion, by his own heated imagination. Strongly persuaded that the decision must be in his favour, he fought as if under the influence of divine inspiration, rather than of military ardour<sup>s</sup>. Thus the system of chivalry, by a singular combination of manners, blended the heroic and sanctified characters, united devotion and valour, zeal and gallantry, and reconciled the love of God and of the ladies.

FROM these new manners arose a new species of composition ; namely the Romance, or modern heroic fable. It was originally written in verse : and by giving a new direction to genius, banished for a time that vein of ancient poetry, which had been so successfully revived and cultivated during the eleventh and twelfth centuries. Modern poetry, however, lost nothing by this relapse. Had classical taste and judgment been so early established, imagination must have suffered : truth and reason, as an ingenious writer observes, would have chased before their time, those visions of illusive fancy which delight to hover on

*s. Mem. sur l' Ancien Chevalerie, par M. De la Curne de St. Palaye.*  
the

the gloom of superstition, and which form so considerable a part of our polite literature. We should still have been strangers to the beautiful extravagancies of romantic fabling.

LETTER  
LVI.

THIS new species of composition took its rise in the thirteenth century, among the Troubadours or minstrels of Provence; and was originally written in the Provençal dialect, then the most polished and universal of any modern tongue. These Troubadours, who seem to have been the lineal successors of the Celtic bards, had followed in crowds to the Holy Land, the princes and nobles by whom they were patronised. They had seen the riches and splendour of oriental cities, and the pomp of oriental princes; they had beheld the greatest scene of war that modern times had yet exhibited. They had seen the combined armies of Europe and of Asia encamp in the plains of Palestine; they had also seen them engage. Their imagination was inflamed by the sumptuous equipages, gorgeous banners, armorial cognizances, and grand pavilions, in which the champions of the cross strove to excel each other; but still more by the enthusiastic valour of the combatants. They had seen many wonderful things, and heard many marvellous tales; and they gave to the whole, on their return, the colouring of poetic fancy, heightened by all the exaggerations of Asiatic imagery, and filled with all the extravagancies of Asiatic fiction<sup>6</sup>.

THE ignorance and credulity of the age, the superstitious veneration paid to the heroes of the crusades,

6. Among these may be numbered dwarfs, giants, dragons, and necromancers; for I am unwilling to give up to the East, with a certain learned critic, the honour of the beautiful invention of fairies. See Warton, *Hist. English Poetry*, vol. i.

## PART I.

the frightful ideas formed of the infidels, and the distance of country, made the wildest conceptions of the poet be received with all the avidity of truth. The romance became the favourite mode of composition; and as every kingdom in Europe had its valorous knights, every kingdom soon had its romances: and every romance was nearly the same. Whether the scene was laid in ancient or in modern times, in Spain or in Syria, the same set of ideal beings were introduced, the same kind of plot was pursued, and the same manners were painted. A lady miraculously fair and chaste, and a knight more than humanly brave and constant, encountering monsters, and resisting the allurements of enchantresses, formed the ground-work of all these unnatural compositions.

MODERN poetry, however, did not long remain in this rude state. The Romance, which had its rise in the manners of chivalry, and which rendered them still more romantic, fell into disrepute as soon as those manners began to decline. It was succeeded by the allegorical tale; in which the virtues and vices, appetites and passions, took the place of human beings, and were made subservient to the design of the poet. This shadowy production was followed by the Italian epic; which, like the heroic poem of the Greeks, consists of a compound of mortal, immortal, and allegorical personages. Dante, Ariosto, and Tasso, are supposed to have carried it to perfection.

DANTE, the father of Italian poetry, flourished in the beginning of the fourteenth century. His *Inferno*, though full of extravagancies, is one of the greatest efforts of human genius. No poem, ancient or modern, affords more striking instances of the true sublime,

sublime, and true pathetic. He was succeeded by Petrarch and Boccaccio, who perfected the Italian language. LETTER  
LVI.

PETRARCH is the first modern poet who writes with classical elegance and purity. He appears to have been intimately acquainted with the beauties of the ancients, and to have studied their graces. His Canzoni, or lyric pieces, have often all the ease of Horace, and all the delicacy of Tibullus. In many of them, however, we discover a degree of that puerile conceit or affectation of wit, that perpetual effort to say something brilliant, which seems inseparable from Italian poetry; and the Platonic ideas with which all his passionate writings abound, though admired by his countrymen, as a decent veil to love, give to his celebrated sonnets to Laura too much the air of hymns to a divinity, to interest the human heart. His elegy on the death of that lady, whose story is well known,

7. Since the first publication of this work, Mr. Hayley has given to the world an *Essay on Epic Poetry*; a performance, whatever may be its poetical merit, which abounds with much good sense and sound criticism. And I am happy to find my opinion of the higher Italian poets supported by the suffrage of an author, who possesses so large a share of public favour. He thus concludes the character of Dante, after judiciously observing, that he raised to epic pomp his native tongue:

“ Unequal spirit! in thy various strain,  
 “ With all their influence light and darkness reign;  
 “ In thy strange verse and wayward theme alike  
 “ New forms of beauty and disorder strike;  
 “ Extremes of harmony and discord dwell,  
 “ The seraph’s music and the dæmon’s yell!  
 “ The patient reader, to thy merit just,  
 “ With transport glows, and shudders with disgust.  
 “ Thy falling spring from thy disastrous time;  
 “ Thy stronger beauties from a soul sublime,  
 “ Whose vigour burst, like the volcano’s flame,  
 “ From central darkness to the sphere of fame.”

*Essay on Epic Poetry, Epist. iii.*

## PART I.

has been much, and deservedly admired. It partakes of the faults, and of the beauties of all his compositions, as will appear from the following lines, translated by Sir William Jones, in the true spirit of the original.

“ Go, plaintive breeze, to Laura’s flow’ry bier,  
 “ Heave the warm sigh, and shed the tender tear.  
 “ There to the awful shade due homage pay,  
 “ And softly thus address the sacred clay;  
 “ Say, envied earth, that dost those charms infold,  
 “ Where are those cheeks, and where those locks of gold?  
 “ Where are those eyes, which oft the muse has sung?  
 “ Where those sweet lips and that enchanting tongue?  
 “ Ye radiant tresses, and thou, nectar’d smile,  
 “ Ye looks that might the melting skies beguile,  
 “ You robb’d my soul of rest, my eyes of sleep,  
 “ You taught me how to love, and how to weep.”

BOCCACCIO has great and various merit. He is chiefly known as a prose writer; and his prose compositions are superior, in purity of diction, to those of any other Italian author. But if his modesty had not led him to commit to the flames his poetical performances, from an apprehension of their inferiority to those of his master Petrarch, he might possibly have appeared no less considerable as a poet. One piece, which paternal tenderness preserved, and three more that escaped the general ruin, give reason for this opinion. The favourite piece is entitled the *Thesid*; and although it confounds, like all the poems of that age, ancient and modern manners, time, and ceremonies, it abounds with so many native beauties, as to leave criticism only room for admiration. It is of the heroic kind; and the fable is better constructed, and filled with more interesting incidents, than that  
of

of any other Italian poem of the same period<sup>8</sup>. It has been rendered into English, with alterations and additions, by Chaucer, under the name of the *Knights Tale*; and, as modernized by Dryden, is perhaps the most animated and truly harmonious piece of versification, of the same extent, in our language.

LETTER  
LVL

THE reputation of Boccaccio however, with the world in general, is chiefly founded on his *Decameron*; which is truly an enchanting work. It contains more good tales, of the gay and humorous-kind, than had then been produced by all former writers, ancient or modern. The most celebrated moderns, in that walk, have indeed borrowed from it their best pieces. Chaucer and Fontaine, though they lived at almost three hundred years distance from each other, are equally indebted to the *Decameron*. Those tales of Boccaccio, which may be considered as the most early gleanings of popular anecdote, are the first modern compositions that give us any just idea of the manners of domestic life; and both the style in which they are related, and the subjects which they unfold, prove that civilization was then in an advanced state in Italy.

BUT Italy was not the only country where civilization had made advances. The English court was, in that age, the most splendid in Europe, and one of the most polished. Thither many accomplished foreigners resorted, to behold the grandeur, and to enjoy the bounty of the third Edward. The spoils of France swelled the pomp of England in his reign; while a cap-

8. "The gay Boccaccio tempts the Italian Muse  
"More varied notes and different themes to chuse;  
"Themes which her voice had dar'd not yet to sound,  
"Valour's heroic feats by beauty crown'd."

Id. Ibid.

## PART I.

tive king, and his unfortunate nobles, civilized its manners, by accustoming his haughty and insolent barons to the exercise of mutual complaisance. Edward III. himself, and his illustrious son, the Black Prince, were the examples of all that was great in arms, or gallant in courtesy. They were the patrons and the mirrors of chivalry. The stately castle of Windsor, built in this illustrious reign, saw the round table of king Arthur restored, and the order of the Garter instituted; that glorious tribute to gallantry, and sacred badge of honour. Tilts, tournaments, and pageants, were constantly exhibited; and with a magnificence formerly unknown.

THE ladies, who thronged the court of Edward, and crowded to such spectacles, arrayed in the richest habits, were the judges in those peaceful, though not always bloodless combats; and the victorious knight, in receiving from the hand of beauty the reward of his prowess, became desirous of exciting other passions beside that of admiration. He began to turn his eyes from fancy to the heart. He aspired at an interest in the seat of the affections. Instead of the cold consent of virtue, he sought the warm return of love; instead of acquiescence, he demanded sensibility. Female pride was roused at such a request: assiduities and attentions were employed to soothe it; and nature and custom, vanity and feeling, were long at war in the breast of woman. During the course of this sentimental struggle, which had its rise in a more rational mode of thinking, which opened more freedom of intercourse, and terminated in our present familiar manners, the two sexes mutually polished each other; the men acquired more softness and address, the women more knowledge and graces.

IN

IN a reign of so much heroism and gallantry, the Muses were not likely to sleep. Jeffery Chaucer, the father of English poetry, was the brightest ornament of Edward's court. He added to a lively genius and learned education, a thorough knowledge of life and manners. He was perfectly a man of the world; and frequently visited France and Italy, and sometimes under the advantage of a public character. He had studied the Italian and Provençal poets, was intimately acquainted with both languages, and attempted successfully all the kinds of poetry then in use. His translation of the *Theïd* of Boccace, I have already mentioned. He also translated, and greatly improved, the famous allegorical poem, called the *Romanace of the Roze*, written by William of Lorris and John of Meun, two celebrated French poets of those times: and he composed the *Canterbury Tales* after the model of the *Decameron*. They abound with much rue humour and pleasantry; and, though chiefly borrowed, entitle their author to a distinguished rank among the writers of his age. The Prologues, in particular, which are wholly his own, contain a vein of moral satire that has not hitherto been exceeded.

LETTER  
LVL.

CHAUCER, however, had many disadvantages to struggle with, from which his cotemporaries were in a great measure free. William the Conqueror had attempted to extirpate the English tongue. The Norman language was ordered to be used in all public writings, and taught in all public schools. It was also the dialect of the court. That badge of slavery was only abolished by Edward III. It had continued almost three hundred years. Chaucer had therefore to create, or at least to form a new dialect. This circumstance ought always to be attended to in contemplating the writings of our venerable bard; as it alone



## PART I.

alone can account for that prodigious disparity observable, after all his diligence, between the progress of English manners, and of the English language. Had things continued to proceed in their natural order, Chaucer's style would now have been nearly as intelligible as that of Shakspeare.

BUT this bright dawn of English literature and English refinement, was deeply obscured by the civil wars that followed, and which continued, with little interruption, till the accession of Henry VII. During that long period of anarchy, genius went to decay; and the animosities of faction had rendered the manners of the people almost altogether savage. The severity of Henry's temper and government was little calculated to promote either letters or politeness; and the religious disputes, which took place under the reign of his son, where a new bar in the way of civilization. Chaucer had no successor worthy of himself, till the days of Elizabeth.

LIKE circumstances obstructed the progress of literature in France, till the reign of Francis I. of whom I shall afterwards have occasion to speak, and who is deservedly styled the Father of the French Muses. *Chants Royaux, Balades, Rondeaux, and Pastorales*, had taken place of the Provençal poetry, about the beginning of the fourteenth century; but Froissart, who cultivated with success this *New Poetry*, as it was called, cannot be considered as equal to William of Lorris or John of Meun. The *Romance of the Rose* was still the finest French poem.

GENIUS, in the mean time, continued to advance, with giant strides, in Italy. A succession of great poets followed Dante in the highest walk of the Muse;

at

length appeared Ariosto and Tasso, the glory of  
sixteenth century, and whose celebrated works  
supposed to contain all that is excellent in poetry.  
c *Orlando* of Ariosto is a wonderful production.  
s formed upon the Gothic plan, if it can be said  
have any, and consequently is wild and extrava-  
nt; but it abounds with so many, and such various  
uties, that, whether considered as a whole or in  
ts, it commands our fondest admiration<sup>9</sup>. The  
*usalem* of Tasso is a more classical performance. It  
onstructed after the Grecian model: and adds to  
interesting and happily conducted fable, a number  
striking and well drawn characters, all operating to  
end, together with a profusion of beautiful ma-  
nery, affecting situations, sublime images, and bold  
criptions<sup>10</sup>. Voltaire prefers the first to the *Odyssey*,  
d the second to the *Iliad* of Homer; but you, I hope,  
ve a juster taste of solid elegance, and of what

9. " High in mid air, between the moon and earth,  
" The bard of pathos now, and now of mirth,  
" Pois'd with his lyre between a Griffin's wings,  
" Her sportive darling, Ariosto sings.  
" As the light cloud, whose varying vapours fly,  
" Driven by the zephyr of the evening sky,  
" Fixes and charms the never-wearied view,  
" By taking ev'ry shape and ev'ry hue;  
" So, by Variety's supreme controul,  
" His changeful numbers seize the willing soul."

Hayley, *Essay on Epic Poetry*, Epist. iii.

10. After having characterized Ariosto, Mr. Hayley proceeds thus,  
perfect conformity with the text;

- " Of chaster fire a rival name succeeds,  
" Whose bold and glowing hand religion leads;  
" In solemn accent and in sacred state,  
" With classic lore and Christian zeal elate,  
" Sweetly pathetic and sublimely strong,  
" Tasso begins his more majestic song;  
" The Muse of Sion, not implor'd in vain,  
" Guides to th' impassion'd soul his heavenly strain."

Id. *ibid.*

**PART I.** is truly great in nature and in poetry, than to be swayed by such an opinion.

THE progress of genius in Italy, however, during this period, was not confined to poetry; and still less to one species of it. Petrarch and Boccaccio had their successors, as well as Dante. The dramatic talent began to disclose itself. Theatrical representation was revived. Both tragedy and comedy had been attempted with success before the middle of the fifteenth century: but that musical drama, which has long been so universal in Italy, and which in excluding too often nature and probability, has enlarged the bounds of harmony, was yet in its infancy.

MUSIC is one of the first sciences that is cultivated, and the last that is perfected in any country. The rude tale of the bard is accompanied with the wild notes of his voice and harp, in order to atone for his want of ideas, and to engage attention; but as fable becomes more extensive and rich, the legendary poet disdains to court the ear with any thing but the harmony of his numbers. He relies for interest solely on the powers of imagination and sentiment; and these, without any adventitious aid, produce their effect upon a people civilized, but not corrupted. The dramatic writer, in like manner, obtains his end, for a time, by the happy disposition of plot, the force of dialogue, and the strength and variety of his characters. But in proportion as mankind become more refined, they become more effeminate; and the luxury of harmony is found necessary to give to theatrical representation its proper influence. Then, and not till then, does the musical science attain perfection; and then poetry begins to decline. Every thing is sung;

lung; every thing is composed to be warbled through the eunuch's throat, and sense is sacrificed to sound.

LETTER  
LVI.

A SIMILAR observation may be extended to history. The deeds of the hero are the first object of human curiosity; yet mankind, in almost every country, have ceased to act with dignity, before their actions have been properly recorded. Truth appears flat and insipid to a people inclined to wonder, and wonder is the predominant passion of all uncivilized nations. Fiction is called in to gratify it; and fable is, for a time, received as history. But when men come to be more employed about political objects, they become more desirous of being informed than amazed: they wish to know the real actions of their ancestors, and the causes and the consequences of such actions. The historian takes advantage of this disposition of mind to procure admission to his labours; but as it is more difficult to ascertain facts than to assume them, and easier to assign motives of action, and deduce incidents ingeniously from them, than to trace the motives of men in their actions, and give to truth such a degree of colouring as will make it interesting, without rendering its validity suspected, history has every where been later in attaining perfection than the highest works of imagination.

ITALY had at last her historians, and excellent ones. Machiavel successfully courted the comic muse, unfolded the principles of a dark and pernicious policy, and digested the annals of his native country with all the discernment of Tacitus; while Guicciardini, a more amiable writer, related the transactions of his own times with the elegance and exactness of Thucydides.

PHILO-

## PART I.

PHILOSOPHY was only wanting in the sixteenth century, to bring Italy within the line of comparison with ancient Greece, when Greece was in her glory. A number of independent and free states vied with each other in all the elegant and commercial arts; in wealth and in luxury, in manners and in talents, in pomp and in power. Proud of her privileges, and of her liberal acquisitions, she looked down with contempt upon every other country, and branded every other people with the name of barbarians. Two great monarchs, like those of Persia and Macedon, were contending who should be her master. She wanted only the lights of philosophy to render the parallel complete. Bewildered in the mazes of scholastic reasoning, or lost in the dreams of perverted Platonism, her sages were still alike ignorant of the system of man and of the universe. And before they could know either, it was necessary that the veil of superstition should be rent; that mankind, beholding the puppet to which they had kneeled, and by which they had been overawed, might fearlessly look through the range of nature, and contemplate its physical and moral order.

## LETTER LVII.

*The Progress of NAVIGATION, and particularly among the PORTUGUESE. A short Introduction to the History of PORTUGAL. The Discoveries and Settlements of the PORTUGUESE on the Coast of AFRICA, and in the EAST-INDIES, by the Cape of GOOD HOPE. The Discovery of AMERICA by the SPANIARDS; the Settlement of the WEST INDIES, and the Conquest of MEXICO and PERU, together with some Reflections on the moral and political Consequences of these great Events.*

**F**ROM the arts that polish nations, my dear Philip, let us turn our eyes more particularly toward those that aggrandise them; which supply the wants of one people with the superfluities of another, and make all things common to all. Such are navigation and commerce. By these, and the arts to which they gave birth, the Phœnicians and Carthaginians crowded with cities their barren shores, and attained the first rank among ancient nations; by these, in later times, the Venetians and Dutch, struggling from dirt and sea-weed, crowned with palaces their lakes and marshes, and became, in different æras, the most opulent and powerful people in Modern Europe; by these Britain now governs the ocean, and gives law to the opposite extremities of the globe, at the same time that she wafts from pole to pole, the luxuries and the conveniencies of life<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
LVII.

THE navigation of Europe, at the beginning of the fifteenth century, though much improved since the

1. This letter was written before the revolt of our American colonies.

age of Charlemagne, was chiefly confined to the Mediterranean and Baltic seas, and was still little more than what is now called *coasting*. Flanders was the great theatre of commerce. Thither, as I have already had occasion to observe, the Italian states conveyed from the ports of Egypt, the precious commodities of the East: and thither the Hanseatic merchants carried from the shores of the Baltic, the naval stores, and other rude merchandise of the North. To this common mart all European nations resorted. Here they sold or exchanged the produce of their several countries, and supplied themselves with what they wanted, without dreaming of new ports, or suspecting that the system of commerce could be altered. Dantzick, Lisbon and Alexandria continued to mark the limits of practical navigation; when the enlightened and enterprising genius of Don Henry of Portugal extended the views of the mariner, and emboldened him to pilot the Atlantic, or Great Western Ocean. But before I speak of that prince, and the discoveries which he accomplished, I must say a few words of his country, which I have hitherto considered only as an appendage of Spain.

PORTUGAL, which forms the western coast of the southern peninsula of Europe, had no existence as a separate state till towards the close of the eleventh century. About that time Alphonso VI. king of Castile and Leon, having conquered from the Moors the northern provinces of the present kingdom of Portugal, bestowed them, together with his natural daughter, upon Henry of Burgundy, a noble volunteer, who had assisted him in his wars. Henry took only the title of count; but his son Alphonso, having recovered other provinces from the Moors, assumed

furnished the regal dignity in 1139. The kings of Portugal, like those of Spain, long spent their force in combating the Moors, and had no connexion with the rest of Europe. A detail of those barbarous wars would be equally void of instruction and amusement. I shall therefore only observe, that the succession continued uninterrupted in the line of Burgundy, till the death of Ferdinand, in 1383; when John of Castile, who had married the infanta of Portugal, claimed the crown, as the king had left no male issue. But the states of Portugal, after an interregnum of eighteen months, gave it to John, natural brother of their deceased sovereign, and at that time regent of the kingdom<sup>2</sup>.

LETTER  
LVII.

A. D. 1385.

THIS John, surnamed the Bastard, no less politic than enterprising, proved worthy of his new dignity. He was the first European prince who formed a respectable navy; which he employed, with equal success, in annoying his enemies, and in protecting his subjects. He took Ceuta from the Moors, and overawed the states of Barbary during his whole reign. He had several sons, who all signalized themselves by their valour and abilities; but more especially the third, Don Henry, whose bold and enlightened genius, assisted by the reports of travellers, led him to project discoveries in the Western Ocean.

A. D. 1414.

THIS amiable prince, who joined the virtues of a hero and a patriot to the knowledge of a philosopher, turned to use that astronomy which the Arabs had preserved. He had a considerable share in the invention of the Astrolabe, and first perceived the advantage that might be drawn from the direction of the

2. Neufville, *Hist. Gen. de Portug.*



## PART I.

- magnetic needle to the North; which, though already known in Europe, had not hitherto been employed with any success in navigation. He established an observatory at Sagres, near Cape St. Vincent, where many persons were instructed in astronomy and the art of sailing. The pilots formed under his eye only doubled Cape Non, long supposed an insurmountable barrier, but advanced as far as Cape Bajadore, and in their return discovered the island of Madeira. Other pilots, yet more bold, were sent. They doubled Cape Bajadore, Cape Blanco, Cape Verd, and at last Cape Sierra Leona, within eight degrees of the line, before the death of Henry. In the course of these voyages, the Azores and Cape de Verd islands had been discovered, and the vine and the sugar-cane introduced into the island of Maderia, and there cultivated with success.

- UNDER the reign of John II. a prince of the most profound sagacity and most extensive views, who made Lisbon a free port, the Portuguese prosecuted their discoveries with equal ardour and success. Captain Bartolomeu Dias, by sailing round the river Zaire, on the other side of the line, conducted them to the kingdom of Congo, in the interior of Africa, where they made easy conquests, and established an advantageous commerce. Captain Vasco da Gama passed the extreme point of Africa, to which he gave the name of the *Stormy Cape*; but the King, who more fully perceived the importance of that discovery, styled it the *Cape of Good Hope*.

- EMMANUEL I. pursued the great projects of his predecessors. He sent out a fleet of four ships, under the command of Vasco de Gama, a noble Portuguese, in order to complete the passage to India by sea.

admiral possessed all the knowledge and talents necessary for such an expedition. After being assailed by tempests, encircling the eastern coast of Africa, and ranging through unknown seas, he happily arrived at the city of Callicut on the coast of Malabar, or the higher part of the western side of the great peninsula of India<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
LVII.

A. D. 1498.

CALICUT was at that time the emporium of Indostan. Thither the Arabs resorted for all the rich products and precious manufactures of the East. These they carried in ships to the ports of the Red Sea, and sold to the Italian merchants from Alexandria. This information Gama received at Melinda, on the coast of Zanzibar, the most eastern part of Africa, where he had touched; and engaged a pilot, who conducted him into the harbour of Calicut, when the trade was at its height. Here he fortunately met with a native of Barbary, named Monzaida, who understood the Portuguese language, and whose admiration of that people over-balanced the prejudices of religion and country. This admiration determined Monzaida to do every thing in his power to serve strangers, who un-derstood themselves to him without reserve. He procured Gama an audience of the Samorin or emperor, who received him very favourably; and a treaty of commerce was set on foot in the name of the king of Portugal. But this negotiation, when almost completed, was broke off by the insinuations of the Arabs. Jealous of their lucrative trade, they represented so strongly the danger of such an alliance, and the ambition of the Portuguese, that the Samorin took the un-derstanding resolution of putting to death those bold na-

1. *Hist. Gen. des Voyages*. tom. i.

PART I. **vigators, whom he had lately treated with kindness,**  
 and whose friendship he seemed to desire.

A. D. 1498.

INFORMED of his danger by the faithful Monzaida, Gama sent his brother on board the fleet. "Should you hear," said he, "of my death or imprisonment, I prohibit you, as your commander, either to attempt to release me or to avenge my fate. Set sail immediately and inform the king of the success of our voyage. I am happy in having performed his orders, and discovered a passage to India for Portugal."

FORTUNATELY, however, matters were not pushed to that extremity. Gama lived to carry to Portugal the news of his own success. The Samorin permitted him to join his fleet, and he departed soon after for Europe.

No language can express the joy of the Portuguese on the return of Gama to Lisbon. They saw themselves, by one daring enterprize, in possession of the richest commerce in the world; and no less superstitious than avaritious, they flattered themselves with the project of extending their religion along with their dominion.

THE pope farther encouraged this hope. Glad of an occasion of asserting his universal sovereignty, he granted to the Portuguese all the countries which they had discovered, or should discover in the East, on condition that they should there plant the catholic faith. The whole nation was seized with the enthusiasm of conversion and of conquest. They presented themselves in crowds to man the new fleet destined for India; and thirteen ships sailed, as soon as the

4. *Faria Sousa, Port. Asia, vol. i.*

season

season would permit, from the Tagus to Calicut, under the command of Alvarez de Cabral.

LETTER  
LVII.

A. D. 1500.

THIS admiral in his passage keeping out to sea, in order to avoid the calms on the coast of Africa, and the storms which had been met with in doubling the Cape of Good Hope, discovered the rich country now called Brazil, to which he gave the name of the *Land of the Holy Cross*. He took possession of it in the name of the king his master, and proceeded on his voyage. When he arrived at the coast of Malabar, the Samorin made him an offer of friendship, and invited him to Calicut, where he had an audience of that Indian prince, and was permitted to open a magazine of commerce. But this good understanding was of short duration. The Arabs again found means to poison the mind of the Samorin: the admiral did not behave with the greatest discretion: mutual jealousies took place, mutual fears, and mutual injuries. At last the inhabitants of Calicut rose, murdered fifty Portuguese, and burnt their magazine. This act of hostility did not escape unpunished. Cabral, in revenge of such a breach of faith, and such undermining perfidy, destroyed all the Arabian vessels in the port, beat down great part of the city, and left it in flames<sup>1</sup>.

AFTER this second rupture with the Samorin the measures of the Portuguese in India were totally changed. The peaceful system of Gama was laid aside: the maxims of mutual advantage gave place to those of violence, of force, and of fear; and commerce was established by the sword. Cabral, on

1. Masani, *Hist. Indica*. lib. ii. cap. iv.

## PART I.

- leaving Calicut, entered into a negociation with the kings of Cochin, Cananor, Onor, Culan, and other Indian princes, who were tributaries of the Samorin, and desirous of independency. This love of freedom procured the Portuguese the sovereignty of Malabar, and the trade of India. Cabral promised those deluded princes support, and carried their ambassadors to the court of Lisbon, where such political steps were taken as rendered success infallible. A force was sent out sufficient to combat the Samorin. But no prince could obtain the protection of Portugal without first acknowledging himself its vassal, permitting a fortress to be erected in his capital, and selling his commodities to its subjects at their own price. No strange merchant might load a cargo, till the Portuguese were served; nor any mariner ravage those seas, but with their passports. They were the terror and admiration of the East, the wonder and envy of the West. All European merchants soon resorted to Lisbon for Indian commodities; because they could there purchase them much cheaper than at Venice, or any other mart to which they were brought by the way of Egypt. And, happily for Portugal, the Venetians were then sinking under the pressure of the league of Cambray.

A.D. 1501.

A.D. 1502.

A.D. 1503.

In order to secure and render perpetual these invaluable advantages, the chief command in India was given to Alphonso Albuquerque, a man of singular sagacity and penetration, and equally distinguished by his military and political talents. Albuquerque was no sooner invested with the government, than he began to form the most extensive projects; many of which he executed, and with a facility that is altogether incredible. The Arabs settled in India, and their associates, he had long been sensible, were the only

power in the East that the Portuguese had to fear. These traders had secretly entered into a league with the Samorin, the Sultan of Egypt, and the Venetians, who were gainers by their commerce, and whose interest it was to destroy the trade of Portugal. The furnishers of the caravans, and navigators of the Red Sea, were the natural enemies of the circum-navigators of the Cape. Albuquerque saw it early, while a private commander. He had therefore done every thing in his power to ruin their settlements on the coast of Arabia, and their united naval force had received a signal overthrow in the Indian Ocean. He now extended his views: he projected nothing less than the conquest of Ormus in the Persian gulf, and of Aden at the mouth of the Red Sea; where Portuguese squadrons stationed, might command the trade of Persia and of Egypt.

LETTER  
LVII.

A. D. 1508.

THE immediate execution of these projects would at once have proved fatal to the commerce of the Arabs and their allies; but Albuquerque, upon mature deliberation, perceived the necessity of establishing the Portuguese more fully on the coast of Malabar, before he divided his forces. He accordingly burnt Calicut, which had long been a thorn in the side of his countrymen; and observing, that the Portuguese had yet no good port in a wholesome air, where they might refit their ships and recruit their seamen, after the fatigues of the European voyage, he resolved to procure one. He found that Lisbon had need of Goa.

A. D. 1509.

GOA, which rises to view in the form of an amphitheatre, is situated towards the middle of the coast of Malabar, in an island detached from the continent by two branches of a river, that throws itself into the

Q4

sea

## PART I.

sea at some distance from the city, after having formed beneath its walls one of the finest harbours in the world. It properly belonged to the king of Decan; but a Moor, named Idalean, to whom the government of it had been entrusted, had rendered himself its sovereign. While this usurper was occupied on the continent, Albuquerque appeared before the city, and carried it by assault<sup>6</sup>. It was afterwards recovered, but soon retaken: and Goa became the capital of the Portuguese empire in India.

A.D. 1510.

ALBUQUERQUE, whose ambition was boundless, attempted next to establish the Portuguese on the coast of Coromandel. With this view he made an attack upon Malacca, situated near the straits of Singapore, one of the richest cities in India, and the best adapted for commerce. It was the centre of the trade between Japan, China, the Spice-Islands, and the other Indian ports. When Albuquerque appeared before Malacca, he found it in a posture of defence: and a new obstacle conspired to retard his progress. His friend Araujo was there a prisoner, and threatened with death the moment the city should be besieged. Deliberating how to act, while the sentiments of friendship and ambition, perhaps of duty, struggled in his breast, he received the following billet from Araujo: "Think only of the glory and advantage of Portugal: if I cannot be an instrument of your victory, let me not retard it." The place was carried by storm, after an obstinate defence, and several changes of fortune. The Portuguese found in it an immense booty, both in treasure and precious commodities. Albuquerque, whose heart was superior to the charms

6. Lafitau, *Hist. du Cong. des Port. Hist. Gen. des Voyages*, tom. I.

7. *Ibid.*

old, erected a citadel to secure his conquest, and  
 turned to Goa. LETTER  
 LVII.

THE friendship of the Portuguese was now courted  
 the Samorin, Idalcan, and all the most formidable  
 ian princes, who offered to permit fortresses to be  
 lt, and factories to be established in any part of  
 ir dominions. Albuquerque did not fail to profit  
 these offers; and judging that the season was now  
 ived for giving the final blow to the Arabian  
 ommerce in the East, he embarked in his original  
 jects, the conquest of Aden and Ormus.

IN his attempt upon Aden, which was then the key  
 Egypt, Albuquerque miscarried; but he committed  
 many ravages on the coasts of the Red Sea, and in  
 straits of Babelmandel, as entirely ruined the com- A. D. 1513.  
 rce of the Arabs and Egyptians. He was more  
 cessful in his expedition against Ormus, at that  
 e the most opulent and splendid city in the East.  
 appears to have been nothing inferior to what we  
 told of ancient Tyre, either in wealth or in splen-  
 our, in industry or in pleasure: and, like Tyre, it  
 as seated in a barren isle. Like Tyre, it seemed  
 ly to have been disjoined from the land, that it  
 ight become queen of the sea. It was one of the  
 reatest marts in the universe. But its voluptuous in-  
 abitants were little able to withstand the impetuous  
 and hardy valour of the Portuguese. Albuquerque A. D. 1515.  
 on made himself master of the place, and had the  
 ounour of there receiving an embassy from the king  
 Persia<sup>s</sup>.

THE reduction of Ormus, which was the last en-  
 rprize of this truly great man, together with the pos-

k. Guyon, *Hist. des Ind. Orient.* tom. i. *Hist. Gen. des Voyages*, tom. i.  
 session



PART I.  
A.D. 1515.

session of Goa and Malacca, gave perfect security to the Portuguese commerce in India. His successors afterwards extended it into China and Japan; but it was never more respectable than under Albuquerque. Yet this founder of his country's greatness died in disgrace, and of a broken heart, if ever any man may be said to have done so. That dauntless spirit which had encountered so many enemies, and surmounted so many dangers, could not support the frown of his prince. Emmanuel, become jealous of his glory, had listened to the insinuations of his enemies; had appointed another governor in his stead, and promoted those whom he had sent home as criminals. When Albuquerque received this intelligence, he sighed and said, "Can these things be so?—I incurred the hatred  
" of men by my love for the king, and am disgraced  
" by him through his prepossession for other men: to  
" the grave, unhappy old man! to the grave!—thy  
" actions will speak for themselves and for thee."

WHILE the Portuguese, my dear Philip, were thus employed in making acquisitions in the East, and appropriating to themselves the most lucrative commerce in the known world, the Spaniards had discovered a new continent toward the West. They had called into existence, as it were, another world; had opened new sources of trade, expanded new theatres of dominion, and displayed new scenes of ambition, of avarice, and of blood.

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS a Genoese navigator, who resided at Lisbon, and who had devoted himself to the study of astronomy, first conceived the idea of this new continent. Perfectly acquainted with the figure of the earth, the notion of the Antipodes,

9. Id. Ibid.

considered

considered by reason as a chimera, and by religion as impiety, appeared to him an incontestable fact. But if Columbus had not added the stout heart of a hero to the enlightened mind and persevering spirit of a philosopher, the world might still have been ignorant of his discoveries. The Genoese, his countrymen, whom he proposed to put in possession of another hemisphere, treated him as a visionary. He also unfolded his project, the grandest that human genius ever formed, in 1484, to the court of Portugal without success. He next laid it before the court of Spain; where he long suffered all that supercilious neglect which unsupported merit so often meets with from men in office, who are too apt to despise what they do not understand.

LETTER  
LVII.

FERDINAND and Isabella were then engaged in the conquest of Granada. The Spanish treasury was exhausted. But no sooner were the Moors subdued, than the ambitious mind of Isabella seemed to sympathise with the bold spirit of Columbus. She offered to pledge her jewels, in order to furnish him with a fleet. Three small vessels were fitted out by other means; and Columbus set sail from the port of Palos, in Andalusia, on the third of August, in the year 1492, in quest of a Western continent, with the title of Admiral and Viceroy of the Isles and Lands which he should discover &c.

TRANSCENDANT genius and superlative courage, experience almost equal difficulty in carrying their designs into execution, when they depend on the assistance of others. Columbus possessed both, he exerted

10. *Life of Columbus*, written by his son, chap. xv.

both;

**PART I.** both ; and the concurrence of other heads and other hearts were necessary to give success to either ; he had indolence and cowardice to encounter, as well as ignorance and prejudice. He had formerly been ridiculed as a visionary, he was now pitied as a desperado. The Portuguese navigators, in accomplishing their first discoveries, had always some reference to the coast : cape had pointed them to cape ; but Columbus, with no land-mark but the heavens, nor any guide but the Compass, boldly launched into the ocean, without knowing what shore should receive him, or where he could find rest for the sole of his foot. His crew murmured, they mutinied : they proposed to commit him to those waves with which he so wantonly sported, and return to Spain <sup>11</sup>.

THIS was a severe trial to the courage of Columbus, and Columbus only perhaps could have supported it. The enthusiasm of genius added strength to his natural fortitude. Cool and unconcerned himself about every thing but his great object, he had recourse to the softest language. He encouraged his men by fair promises, he deceived his officers by false reckonings. But all these expedients proving at last ineffectual, he demanded three days indulgence ; at the end of which, if he did not discover land, he promised to abandon his project. His request was granted ; and on the morning of the second day, being the 12th of October, to his inexpressible joy, he got sight of one of the Bahama islands, to which he gave the name of San Salvador. He took possession of it in the name of their Catholic Majesties, and proceeded on his course <sup>12</sup>.

<sup>11</sup>. Oviedo, *Hist. des Ind.* lib. iii. xxiii.

<sup>12</sup>. *Life of Columbus*, chap.

AFTER leaving San Salvador, now better known by the name of Guanahani, given to it by the natives, Columbus fell in with several other small islands; to one of which he gave the name of Isabella, in honour of his patroness, and to another that of Ferdinand, in compliment to the Catholic king. These he rightly judged to belong to that Western continent which he sought, and which he conjectured must reach to the Portuguese settlements in India: hence the name of *West-Indies*. At length he arrived at the Island of Cuba, where he entered into some correspondence with the natives, and particularly with the women, from whom he learned, that the gold ornaments which they wore, came from Bohio, a large island to the south-east. Thither Columbus steered: what heart does not pant after gold! he soon reached Bohio, or Hayti, as it was called by the natives, to which he gave the name of Espagnola, altered by us into Hispaniola. Here Columbus built a fort, and planted a little colony; after which, having taken a general survey of the island, and settled a friendly intercourse with the natives, he set out on his return to Spain, carrying along with him a sufficient quantity of gold to evince the importance of his discoveries, and some of those new people to complete the astonishment of Europe.

THE natives of Hispaniola, and indeed of all the islands which Columbus had visited, were an easy, indolent harmless race. They were of a copper colour. The men and the girls went entirely naked: the women had a mat of cotton wrapped about their loins. They had no hair on any part of the body but the head; a distinction which also is common to the natives of the American continent. They considered the Spaniards as divinities, and the discharge of the artillery as their thunder: they fell on their faces at the

## PART I.

found. The women, however, seem very early to have had less awful apprehensions of their new guests ; for they no sooner saw them, than they offered their favours, and courted their embraces as men 's. Some wicked wit may indeed say, that women from the beginning have been fond of superior beings ; and if we credit ancient story, they have often had good reason for such fondness. But be that as it may, it is certain that the women of Hispaniola were fonder of the Spaniards than of their husbands. Their husbands were not jealous of them. And in the arms of those wantons the companions of Columbus are said to have caught that fatal malady which has strewed with new thorns the paths of love ; and which, if human happiness is to be computed by the balance of pain and pleasure, will be found to be more than a counterpoise to all the gold of Mexico, the silver of Peru, and the diamonds of Brazil.

BUT let not this misfortune be brought as a charge against the great navigator. He could not know, that the new hemisphere contained new maladies : he could not foresee, that he should import into Europe a distemper that would poison the springs of life ; which would propagate disease from generation to generation, emasculate the vigour of nations, and multiply a thousand ways the miseries of mankind !—And happily for him, his enemies were ignorant of it at his return. He again entered the port of Palos on the 15th of March, 1493, after a voyage of seven months and eleven days, and was received with universal acclamations of joy. Those who had ridiculed his project, were the readiest to pay court to him. He was or-

dered into the presence of Ferdinand and Isabella, and desired to sit covered like a grandee of Spain. Royal favour beamed upon him with unremitting brightness, and the church loaded him with its benedictions. Superstition lent its sanction to those discoveries which had been made in its defiance. Pope Alexander VI. issued a bull, granting to the sovereigns of Spain all the countries which they had discovered, or should discover, an hundred leagues to the westward of the Azores. A fleet of seventeen sail was fitted out in a few months; and Columbus, vested with yet more extensive powers, and furnished with every thing necessary for discovery, for colonization, or for conquest, again committed himself to the waves in quest of a Western Continent <sup>14</sup>.

GREAT things were expected from this second voyage; and many new islands were discovered: yet it ended in general disappointment, misfortune and disgust. When Columbus arrived at Hispaniola, with a multitude of missionaries, soldiers and settlers, he found the fortress utterly ruined and the garrison all massacred. They had drawn upon themselves this untimely fate by their arrogance, licentiousness, and tyranny. These particulars he learned from the natives, accompanied with such marking circumstances, as left him no room to disbelieve them. He therefore entered once more into a friendly correspondence with those artless people, established a new colony, and built the town of Isabella; afterwards abandoned for that of St. Domingo, which became the capital of the island. His next care was to discover the mines; near which he erected forts, and left garrisons to protect the labourers. But neither the wisdom nor humanity of

<sup>14</sup> *Life of Columbus*, chap. xlii. xliii.

**PART I.** this great man were sufficient to preserve order among his followers, or to teach them fellow-feeling. They roused anew, by their barbarities, the gentle spirit of the natives; they quarrelled among themselves, they rose against their commander. Mortified by so many untoward circumstances, Columbus committed the government of the island to his brother Bartholomew, and returned to Spain in 1496, with some samples of gold dust and gold ore, pearls, and other precious products, after having a second time attempted in vain to discover a Western Continent <sup>15</sup>.

BARTHOLOMEW COLUMBUS suffered many hardships, and was on the point of sinking under the mutineers, before he received any assistance from the court of Spain; and although the great Christopher was able to clear himself of all the aspersions of his enemies, some years elapsed before he could obtain a third appointment for the prosecution of his favourite project. At last a small fleet was granted him, and he discovered the continent of America, near the mouth of the river Orinoco, on the first day of August in the year 1498. He carried off six of the natives, and returned to Hispaniola, convinced that he had now reached the great object of his ambition.

BUT while Columbus was employed in reducing to obedience the mutineers in that island, another navigator unjustly took from him the honour of the discovery of the Western Continent. The merchants of Seville having obtained permission to attempt discoveries, as private adventurers, sent out four ships in 1499, under the command of Alonzo de Ojeda, who had accompanied Columbus in his second voyage, assisted by Americus Vespucius, a Florentine gentle-

15. Herrera, dec. i. lib. iii.

man,

, deeply skilled in the science of navigation. His fleet touched on that part of the western continent already discovered by Columbus, whose track he followed; and Americus, who was a man of high address, as well as possessed of considerable literary talents, by publishing the first voyages on the subject, and other artful means, gave his name to the New World, in prejudice to the illustrious Genoese<sup>16</sup>. Men of this kind are now become sensible of the imposture, time has sanctified the error; and the great Western continent, or fourth division of the globe, so unknown to the inhabitants of Europe, Asia, and Africa, still continues to be distinguished by the name AMERICA.

HIS, however, was but a small misfortune in comparison of what Columbus was doomed to suffer. His enemies having prevailed at the court of Madrid, a governor was sent out to Hispaniola. The great discoverer and his brother were loaded with irons, and sent home in that condition, in different ships. The captain of the vessel on board of which the admiral was confined, approached his prisoner with profound respect, as soon as he was clear of the island, offered to strike off the fetters with which he was cruelly bound. "No Vallejo!"—replied Columbus with a generous indignation, "I wear these fetters in consequence of an order from my sovereigns. They shall find me as obedient to this, as to all their other injunctions. By their command I have been confined, and their command alone shall set me at liberty<sup>17</sup>."

Herrera, dec. i. lib. iv.

17. *Life of Columbus*, chap. xxxii.



## PART I.

THE Spanish ministry were ashamed of the severity of their creature, Bovadilla: Columbus was set at liberty on his arrival, and a fourth command granted him in 1502, for the prosecution of farther discoveries. But this expedition did not prove more fortunate than the former; for although Columbus touched at several parts of the American continent, where he exchanged trinkets for gold and pearls, to a considerable amount, he failed in an attempt to establish a colony on the river Yebra or Belem, in the province of Veragua, and lost every thing in his course home. He was shipwrecked on the island of Jamaica: his followers mutinied; and after being alternately in danger of perishing by hunger, or by violence, he arrived in Spain, in 1505, to experience a more severe fate than either<sup>18</sup>. Queen Isabella was dead at his return. With her all his hopes of future favour perished. The court received him coldly: His services were too great for humility: his proud heart disdained to sue, and his aspiring spirit could not submit to neglect. He retired to Valladolid, where he was suffered to fall a martyr to the ingratitude of that monarch, to whom he had given the West Indies, and for whom he had opened a passage into a richer and more extensive empire than was ever subdued by the Roman arms. He died with firmness and composure, on the 20th of May, 1506, in the fifty-ninth year of his age<sup>19</sup>.

THERE is something in true genius which seems to be essentially connected with humanity. Don Henry, Gama, and Columbus, prosecuted their discoveries upon the most liberal principles, those of mutual advantage: they fought to benefit, not to destroy their

<sup>18</sup>. *Life of Columbus*, chap. lxxix, xc, xci.  
Herrera, dec. i. lib. vi.

<sup>19</sup>. *Ibid.* chap. cviii.

species. After the death of Columbus, the maxims of Spain, like those of Portugal, became altogether bloody. Religion, avarice, and violence, walked hand in hand. The cross was held up as an object of worship, to those who had never heard of the name of Jesus; and millions were deliberately butchered, for not embracing tenets which they could not understand, not delivering treasures which they did not possess, or not suffering oppressions which man was never born to bear, and which his nature cannot sustain<sup>20</sup>.

THE leader who pursued these new maxims with least violence to humanity, and most advantage to his country, was Fernando Cortez, the conqueror of Mexico. Before the discovery of that rich and powerful empire, the Spanish colonies of Hispaniola, Cuba, Jamaica, and Porto Rico, were in a flourishing condition: frequent expeditions had been made to the continent, the settlements established in Castello del Oro and the isthmus of Darien. At last a descent was made in the gulf of Mexico, and information received of the opulence and grandeur of the emperor Montezuma and his capital. Velasquez, governor of Cuba, to whom this intelligence was communicated, immediately resolved upon the conquest of Mexico, and committed to Cortez, an officer hitherto more distinguished by his merit than his rank, the execution of the enterprize: and that gallant soldier accomplished, what appears too bold even for fiction, the overthrow of an empire that could send millions into the field, with so small a force as five hundred men<sup>21</sup>.

A.D. 1518.

20. *Relation de Desfrayc de las Indias*, par Bart. de las Casas.

21. De Solis, lib. ii. Herrera, dec. ii.

## PART I.

A success so unexampled, in an unknown country, must have been accompanied with many favourable circumstances, independent of the ability of the general, the courage of the troops, and even the superiority of weapons. Some of these we know. When  
 A.D. 1519. Cortez landed with his little army on the coast of Mexico, he met with a Spanish captive, who understood the dialect of the country, and whose ransom he obtained. He also formed an intimacy with a fair American named Marina, who soon learned the Castilian language, and became both his mistress and his counsellor. Her attachment communicated itself to all the Mexican women, who were generally neglected by their husbands for the most abominable of all debaucheries; that which perverts the animal instinct, confounds the distinction of sex, and defeats the leading purpose of nature. While the men opposed their naked breasts to the weapons of the Spaniards, fell by their blows, or fled from their fury, the women every where flew to their embrace; rioted in their arms, and rendered them all the services in their power.

To these fortunate occurrences may be added, the arrival of the ambassadors of Montezuma, who endeavoured, by presents, to engage the invaders to embark. The delay which this negotiation produced was of infinite service to Cortez. An army, instead of an embassy, on his first landing, might have ruined him. He replied, by his female interpreter, who best understood the Mexican tongue, that he was only an ambassador himself, and, as such, could not depart without an audience of the emperor. This answer put the ambassadors of Montezuma to a stand. They reported it to the emperor. He was alarmed at the request. They redoubled their presents: they employed

ployed persuasions, but to no purpose. Cortez was inflexible. At last they had recourse to threats, according to their instructions, and talked loudly of the forces and the treasures of their country. "These," said Cortez, turning to his companions, "these are what we seek; great perils and great riches." Stronger motives could not have been offered to needy adventurers, burning with the spirit of chivalry and the lust of plunder. Their leader saw conquest in their looks; and having now received the necessary informations; and prepared himself against all hazards, he boldly marched toward the seat of the empire."

LETTER  
LVII.  
A. D. 1519.

THE Spanish general, however, though so little diffident of his own strength, prudently negotiated with such princes and states as he found to be enemies of the Mexicans. Among these the most powerful was the republic of Tlascala. Cortez proposed an alliance to the senate. It divided upon the subject: but at last came to a resolution, not only to deny assistance to the Spaniards, but to oppose them. This resolution had almost proved fatal to Cortez and his enterprize. The Tlascalans were a brave people, and brought a formidable army into the field; but by the help of fire-arms, artillery, and cavalry, to these republicans above all things tremendous, the Spaniards, after repeated struggles, were enabled to humble them. They saw their mistake; entered into a treaty with Cortez, and were highly serviceable in his future operations.

THE invaders now advanced without interruption to the gates of Mexico. Montezuma was all irresolution and terror. That mighty emperor, whose treasures were immense, and whose sway was absolute;

22. Herrera, dec. ii. De Solis, lib. iii. iv.

## PART I.

A. D. 1519.

who was lord over thirty princes, each of whom could bring a numerous army into the field, was so intimidated by the defeat of the Tlascalans, that he wanted resolution to strike a blow in defence of his dignity. The haughty potentate who had ordered Cortez to depart his coasts, introduced him into his capital. Instead of making use of force, he had recourse to perfidy. While he professed friendship to the Spanish general, he sent an army to attack the Spanish colony, newly settled at Vera Cruz, and yet in a feeble condition. Cortez received intelligence of this breach of faith, and took one of the boldest resolutions ever formed by man. He immediately proceeded to the imperial palace, accompanied by five of his principal officers, and arrested Montezuma as his prisoner; carried him off to the Spanish quarters; made him deliver to punishment the officer who had acted by his orders, and publicly acknowledge himself, in the seat of his power, the vassal of the king of Spain <sup>23</sup>.

IN the height of these successes Cortez was informed that a new general, sent by the governor of Cuba, was arrived with a superior force to supplant him in the command, and reap the fruits of his victories. A. D. 1520. He marched against his rival: he defeated him; he took him prisoner; and the vanquished army, gained by the magnanimity and confidence of the victor, ranged themselves under his standard. Thus reinforced, by an occurrence which threatened the extinction of his hopes, he returned with rapidity to the city of Mexico, where he found full occasion for this accession of strength.

THE Mexicans were all in arms, and had surrounded the party, which Cortez had left to guard the em-

23. De Solis, lib. iv. Herrera, dec. ii.

ed it, and at one stroke of his lance tumbled out of his litter. The standard was seized, and consequence proved as Cortez had expected: the  
 cans threw down their arms, and fled with precipitation and terror <sup>26</sup>.

LETTER  
 LVII.  
 A.D. 1519.

is victory, and the assistance of the Tlascalans, raged Cortez to undertake the siege of Mexico: no other fortunate circumstance enabled him to effect his conquest. The new emperor Guatimozas taken prisoner in attempting to make his way out of his capital, in order to rouse to arms the provinces of his dominions. The metropolis surrendered, and the whole empire submitted to the  
 A.D. 1521.  
 rds.

A city of Mexico is represented as one of the striking monuments of human grandeur. Its squares, its sumptuous palaces, its magnificences, are pompously displayed by the Spaniards; but we must not give entire credit to those descriptions. The mechanical arts could not rise to great perfection in a country where the iron was unknown; nor could the sciences or arts be cultivated with success among a people ignorant of letters. The hieroglyphics, which the Mexicans are said to have made use of for communicating their ideas, could but imperfectly answer the end, in comparison of general symbols or signs; without a facile method of recording past transactions and of preserving our own thoughts and those of others, society can never make any considerable progress. The ferocious religion of the Mexicans is a proof of their barbarity; for although we only find absurd ceremonies prevail among po-

**PART I.** shewed himself on the ramparts, clad in his royal robes, and endeavoured to induce the multitude to retire. They at first seemed over-awed by the presence of their sovereign, and ready to obey his commands; but suddenly recollecting the pusillanimity of his behaviour, their love was changed into hate, their veneration into contempt, and a stone, launched by an indignant arm, at once deprived Montezuma of the empire and his life<sup>25</sup>.

THAT accident gave sincere concern to Cortez, and was a real misfortune to the Spaniards. The successor of Montezuma was a fierce and warlike prince, and resolutely determined to support the independency of his country. Cortez, after several ineffectual struggles, found himself under the necessity of quitting the city. The Mexicans harrassed him in his retreat; they took from him all his baggage and treasure; and they engaged him in the field, before he had time to recruit his forces, with an army of two hundred thousand men. The ensigns of various nations waved in the air, and the imperial standard of massy gold was displayed. Now was the time for heroism; and stronger proofs of it were never exhibited than in the valley of Otumba. "Death or victory!" was the charge, and the resolution of every Spaniard. The Mexicans were soon broken, and a terrible slaughter ensued; but fresh crowds still pressing on, supplied the place of the slain, and the Spaniards must have sunk under the fatigue of continual fighting, had not Cortez, by a happy presence of mind, put an end to the dispute, and rendered the victory decisive. He rushed, at the head of his cavalry, towards the imperial standard, closed with the Mexican general who

<sup>25</sup> Herrera, dec. ii. lib. viii. De Solis lib. iv. cap. xiv. xv.

guarded it, and at one stroke of his lance tumbled him out of his litter. The standard was seized, and the consequence proved as Cortez had expected: the Mexicans threw down their arms, and fled with precipitation and terror <sup>26</sup>.


LETTER  
LVII  
A. D. 1520

THIS victory, and the assistance of the Tlascalans, encouraged Cortez to undertake the siege of Mexico: and another fortunate circumstance enabled him to complete his conquest. The new emperor Guatimozin was taken prisoner in attempting to make his escape out of his capital, in order to rouse to arms the distant provinces of his dominions. The metropolis surrendered, and the whole empire submitted to the Spaniards. A. D. 1521.

THE city of Mexico is represented as one of the most striking monuments of human grandeur. Its spacious squares, its sumptuous palaces, its magnificent temples, are pompously displayed by the Spanish historians; but we must not give entire credit to those splendid descriptions. The mechanical arts could not be carried to great perfection in a country where the use of iron was unknown; nor could the sciences or liberal arts be cultivated with success among a people ignorant of letters. The hieroglyphics, which the Mexicans are said to have made use of for communicating their ideas, could but imperfectly answer that end, in comparison of general symbols or signs; and without a facile method of recording past transactions, and of preserving our own thoughts and those of others, society can never make any considerable progress. The ferocious religion of the Mexicans is another proof of their barbarity; for although we frequently find absurd ceremonies prevail among po-

<sup>26</sup>. De Solis, lib. iv. cap. xx.



**PART I.**  lished nations, we seldom or ever meet with those that are cruel. Civilized man has a feeling for a man. Human blood was profusely spilt upon the altars of the Mexican gods; and, if we believe the most respectable Spanish historians, human flesh (though only that of enemies) was greedily devoured both by the priests and the people. Enormous superstition and excessive despotism always go hand in hand. When the mind is enslaved, it is easy to enslave the body. Montezuma was the most absolute sovereign upon earth, and his subjects the most abject slaves.

THE conquest of Mexico was followed by that of Peru, another country in the New World abounding yet more in precious metals.

PERU had long been governed by a race of emperors, under the name of Incas, who were supposed to be the descendants of the Sun. The name of the Spanish invader was Pizarro, and that of the Inca in possession of the crown, Atahualpa. Alarmed at the ravages of the Spaniards, this prince agreed to an interview with their general, in order to settle the conditions of a peace. Though Pizarro solicited the conference, he had no thoughts but of war. The Inca, it is said, was not more sincere in his professions. He came to the place of meeting carried upon a throne of gold, and attended by upwards of ten thousand men: twenty thousand more are reported to have waited his signal; but for this report, or the insincerity of the Inca, there seems to have been no foundation in fact. All the Peruvians were richly dressed, and their arms glittered with gold and precious stones. The avarice of the Spaniards was inflamed. Pizarro disposed his followers, who did not exceed two hundred, in the most advantageous order, while Vincen-

ti Valverde, a Dominican friar, advanced toward Atahualpa, with a crucifix in one hand and a breviary in the other. He addressed to the Inca, by the help of an interpreter, a long discourse, unfolding the principles of the Christian faith, and pressing him to embrace that religion, and submit himself to the king of Spain, to whom the pope had given Peru. Atahualpa, who had listened with a good deal of patience, replied thus to his pious admonisher: "How extravagant is it in the pope, to give away so liberally that which doth not belong to him!—He is inferior you own, to God the Father, to God the Son, and to God the Holy Ghost: these are all your gods: and the gods only can dispose of kingdoms, I should like to be a friend to the king of Spain, who has sufficiently displayed his power by sending armies to such distant countries; but I will not be his vassal. I owe tribute to no mortal prince: I know no superior upon earth. The religion of my ancestors I venerate: and to renounce it would be equally absurd and impious, until you have convinced me it is false, and that yours, which you would have me embrace, is true. You adore a god, who died upon a gibbet; I worship the Sun, who never dies."

"VENGEANCE!"—cried Valverde, turning towards the Spaniards;—"vengeance, my friends!—kill these dogs, who despise the religion of the  
"crosses 27."

THE word of command was given; the artillery played; the musquetry fired; the cavalry spread confusion and terror; while Pizarro advanced, at the head of a chosen band, and seized the person of the

27. Benzoni, *Hist. Nov. Orb.* lib. iii. Herrera, dec. iii. Zarete, lib. iii. Garcilasso, lib. i.

**PART I.** the commodities of the East being chiefly purch  
with gold and silver.

THE mines of Mexico and Peru are necessary supply that drain. So far the discovery of America must be accounted a good, or at least the palliative of an evil. Besides, the colonies established on the continent, and in the islands of America, depend chiefly upon Europe for their manufactures, and furnish honest and comfortable maintenance to millions of our people, who must otherwise have wanted bread or have lived in the lowest state of wretchedness. In this view, America is favourable both to industry and population. These are solid advantages, and the superabundance of the precious metals alone could not have made Spain and Portugal overlook them. They are rich in their treasures; while other nations, profiting by their indolence, grow wealthy by supplying their wants. The labour of a people is the only desirable source of their riches, and the only certain road to their felicity; though mankind, in general, are ignorant as to suppose, that they should be happy without toil.

THE discovery of America has increased the labour of Europe, and consequently its happiness, collectively considered. It has also increased the number of the civilized part of the human species, by opening boundless regions for the planting of European colonies; which have greatly flourished in many parts, and supplied the inhabitants of the mother-country with a variety of commodities, formerly unknown, that contribute to the more comfortable enjoyment of life, and to the extension of trade. But the vices by which those colonies were generally corrupted, and the outrages which continue to be committed against the injured natives as often as they

present improvements in commerce and civilization. Commerce and civilization were fast advancing in Europe before the beginning of the sixteenth century; and this quarter of the globe would have been nearly in the situation in which we now find it, though no such discoveries had been made. We should not indeed have had so much specie, but we should have had less occasion for it: the price of labour would have been lower, and would have borne the same proportion to the price of provisions, which would have answered the purpose of a larger quantity of circulating money. Our resources in war would have been fewer; but our real strength might perhaps have been greater, as we should not have had occasion to colonize and combat at both extremities of the globe.

It must, however, be owned, That the passage by the Cape of Good Hope, in the first instance, has been of singular service to the general commerce of Europe. Our trade with India was formerly conducted by means of the Arabs, who, consequently, had a share in the profits: it is now entirely carried on by Europeans. European ships and European sailors, import the commodities of the East into our harbours. But in balance of this advantage, the new passage, by being open to every nation, has increased the taste for Indian commodities, and whetted the avarice of man. It has made the nations of Europe massacre one another in the South of Asia, and rob and murder the industrious natives, without feeling or remorse; while it has hurt the European manufacturer, by furnishing foreign fabrics of superior quality, at a lower price than he can afford to sell. It has encouraged a losing trade: for such, in general, that with India must be accounted; a trade which continues to drain Europe of its bullion and specie,

the

## L E T T E R LVIII.

*A general View of the Affairs of EUROPE from the Election of CHARLES V. in 1519, till the Peace of CAMBRAY, in 1529, including the Progress of the Reformation.*

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1519.

**T**HOUGH Maximilian could not prevail upon the German electors to chuse his grandson of Spain king of the Romans, he had disposed their minds in favour of that prince: and other circumstances, on the death of the emperor, conspired to the exaltation of Charles. The imperial crown had so long continued in the Austrian line, that it began to be considered as hereditary in that family; and Germany, torn by religious disputes, stood in need of a powerful emperor, not only to preserve its own internal tranquillity, but also to protect it against the victorious arms of the Turks, who, under Selim I. threatened the liberties of Europe. This fierce and rapid conqueror had already subdued the Mamalukes, a barbarous militia that had dismembered the empire of the Arabs, and made themselves masters of Egypt and Syria. The power of Charles appeared necessary to oppose that of Selim. The extensive dominions of the house of Austria, which gave him an interest in the preservation of Germany; the rich sovereignty of the Netherlands and Franche-Comté; the entire possession of the great and warlike kingdom of Spain, together with that of Naples and Sicily, all united to hold him up to the first dignity among Christian princes: and the New World seemed only to be called into existence that its treasures might enable him to defend

Christendom

Christendom against the Infidels. Such was the language of his partizans.

LETTER  
LVIII.

A.D. 1519.

FRANCIS I. however, no sooner received intelligence of the death of Maximilian than he declared himself a candidate for the empire; and with no less confidence of success than Charles. He trusted to his superior years and experience, with his great reputation in arms, acquired by the victory at Marignan, and the conquest of Milan. And it was further urged in his favour, that the impetuosity of the French cavalry, added to the firmness of the German infantry, would prove irresistible; and not only be sufficient, under a warlike emperor, to set limits to the ambition of Sweden, but to break entirely the Ottoman power; and prevent it from ever becoming dangerous again to Germany.

BOTH claims were plausible: The dominions of Francis were less extensive, but more united than those of Charles. His subjects were numerous; active, brave, lovers of glory and lovers of their king. These were strong arguments in favour of his power, necessary at this juncture; but he had no natural interest in the Germanic body; and the electors, hearing so much of military force on each side, became more alarmed for their own privileges than the common safety. They determined to reject both candidates, and offered the imperial crown to Frederic, named the Wise, duke of Saxony. But he, dazzled by the splendour of an object courted with so much eagerness by two mighty monarchs, rejected it with a magnanimity no less singular than great.

“IN times of tranquillity,” said Frederic, “we wish for an emperor who has no power to invade  
VOL. II. S “ our

## PART I.

A.D. 1519.

“our liberties; times of danger demand one, who  
 “is able to secure our safety. The Turkish ar-  
 “mies, led by a warlike and victorious monarch, are  
 “now assembling; they are ready to pour in upon  
 “Germany with a violence unknown in former ages.  
 “New conjunctures call for new expedients. The  
 “imperial sceptre must be committed to some hand  
 “more powerful than mine, or that of any other  
 “German prince. We possess neither dominions,  
 “nor revenues, nor authority, which enable us to  
 “encounter such a formidable enemy. Recourse must  
 “be had, in this exigency, to one of the rival mo-  
 “narchs. Each of them can bring into the field  
 “forces sufficient for our defence. But as the king  
 “of Spain is of German extraction, as he is a mem-  
 “ber and prince of the empire by the territories  
 “which descend to him from his grand-father, and  
 “as his dominions stretch along that frontier which  
 “lies most exposed to the enemy, his claim, in my  
 “opinion, is preferable to that of a stranger to our  
 “language, to our blood, and to our country<sup>1</sup>.”  
 Charles was elected in consequence of this speech.

THE two candidates had hitherto conducted their  
 rivalry with emulation, but without enmity. They  
 had even softened their competition by many expres-  
 sions of friendship and regard. Francis in particular  
 declared, with his usual vivacity, that his brother  
 Charles and he were fairly and openly suitors to the  
 same mistress: “The most assiduous and fortunate,”  
 added he, “will win her; and the other must rest  
 “contented<sup>2</sup>.” But although a generous and high-  
 minded prince, while animated by the hope of suc-

<sup>1</sup> Scard. *It. r. Germ. Script.* Seckend. *Comment.* Robertson, *Hist-Charles I.* book i.

<sup>2</sup> Guicciardini, lib. xiii.

cess, might be capable of forming such a philosophic resolution; it soon appeared that he had promised a moderation too refined for humanity, and which he was little able to practise. The preference was no sooner given to his rival than Francis discovered all the passions natural to disappointed ambition. He could not suppress his chagrin and indignation, at being balked in his favourite purpose, and rejected in the face of all Europe, for a youth yet unknown to fame. The spirit of Charles resented such contempt: and from this jealousy, as much as from opposition of interests, arose that emulation between those two great monarchs, which involved them in almost perpetual hostilities, and kept their whole age in agitation.

WHEN princes or private persons are resolved to quarrel, it is easy to find a brand of discord. Charles and Francis had many interfering claims in Italy; and, beside these obvious sources of contention and competition, the latter thought himself bound in honour to restore the king of Navarre to his dominions, unjustly seized by the crown of Spain. They immediately began to negotiate; and as Henry VIII. of England was the third prince of the age in power and in dignity, his friendship was eagerly courted by each of the rivals. He was the natural guardian of the liberties of Europe. Sensible of the consequence which his situation gave him, and proud of his pre-eminence, Henry knew it to be his interest to keep the balance even between the contending powers, and to restrain both, by not joining constantly with either. But he was seldom able to reduce his ideas to practice: he was governed by caprice more than by principle: the passions of the man were ever an over-match



## PART I.

A. D. 1519.

for the maxims of the king. Vanity and resentment were the great springs of all his actions; and his neighbours, by touching these, found an easy way to draw him into their measures.

ALL the impolitic steps in Henry's government, however, must not be imputed to himself: many of them were occasioned by the ambition and avarice of his prime minister and favourite, cardinal Wolsey. This man, who, by his talents and accomplishments, had risen from one of the lowest conditions in life to the highest employments, both in church and state, and who lived with regal splendour, governed the haughty, presumptuous, and intractable spirit of Henry with absolute ascendancy. Equally rapacious and profuse, he was insatiable in desiring wealth; vain and ostentatious, he was greedy of adulation; of boundless ambition, he aspired after new honours with an eagerness unabated by his former success. To these passions he himself sacrificed every consideration, divine and human; and whoever sought to obtain his favour, or that of his master, found it necessary also to sacrifice liberally to them.

FRANCIS was equally well acquainted with the character of Henry and of his minister. He had successfully flattered Wolsey's pride, by honouring him with particular marks of his confidence, and bestowing upon him the appellations of Father, Tutor, and Governor; and he had obtained the restitution of Tournay, by adding a pension to these respectful titles. He now solicited an interview with the king of England near Calais; in hopes of being able, by familiar conversation, to attach him to his friendship  
and

A. D. 1520.

and interest, while he gratified the cardinal's vanity, by affording him an opportunity of displaying his magnificence in the presence of two courts, and of discovering to the two nations his influence over their monarchs.

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1520.

POLITIC though young, Charles dreaded the effects of this projected interview between two gallant princes, whose hearts were no less susceptible of friendship than their manners were of inspiring it. Finding it impossible, however, to prevent a visit, in which the vanity of all parties was so much concerned, he endeavoured to defeat its purpose, and to pre-occupy the favour of the English monarch, and of his minister, by an act of complaisance still more flattering and more uncommon. Relying wholly upon Henry's generosity for his safety, he landed at Dover, on his way from Spain to the Low Countries. The king of England, who was on his way to France, charmed with such an instance of confidence, hastened to receive his royal guest; and Charles, during his short stay, had the address not only to give Henry favourable impressions of his character and intentions, but to detach Wolsey entirely from the interests of Francis. The tiara had attracted the eye of that ambitious prelate; and as the emperor knew that the papacy was the sole point of elevation, beyond his present greatness, at which he could aspire, he made him an offer of his interest on the first vacancy<sup>3</sup>.

ON the day of Charles's departure, Henry went over to Calais with his whole court, in order to meet Francis. Their interview was in an open plain between

3. Polyd. Virg. Holingshead. Herbert, *Hist. Henry VIII.* Fiddes, *Life of Wolsey*.

## PART I.

A.D. 1520.

Guînes and Ardres; where the two kings and their attendants displayed their magnificence with emulation and profuse expence, as procured it the name of the *Field of the Cloth of Gold*. Here He erected a spacious house of wood and canvas, first in London, on which, under the figure of an English archer, was inscribed the following motto: "He vails whom I favour!" alluding to his own political situation, as holding in his hands the balance of power between the Emperor and French monarch. Feats of chivalry, however, parties of gallantry, and such exercises as were in that age reckoned manly or elegant, rather than serious business, occupied the two courts during the time they continued together, which was sixteen days. And here I cannot help noticing a circumstance that strongly marks the manners of those times and their contrast to ours, if not their comparative civility. After the French and English wrestlers exercised their strength and agility, which, according to the phrase of the historian, afforded *excellent pastimes* to the kings of France and England, says Fleurbaey retired to a tent, where they drank together; and the king of England seizing the king of France by the collar, said, "My brother, I must wrestle with you" and attempted once or twice to *trip up his heels*; but the king of France, who was an *excellent wrestler*, threw him round, and threw him on the ground with violence. Henry wanted to renew the struggle, but was prevented <sup>4</sup>.

AFTER taking leave of this scene of dissipation the king of England paid a visit to the emperor Margaret of Savoy at Gravelines, and engaged to

4. *Mem. de Fleurbaey.*



**PART I.** **A.D. 1520.** lian, had freely promulgated his opinions, under the protection of the Elector of Saxony, to whom the vicariate of that part of Germany which is governed by the Saxon laws was committed, during the interregnum that preceded the election of Charles V. And these opinions were suffered to take root in different places, and to grow up to some degree of strength and firmness. But Leo X. though little skilled in such controversies, came at last to be alarmed at Luther's progress; and, convinced that all hopes of reclaiming him by forbearance were in vain, issued a bull of excommunication against him. His books were ordered to be burnt, and he himself was delivered over to Satan, as an obstinate heretic, if he did not, within sixty days, publicly recant his errors.

THIS sentence neither disconcerted or intimidated Luther. After renewing his appeal to a general council, he published remarks upon the bull of excommunication, and boldly declared the pope to be the Man of Sin, or Antichrist, whose appearance is foretold in the Revelations of St. John; declaimed against the tyranny and usurpations of the court of Rome with greater vehemence than ever, exhorted all Christian princes to shake off such an ignominious yoke, and boasted of his own happiness in being marked out as the object of ecclesiastical indignation because he had ventured to assert the rights of religion, and the mental liberty of mankind. Nor did he confine his contempt of the papal power to words alone. He assembled all the professors and students of the university of Wittemberg, and with great pomp and before a vast multitude of spectators, cast the volumes of the canon law, together with the bull of excommunication

excommunication, into the flames :—and his example was imitated in several other cities<sup>6</sup>.

LETTER  
LVIII.

A.D. 1520.

WHILE the credit and authority of the Roman pontiff were thus furiously shaken in Germany, an attack no less violent, and occasioned by the same causes, was made upon them in Switzerland. The Franciscans being entrusted with the sale of indulgencies in that country, executed their commission with the same unblushing rapaciousness, which had rendered the Dominicans so odious in Saxony. They proceeded, however, with uninterrupted success till they arrived at Zurich; where they received a mortal blow from Zuinglius, canon of that place, a man of extensive learning, uncommon sagacity, and heroic intrepidity of spirit. Animated with a republican boldness, and free from those restraints which subjection to the will of a prince, and perhaps a remnant of original prejudice, imposed upon the German reformer, he advanced with more daring and rapid steps to overturn the whole fabric of the established religion; and the pope's supremacy was soon denied in the greater part of Switzerland<sup>7</sup>.

SUCH was the state of the Reformation, when Charles V. arrived in Germany. No secular prince had yet embraced the new opinions; no change in the established forms of worship had been introduced, nor any encroachments made upon the possessions or jurisdiction of the clergy: a deep impression, however, was made upon the minds of the people; their reverence for ancient institutions and doctrines was shaken; and the materials were already scattered,

6. Seckend. *Comment. Luth. Oper.* vol. ii.  
7. *Reformat. en. Swiss.* liv. i.

7. Ruchart, *Hist. de*

which

**PART I.** which produced the conflagration that afterwards spread over all Europe. Charles saw the flames gathering; and, as he found it necessary to secure the friendship of Leo. X. he cited Luther to appear before the diet at Worms. Luther did not hesitate a moment about yielding obedience: he accompanied the herald who brought the emperor's letter and safe-conduct. "I am lawfully called to appear in that city," said he to some of his friends, who were anxious for his safety; "and thither I will go in the name of the Lord, though as many devils as tiles upon the houses were there assembled against me."

A.D. 1521.

HAD vanity and the love of applause, from which no human heart is free, been the sole principles by which Luther was influenced, his reception at Worms was such as he might have reckoned a full reward for all his labours. Vast crowds assembled to see him whenever he walked abroad; and his apartments were daily filled with princes and personages of the highest rank, who treated him with all the respect that is due to superior merit, but which is more particularly commanded by those who possess the power of directing the understanding and the sentiments of others. Rank or birth can receive no homage so flattering; for they can receive none so sincere, or which has so immediate a reference to those qualities, which men call their own. Luther was not, however, intoxicated: he behaved before the diet with equal decency and firmness. He readily acknowledged an excess of vehemence and acrimony in his controversial writings; but he refused to retract his opinions, till convinced of their falshood, or consent to their be-

ing tried by any other standard than the scripture. Neither threats nor entreaties could prevail on him to depart from this resolution. Some of the fathers therefore proposed to imitate the example of the council of Constance, in its proceedings relative to John Huf; to commit to the flames the author of this pestilent heresy, now in their power, and deliver the church at once from so dangerous an enemy: but the members of the diet refusing to expose the German integrity to fresh reproach by a second violation of public faith, and Charles being no less unwilling to bring a stain upon the beginning of his administration by such an ignominious measure, Luther was permitted to depart in safety. A few days after he left the city, a severe edict was issued in the emperor's name, and by authority of the diet, forbidding any prince to harbour him, and requiring all to concur in seizing his person, as soon as his safe-conduct was expired. But the elector of Saxony, his faithful patron, took him again, though secretly, under protection. Luther, in solitude, propagated his opinions; and Charles, for a time, found other matters to engage his attention.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A. D. 1521.

THE Spaniards, who were dissatisfied with the departure of their sovereign, whose election to the empire they foresaw would interfere with the administration of his own kingdom, and incensed at the avarice of the Flemings, to whom the direction of public affairs had been committed since the death of cardinal Ximenes, broke out into open rebellion. Several grandees, in order to shake off that oppression, entered into an association, to which they gave the name



**PART I.** of the Sancta Junta : and the sword was appealed  
**A. D. 1521.** as the means of redress. This seemed, to Francis  
 favourable juncture for reinstating the family of J  
 d'Albret, in the kingdom of Navarre. Charles  
 at a distance from that part of his dominions, and  
 troops usually stationed there had been recalled  
 quell the commotions in Spain. A French army,  
 der Andrew de Foix, speedily conquered Navar  
 but that young and inexperienced nobleman, dazi  
 with success, and pushed on by military ardour, v  
 tured to enter Castile. Though divided among the  
 selves, the Spaniards united against a foreign ener  
 routed his forces, took him prisoner, and recover  
 Navarre in a shorter time than he had spent in f  
 duing it.

HOSTILITIES thus begun in one quarter, betw  
 the rival monarchs, rapidly spread to another. T  
 king of France encouraged the duke of Bouillon  
 make war upon the emperor, and invade Luxembor  
 Charles, after humbling the duke, attempted to ei  
 France, but was repelled and worsted before Mezie  
 by the famous chevalier de Bayard; distinguis  
 among his coteremporaries by the appellation of  
*Knight without fear and without reproach*, and who uni  
 the talents of a consummate general to the punctili  
 honour and romantic gallantry of the heroes of chiv  
 ry. Francis broke into the Low Countries; whe  
 by an excess of caution, an error not natural to h  
 he lost an opportunity of cutting off the whole im  
 rial army; and, what was still greater misconduct,  
 disgusted the constable Bourbon, by giving the co  
 mand of the van to the duke of Alençon<sup>10</sup>.

10. *Œuvr. de Brantome*, tom. vi. *Mém. de Bellay*.

DURING these operations in the field, an unsuccessful congress was held at Calais, under the mediation of Henry VIII. It served only to exasperate the parties it was intended to reconcile. And a league was soon after concluded at Bruges, through the intrigues of Wolfsey, between the pope, Henry, and Charles, against France. Leo had already entered into a separate league with the emperor, and the French were fast losing ground in Italy<sup>11</sup>.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A.D. 1521.

THE insolence and exactions of marechal de Lautrec, governor of Milan, had totally alienated the affections of the Milanese from France. They resolved to expel the troops of that nation, and put themselves under the government of Francis Sforza, brother of Maximilian their late duke. In this resolution they were encouraged by the pope, who excommunicated Lautrec, and took into his pay a considerable body of Swiss. The papal army, commanded by Prosper Colonna, an experienced general, was joined by reinforcements from Germany and Naples; while Lautrec, neglected by his court, and deserted by the Swiss in its pay, was unable to make head against the enemy. The city of Milan was betrayed by the inhabitants to the confederates; Parma and Placentia were united to the ecclesiastical state: and of their conquests in Lombardy, only the town of Cremona, the castle of Milan, and a few inconsiderable forts remained in the hands of the French<sup>12</sup>.

LEO X. received the account of his rapid success with such transports of joy, as are said to have brought on a fever, which occasioned his death. The spirit of

11. Rymer, *Fed.* vol. xiii. Herbert, *Hist. Hen. VIII.*

12. Guicciardini, lib. xiv. *Mém. de Bellay.*

**PART I.** the confederacy was broken, and its operations suspended by that event. The Swiss were recalled : some other mercenaries were disbanded for want of pay : so that the Spaniards, and a few Germans in the emperor's service, only remained to defend the duchy of Milan. But Lautrec, who, with the remnant of his army, had taken shelter in the Venetian territories, destitute of both men and money, was unable to improve this favourable opportunity. All his efforts were rendered ineffectual by the vigilance and ability of Colonna and his associates.

**A. D. 1521.**

MEANTIME high discord prevailed in the conclave, Wolsey's name, notwithstanding all the emperor's magnificent promises, was scarcely mentioned there. Julio of Medicis, Leo's nephew, thought himself sure of the election ; when by an unexpected turn of fortune, Cardinal Adrian of Utrecht, Charles's preceptor, who at that time governed Spain in the character of viceroy, was unanimously raised to the papacy, to the astonishment of all Europe, and the great disgust of the Italians.

**A. D. 1522.**

FRANCIS, roused by the rising consequence of his rival, resolved to exert himself with fresh vigour, in order to wrest from him his late conquests in Lombardy. Lautrec received a supply of money, and a recruit of ten thousand Swiss infantry. With this reinforcement he was enabled once more to act offensively, and even to advance within a few miles of the city of Milan ; when money again failing him, and the Swiss growing mutinous, he was obliged to attack the Imperialists in their camp at Bicocca, where he was repulsed with great slaughter, having lost his bravest officers and best troops. All the Swiss that survived

ived immediately set out for their own country; and  
autrec despairing of being able to keep the field, re-  
red into France. Genoa, which still remained sub-  
Et to Francis, and which made it easy for him to ex-  
cute any scheme for the recovery of Milan, was soon  
ter taken by Colonna: the authority of the emperor  
ad his faction was every where established in Italy.  
The citadel of Cremona was the sole fortress that re-  
mained in the hands of the French <sup>13</sup>.

THE affliction of Francis, for such a succession of  
misfortunes, was augmented by the unexpected arri-  
val of an English herald, who, in the name of his so-  
vereign, declared war against France. The courage  
of this high-spirited prince, however, did not forsake  
him. Though his treasury was exhausted by expensive  
pleasures no less than by hostile enterprizes, he assem-  
bled a considerable army, and put his kingdom in a  
posture for resisting his new enemy, without abandon-  
ing any of the schemes which he was forming against  
the emperor. He was surprised, but not alarmed at  
such a denunciation.

WILLING to derive as much advantage as possible  
from so powerful an ally, Charles paid a second visit  
to the court of England in his way to Spain, where his  
presence was become highly necessary. And his suc-  
cess here exceeded his most sanguine expectations. He  
not only gained the entire friendship of Henry, who  
publicly ratified the treaty of Bruges, but disarmed  
his resentment of Wolsey, by assuring him of the pa-  
cific on Adrian's death; an event seemingly not di-  
stant, by reason of his age and infirmities. In conse-

13. Guicciardini, ubi sup.

**PART I.** *quence of these negotiations an English army invaded*  
**A. D. 1522.** *France, under the command of the earl of Surrey; who, at the close of the campaign, was obliged to retire with his forces greatly diminished, without being able to make himself master of one place within the French frontier. Charles was more fortunate than his ally. He soon quelled the tumults that had arisen in Spain during his absence.*

WHILE the Christian princes were thus wasting each other's strength, Solyman the Magnificent entered Hungary, and made himself master of Belgrade, reckoned the chief barrier of that kingdom against the Turkish power. Encouraged by this success, he turned his victorious arms against the island of Rhodes, then the seat of the knights of St. John of Jerusalem; and although every prince in that warlike age acknowledged Rhodes to be the principal bulwark of Christendom in the Levant, so violent was their animosity against each other, that they suffered Solyman without disturbance to carry on his operations against that city and island. Lisle Adam, the grand-master, made a gallant defence; but, after incredible efforts of courage, patience, and military skill, during a siege of six months, he was obliged to surrender the place, having obtained an honourable capitulation from the sultan, who admired and respected his heroic qualities<sup>14</sup>. Charles and Francis were equally ashamed of having occasioned, through their contests, such a loss to the Christian world; and the emperor, by way of reparation, granted to the knights of St. John the small island of Malta, where they fixed their residence, and continue still to retain their ancient spirit, though much reduced in power and splendour.

<sup>14</sup> Fontan. *de Bell. Rhod.* Barre, *Hist. d'Allemag.* tom. viii.

ADRIAN VI. though the creature of the emperor, and devoted to his interest, endeavoured to assume the impartiality which became the common father of Christendom, and laboured to reconcile the contending princes, that they might unite in a league against the pope, whose conquest of Rhodes rendered him more formidable than ever to Europe. The Italian states were no less desirous of peace than the pope: and so much regard was paid by the hostile powers to the exhortations of his Holiness, and to a bull, which he issued, requiring all Christian princes to consent to a truce for three years, that the imperial, the French, and the English ambassadors at Rome, were empowered to treat of that matter. But while they wasted their time in fruitless negotiations, their masters were continuing their preparations for war; and other negotiations soon took place. The confederacy against France became more formidable than ever.

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1522.

THE Venetians, who had hitherto adhered to the French interest, formed engagements with the emperor for securing Francis Sforza in the possession of the duchy of Milan; and the pope, from a persuasion that the ambition of the French monarch was the only obstacle to peace, acceded to the same alliance. The Florentines, the dukes of Ferrara and Mantua, with all the other Italian powers, followed this example. Francis was left without a single ally to resist the efforts of a multitude of enemies, whose armies every where threatened, and whose territories encompassed his dominions. The emperor in person, at the head of a Spanish army, menaced France on the side of Guienne: the forces of England and the Netherlands hovered over Picardy, and a numerous

A. D. 1523.

**PART I.** ous body of Germans was preparing to ravage Burgundy<sup>15</sup>.  
**A.D. 1523.**

THE dread of so many and such powerful adversaries, it was thought would have obliged Francis to keep wholly on the defensive, or at least have prevented him from entertaining any thoughts of marching into Italy. But it was the peculiar characteristic of this prince, too apt to become negligent on ordinary occasions, to rouse at the approach of imminent danger, and not only to encounter it with spirit and intrepidity, but to provide against it with diligence and industry. Before his enemies were able to strike a blow, Francis had assembled a powerful army, with which he hoped to disconcert all the emperor's schemes, by leading it in person into Italy: and this bold measure could scarcely have failed of the desired effect, had it been immediately carried into execution. But the discovery of a domestic conspiracy, which threatened the destruction of his kingdom, obliged Francis to stop short at Lyons.

CHARLES duke of Bourbon, high constable of France, was a prince of the most shining talents. His great abilities equally fitted him for the council or the field, while his eminent services to the crown entitled him to its first favour. But unhappily Louisa duchess of Angoulême, the king's mother, had contracted a violent aversion against the house of Bourbon, and had taught her son, over whom she had acquired an absolute ascendant, to view all the constable's actions with a jealous eye. After repeated affronts he retired from court, and began to listen to the advances of the em-

<sup>15</sup> Guicciardini, lib. xv.

péror's ministers. Meantime the duchess of Bourbon happened to die; and as the constable was no less handsome than accomplished, the duchess of Angoulême, still susceptible of the tender passions, formed the scheme of marrying him. But Bourbon, who might have expected every thing to which an ambitious mind can aspire, from the doating fondness of a woman who governed her son and the kingdom, incapable of imitating Louisa in her sudden transition from love to hate, or of meanly counterfeiting a passion for one who had so long pursued him with unprovoked malice, treated the proposal with disdain, and even turned it into ridicule. At once refused and insulted by the man whom love only could have made her cease to persecute, Louisa was filled with all the rage of disappointed woman: she resolved to ruin, since she could not marry Bourbon. For this purpose she commenced an iniquitous suit against him; and by the chicanery of chancellor Du Prat, the constable was stripped of his whole family estate. Driven to despair by so many injuries, he had recourse to measures which despair only could have dictated. He entered into a secret correspondence with the emperor and the king of England; and he proposed, as soon as Francis should have crossed the Alps, to raise an insurrection among his numerous vassals, and introduce foreign troops into the heart of France '6.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A. D. 1523.

HAPPILY Francis got intimation of this conspiracy before he left the kingdom. But not being sufficiently convinced of the constable's guilt, he suffered so dangerous an enemy to escape; and Bourbon, entering into the emperor's service, employed all the resources of

16. Thuanus, lib. i. cap. ii. *Mem. de Bellay*, liv. ii.



**PART I.** his enterprising genius, and his military skill, to the  
**A.D. 1523.** prejudice of his sovereign and his native country. He  
 took a severe revenge for all his wrongs.

IN consequence of the discovery of this plot, and the escape of the powerful conspirator, Francis relinquished his intention of leading his army in person into Italy. He was ignorant how far the infection had spread among his subjects, and afraid that his absence might encourage them to make some desperate attempt in favour of a man so much beloved. He did not, however, abandon his design on the duchy of Milan; but sent forward, in order to subdue it, an army of thirty thousand men, under the command of admiral Bonnivet. Colonna, who was entrusted with the defence of that duchy was in no condition to resist such a force; and the city of Milan, on which the whole territory depends, must have fallen into the hands of the French, had not Bonnivet, who possessed none of the talents of a general, wasted his time in frivolous enterprizes, till the inhabitants recovered from their consternation. The imperial army was reinforced. Colonna died, and Lannoy, viceroy of Naples, succeeded him in the command. But the military operations were chiefly conducted by the duke of Bourbon and the marquis de Pescara, the two greatest generals of their age. Bonnivet, destitute of the talents necessary to oppose such able commanders, was reduced, after various movements and encounters, to the necessity of attempting a retreat into France. He was pursued by the imperial generals, and routed at Biagrasa.

A. D. 1524.

HERE fell the chevalier Bayard, whose contempt of the arts of courts prevented him from ever rising to the

the chief command, but who was always called, in times of real danger, to the posts of difficulty and importance. Bonnavet being wounded, the conduct of the rear was committed to Bayard. He put himself at the head of the heavy armed cavalry, and animating them by his presence and example, to sustain the whole shock of the imperial army, he gained time for the body of his countrymen to make good their retreat. But in that service he received a mortal wound; and being unable any longer to continue on horseback, he ordered one of his attendants to place him under a tree, where he calmly waited the approach of death. In this situation he was found by Bourbon, who led the van of the Imperialists, and expressed much sorrow for his fate. "Pity not me!" cried the high-minded chevalier: "I die, as a man of honour ought, in the discharge of my duty; but pity those who fight against their king, their country, and their oath!"

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1524.

THE emperor and his allies were less successful in their operations on the frontiers of France. They were baffled on all sides. And Francis, though stripped of his Italian dominions, might still have enjoyed in safety, the glory of having defended his native kingdom against one half of Europe, and have bid defiance to all his enemies, could he have moderated his military ardour. But understanding that the king of England, discouraged by his former fruitless enterprizes, and disgusted with the emperor, was making no preparations for invading Picardy, his rage for the conquest of Milan returned; and he determined, notwithstanding the approach of winter, to march into Italy,

17. *Mém. de Bellay*, ubi sup. *Ouvr. de Brantôme*, tom. vi.

## PART I.

A. D. 1524.

Oct. 28.

A. D. 1525.  
Feb. 3.

THE French army no sooner appeared in Piedmont, than the whole duchy of Milan was thrown into consternation. The capital opened its gates. The forces of the emperor and Sforza retired to Lodi: and had Francis been so fortunate as to pursue them, they must have abandoned that post, and been totally dispersed. But his evil genius led him to besiege Pavia, a town of considerable strength, well garrisoned, and defended by Antonio de Leyva, one of the bravest officers in the Spanish service. Every thing known to the engineers of that age, or which could be effected by the valour of his troops, was attempted in vain by the French monarch against this important place, during a siege of three months. In the meantime, confident of success, he had detached a considerable part of his army to invade the kingdom of Naples: and the main body was much wasted by the fatigues of the siege and the rigour of the season. The imperial generals had not hitherto molested him, but they were not idle. Pescara and Lannoy had assembled forces from all quarters; and Bourbon, having pawned his jewels, had gone into Germany, and levied at his own expence a body of twelve thousand Lansquenets. The united army advanced to the relief of Pavia, now reduced to extremity for want of ammunition and provisions. Prudence and the advice of his most experienced officers, dictated to Francis the propriety of a retreat; but his own romantic notions of honour, and the opinion of Bonnivet, unhappily determined him to keep his post. Having said that he would take Pavia or perish in the attempt, he thought it ignominious to depart from that resolution; and he anxiously waited the approach of the enemy.

THE imperial generals found the French so strongly entrenched, that they hesitated long before they ventured

ed to attack them. But the necessities of the be-  
 ed, and the murmurs of their own troops, obliged  
 m at last to put every thing to hazard. Never did  
 ies engage with greater ardour, or with a higher  
 nion of the battle they were going to fight; never  
 e men more strongly animated with personal emu-  
 on, national antipathy, mutual resentment, and  
 the passions which inspire obstinate bravery. The  
 efforts of the French valour made the firmest bat-  
 ons of the Imperialists give ground; but the fore-  
 e of the day was soon changed. The Swiss troops  
 he service of France, unmindful of their national  
 our, shamefully deserted their post. Pescara fell  
 n the French cavalry with the imperial horse, and  
 ke that formidable body, by a mode of attack  
 h which they were wholly unacquainted<sup>18</sup>; while  
 va sallying out with his garrison, during the heat  
 action, made a furious assault on the enemy's  
 ; and threw every thing into confusion. The  
 t became general. But Francis himself surround-  
 oy a brave nobility, many of whom fell by his  
 , long sustained the combat. His horse being kill-  
 under him, he fought on foot, undistinguished  
 by his valour, and killed seven men with his own  
 d. At last he was observed by Pomperant, a  
 nch gentleman, who had followed the fortunes of  
 rbon, and who now saved the life of his sovereign,  
 ly to sink beneath an enraged soldiery. By his  
 uasion Francis was prevailed upon to surrender;  
 he obstinately refused, imminent as the danger  
 , to deliver up his sword to Bourbon. Lannoy

LETTER  
 LVIII.  
 A. D. 1525.  
 Feb. 24.

Pescara had intermingled with the imperial horse, a considerable  
 er of Spanish foot, armed with the heavy muskets then in use.  
 iardini, lib. xv.

PART I.  
A. D. 1525.

received it. But Bourbon had the cruel satisfaction of exulting over his sovereign's distress, and of repaying, from revenge, the insults offered by jealousy<sup>19</sup>.

THIS victory, and the captivity of Francis, filled all Europe with alarm. Almost the whole French army was cut off; Milan was immediately abandoned; and in a few weeks, not a Frenchman was left in Italy. The power of the emperor, and still more his ambition, became the object of universal terror: and resolutions were every where taken to set bounds to it. Meanwhile Francis, deeply impressed with a sense of his fortune, wrote to his mother Louisa, whom he had left regent of the kingdom, the following short but expressive letter: "All is lost, but honour!"

THE same courier that delivered this letter, carried also dispatches to Charles, who received the news of the signal and unexpected success which had crowned his arms, with the most hypocritical moderation. He would not suffer any public rejoicings to be made on account of it; and said, he only valued it, as it would prove the occasion of restoring peace to Christendom. Louisa however did not trust to those appearances. Instead of giving herself up to such lamentations as were natural to a woman remarkable for maternal tenderness, she discovered all the foresight, and exerted all the activity of a consummate politician. She took every possible measure for putting the kingdom in a posture of defence, while she employed all her address to appease the resentment and to gain the friendship of England<sup>20</sup>; and a ray of comfort from that quarter soon broke in upon the French affairs,

19. *Mém. de Bellay.* Brantôme. Guicciardini.

20. *Ibid.*

THOUGH

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1525.

THOUGH Henry VIII. had not entered into the war against France from any concerted political views, he had always retained some imperfect idea of that balance of power necessary to be maintained between Charles and Francis, the preservation of which he boasted was his peculiar office. By his alliance with the emperor, he hoped to recover some part of those territories on the continent which had belonged to his ancestors; and in that hope, he willingly contributed to give Charles the ascendancy above his rival. But having never dreamt of any event so decisive and fatal as the victory at Pavia, which seemed not only to have broken, but to have annihilated the power of Francis, Henry now became sensible of his own danger, as well as of that of all Europe, from the loss of a proper counterpoise to the power of Charles. Instead of taking advantage of the distressed condition of France, the English monarch therefore determined to assist her in her present calamities. Other causes conspired to enforce this resolution.

THE elevation of the cardinal of Medicis to St. Peter's chair, on the death of Adrian VI. under the name of Clement VII. had made the English minister sensible of the insincerity of the emperor's promises, while it extinguished all his hopes of the papacy: and Wolsey resolved on revenge. His master too had ground of complaint. Charles had so ill supported the appearance of moderation which he assumed, when first informed of his good fortune, that he had already changed his usual style to Henry; and instead of writing to him with his own hand, and subscribing himself "your affectionate son and cousin," he dictated his letters to a secretary, and simply subscribed himself "Charles." Influenced by all these considerations

**PART I.** derations, together with the glory of raising a fallen enemy, Henry listened to the flattering submissions of Louisa; entered into a defensive alliance with her, as regent of France; and engaged to use his best offices in order to procure a deliverance of her son from a state of captivity <sup>21</sup>.

**MEANWHILE** Francis was rigorously confined; and hard conditions being proposed to him, as the price of his liberty, he drew his dagger, and pointing it at his breast, cried " 'Twere better that a king should die thus!" But flattering himself when he grew cool, that such propositions could not come directly from Charles, he desired that he might be removed to Spain, where the emperor then resided. His request was complied with; but he languished long before he could obtain a sight of his conqueror. At last he was favoured with a visit; and the emperor dreading a general combination against him, or that Francis, if driven to despair, might as he threatened, resign his crown to the Dauphin, agreed to abate somewhat of his former demands. A treaty was accordingly concluded at Madrid, in consequence of which Francis obtained his liberty.—The chief article in this treaty was, that Burgundy should be restored to Charles as the rightful inheritance of his ancestors, and that Francis's two eldest sons, should be immediately delivered up as hostages for the performance of the conditions stipulated. The exchange of the captive monarch for his children, was made on the frontiers of France and Spain. And the moment that Francis entered his own dominions, he mounted a Turkish horse, and putting it to its speed, waved his

A. D. 1526.

21. Herbert. Mezeray. *Mém. de Bellay*. Fiddes, *Life of Wolsey* hand,

and cried aloud several times, "I am yet a  
king! I am yet a king!"

LETTER  
LVIII.

A. D. 1526.

THE reputation of the French monarch, however, would have stood in a fairer light had he died a captive; for the unhappy situation of his affairs, delicate notions of honour appear to have been, led henceforth to act a part very disadvantageous to moral character. He never meant to execute the treaty of Madrid: he had even left a protest in the hands of notaries, before he signed it, that his consent should be considered as an involuntary deed, and deemed null and void<sup>23</sup>. Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in France, he assembled the states of Burgundy, who protested against the article relative to the province; and when the imperial ambassadors demanded the immediate execution of the treaty, the king refused, that he would rigorously perform the articles relative to himself, but in those affecting the French monarchy, he must be directed by the sense of the nation. He made the highest acknowledgments to the king of England for his friendly interposition, and declared to be entirely guided by his counsels.

CHARLES and his ministers now saw that they were over-reached, in those very arts of negotiation in which they so much excelled, while the Italian states moved with pleasure, that Francis was resolved to execute the execution of a treaty, which they considered dangerous to the liberties of Europe. Clement VII. released him from the oath which he had taken at Madrid; and the kings of France and England, the Swiss, the Venetians, the Florentines, and Milanese, entered into an alliance, to which they

Guicciardini, lib. xvi.

23. *Racueil de Traitez*, tom. ii.



**PART I.** gave the name of the Holy League, because his  
**A.D. 1526.** lineage was at the head of it, in order to oblige the  
 emperor to deliver up Francis's two sons on the pay-  
 ment of a reasonable ransom, and to re-establish Sforza  
 the quiet possession of the duchy of Milan <sup>24</sup>.

IN consequence of this league, the confederate  
 army took the field, and Italy became once more  
 scene of war. But Francis, who it was expected  
 would infuse spirit and vigour into the whole body,  
 had gone through such a scene of distress, that he  
 became diffident of his talents, and distrustful of  
 fortune. He had flattered himself, that the aid  
 alone of such a confederacy would induce Charles  
 to listen to what was equitable, and therefore neglected  
 to send sufficient reinforcements to his allies in Italy.  
 Meantime the duke of Bourbon, who commanded  
 the Imperialists, over-ran the whole duchy of Milan,  
 which the emperor had promised him the investiture  
 and his troops beginning to mutiny for want of pay,  
**A.D. 1527.** he boldly led them to Rome, in spite of every ob-  
 stacle, by offering to their avidity the rich spoils of the  
 ancient capital. Nor did he deceive them: for  
 though he himself was slain, while encouraging their  
 efforts by his brave example, in planting with his  
 hands a scaling ladder against the walls, they, more  
 enraged than discouraged by that misfortune, mourn-  
 ing to the assault with the greatest ardour; and, enter-  
 ing the city sword in hand, pillaged it for many days,  
 made it a scene of horrid carnage and abominable  
 lust.

NEVER did Rome experience in any age so many  
 calamities, not even from the Barbarians, by whom

<sup>24</sup> Goldast. *Polit. Imperial.*

he was successively subdued—from the followers of Alaric, Genseric, or Odoacer, as now from the subjects of a Christian and Catholic monarch. Whatever was respectable in modesty or sacred in religion, seemed only the more to provoke the rage of the soldiery. Virgins suffered violation in the arms of their mothers, and upon those altars to which they had fled for safety. Venerable prelates, after being exposed to every indignity, not excepting the abuse of unnatural desire, and enduring every torture, were thrown into dungeons, and menaced with the most cruel deaths, in order to make them reveal their secret treasures. Clement himself, who had taken refuge in the castle of St. Angelo, was obliged to surrender at discretion; and found that his sacred character could neither procure him liberty nor respect. He was doomed to close confinement, until he should pay an enormous ransom, imposed by the victorious army, and surrender to the emperor all the places of strength belonging to the apostolic see<sup>24</sup>.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A. D. 1527.

CHARLES received the news of this extraordinary event with equal surprize and pleasure; but in order to conceal his joy from his Spanish subjects, who were filled with horror at the insult offered to the sovereign pontiff, and to lessen the indignation of the other powers of Europe, he expressed the deepest sorrow for the success of his arms. He put himself and his whole court into mourning; stopped the rejoic-

<sup>24</sup> Jov. *Vit. Colon.* Guicciardini, lib. xviii. *Mém de Bellay.* Eight thousand young women, of all ranks, were found to be pregnant, within five months after the taking of Rome (ibid.); a circumstance not a little curious in itself, and which certain sportive writers have considered as a proof, by no means equivocal, that the Roman ladies reciprocated the transports of the rapacious and blood thirsty, but brawny followers of Bourbon.

ings

**PART I.** ings for the birth of his son Philip, and ordered prayers to be put up in all the churches of Spain, for the liberation of the pope, which he could immediately have procured by a letter to his generals<sup>25</sup> !

**A. D. 1527.**

THE concern expressed by Henry and Francis, for the calamity of their ally, was more sincere. Alarmed at the progress of the Imperial arms, they had, even before the sacking of Rome, entered into a closer alliance, and proposed to invade the Low Countries with a powerful army ; but no sooner did they hear of Clement's captivity than they changed, by a new treaty, the scene of the projected war from the Netherlands to Italy, and resolved to take the most vigorous measures for restoring his Holiness to liberty. Henry, however, contributed only money. A French army crossed the Alps, under the command of Marshal Lautrec ; Clement obtained his freedom ; and war was, for a time, carried on by the confederates with success.

**A. D. 1528.**

But the death of Lautrec, and the revolt of Andrew Doria, a celebrated Genoese admiral, at that time in the service of France, totally changed the face of affairs. He obliged the French garrison in Genoa to surrender, and restore the liberties of his country. The French army was utterly ruined before Naples ; and Francis discouraged, and almost exhausted by so many unsuccessful enterprizes, began at length to think of peace, and of obtaining the release of his sons by concessions, instead of the terror of his arms.

AT the same time Charles, notwithstanding the advantages he had gained, had many reasons to wish for an accommodation. Solyman the Magnificent, having over-run Hungary, was ready to break in upon

the Austrian territories with the whole force of the Ottoman empire ; and the progress of the Reformation in Germany, threatened the tranquillity of that country. In consequence of this situation of affairs while made both parties conceal or dissemble their real sentiments, two ladies were permitted to restore peace to Europe. Margaret of Austria, Charles's aunt, and Louisa, Francis's mother, met at Cambray, and settled the terms of pacification between the French king and the emperor. Francis agreed to pay two millions of crowns, as the ransom of his two sons ; to resign the sovereignty of Flanders and Artois, and forego all his Italian claims ; and Charles ceased to demand the restitution of Burgundy <sup>26</sup>.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A.D. 1528.

A.D. 1529.

ALL the steps of this negotiation had been communicated to the king of England ; and Henry was, on that occasion, so generous to his friend and ally Francis, that he sent him an acquittal of near six hundred thousand crowns in order to enable him to fulfil his agreement with Charles. But Francis's Italian confederates were less satisfied with the treaty of Cambray. They were almost wholly abandoned to the will of the emperor, and seemed to have no other means of security left but his equity and moderation. Of these, from his past conduct, they had not formed the most advantageous idea. But Charles's present circumstances, more especially in regard to the Turks, obliged him to behave with a generosity inconsistent with his character. The Florentines alone, whom he reduced under the dominion of the family of Medicis, had reason to complain of his severity. Sforza ob-

<sup>26</sup> Sandov. *Hist. del Emp. Carl. V.* Robertson, *book v.*

## PART I.

tained the investiture of the duchy of Milan and his pardon : and every other power experienced the lenity of the victor.

A. D. 1530. CHARLES, who during this full tide of his fortune, having quieted all the discontents in Spain, had appeared in Italy with the pomp and power of a conqueror, and received the Imperial crown from the hands of the pope, now prepared to revisit Germany, where his presence was become highly necessary ; for although the conduct and valour of his brother Ferdinand, on whom he had conferred the hereditary dominions of the house of Austria, and who had been elected king of Hungary, had obliged Solymán to withdraw his forces, his return was to be feared, and the disorders of religion were daily increasing. But these disorders and the future exploits of the emperor, must form the subject of another Letter.

LETTER

LETTER LIX.

*general View of the Affairs of EUROPE, and of the progress of the REFORMATION on the Continent, continued from the Peace of CAMBRAY to that of CREPY, 1544.*

THE Reformation, my dear Philip, had gained much ground in Germany, during that long interval of tranquillity, which the absence of the emperor, the contests between him and the pope, and his attention to the war with France, afforded its promotion to the war with France, afforded its promotion.

LETTER  
LIX.

Most of the princes who had embraced Luther's opinions, had not only established in their territories a new form of worship which he approved, but had even suppressed the rites of the Romish church. Many of the free cities had imitated their conduct. Almost one half of the Germanic body had revolted from the papal see; and its dominion, even in that part which had not yet shaken off the yoke of Rome, was considerably weakened by the example of the neighbouring states, or by the secret progress of those principles which had undermined it among them.

WHATEVER satisfaction the emperor, while at openness of the pope, might have felt in those events which tended to mortify and embarrass his Holiness, was at the same time sensible, that the religious divisions in Germany would, in the end, prove hurtful to the imperial authority. Accordingly the prospect of an accommodation with Clement no sooner opened, than Charles appointed a diet of empire to be held at Spire in order to take into consideration the state of religion. The diet, after much dispute, passed a decree confirming the edict published against Luther.

A. D. 1529.

## PART I.

A.D. 1529.

Luther at Worms, and prohibiting any farther innovations in religion, but particularly the abolition of the mass before the meeting of a general council. Against this decree, as unjust and impious, the elector of Saxony, the landgrave of Hesse, the duke of Lauenburg, the prince of Anhalt, together with the deputies of fourteen imperial or free cities, entered a solemn protest. On that account they were called **PROTESTANTS**; an appellation which has since become common to all the sects, of whatever denomination, that have revolted from the church of Rome.

A.D. 1530.

SUCH was the state of religious matters when Charles returned to Germany. He assisted in person at the diet of Augsburgh; where the Protestants presented their system of opinions, composed by Melancthon, the most learned and moderate of all the reformers. This system, known by the name of the *Confession of Augsburgh*, from the place where it was presented, was publicly read in the diet. Some popish divines were appointed to examine it; they brought in their animadversions: a dispute ensued between them and Melancthon, seconded by some of his disciples; and, as in most cases of that kind, nothing was determined. Every one remained in his own way of thinking. From the Protestant divines, Charles turned to the princes their patrons, but with no better success: they refused to abandon what they deemed the cause of God, for any earthly advantage. Coercive measures were resolved upon. A decree was issued condemning most of the peculiar tenets held by the Protestants, and prohibiting any one to tolerate those who taught them.

1. Sleidan. Father Paul. Seckend.

consequence of this decree, which they considered prelude to the most violent persecution, the protestant princes assembled at Smalkalde, and concluded a league of mutual defence; and the emperor's ambition, which led him to get his brother elected king of the Romans, in order to continue the imperial crown in his family, furnished the confederates with a decent pretext for courting the alliance of foreign princes. The kings of France and England secretly agreed to support them. Meanwhile many circumstances and reflections convinced Charles, that this was not a proper season to attempt the extirpation of heresy by word. He saw Solyman ready to enter Hungary, and the whole force of the Turkish empire, in order to wipe off the disgrace which his arms had sustained in the former campaign: he felt the necessity of union, not only for the accomplishment of his future success, but for ascertaining his present safety. The treaty with France was precarious; and he was afraid the followers of Luther, if treated with severity, might forget that they were Christians, and join the rebels. Policy made him drop the mask of zeal. By the treaty concluded at Nuremburgh, and solemnly ratified in the diet at Ratisbon, the emperor granted the protestants liberty of conscience until the meeting of the general council; and they agreed, on their part, to assist him powerfully against the Turks.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1531.

A. D. 1531.

THIS treaty was no sooner signed than Charles received information, that Solyman had entered Hungary, at the head of three hundred thousand men. The imperial army, consisting of ninety thousand disciplined foot, and thirty thousand horse, besides a religious swarm of irregulars, immediately assembled

2. Du Mont, *Corps Diplomatique*, tom. iv.



## PART I.

A. D. 1532.

in the neighbourhood of Vienna. Of this vast body the emperor, for the first time, took the command in person: and Europe waited, in anxious suspense, the issue of a decisive battle between the two greatest potentates in the universe. But each dreading the other's power and good fortune, both conducted their operations with so much caution, that a campaign, from which the most important consequences had been expected, was closed without any memorable event. Solyman finding it impossible to take advantage of an enemy always on his guard, marched back to Constantinople; and Charles, freed from so dangerous an invader, set out for Spain<sup>3</sup>.

DURING the emperor's absence, great disorders prevailed in Germany, occasioned by the fanaticism of a sect of reformers distinguished by the name of Anabaptists; because they contended, that the sacrament of baptism should be administered only to persons grown up to years of understanding, and should be performed not by sprinkling them with water, but by dipping them in it. This tenet was at least harmless; but they held others of a more enthusiastic, as well as dangerous nature. They maintained, That, among Christians, who have the precepts of the Gospel to direct, and the spirit of God to guide them, the office of magistrate is unnecessary, and an encroachment on spiritual liberty; that all distinctions of birth or rank ought to be abolished; that a community of goods should be established, and that every man may lawfully marry as many wives as he thinks proper.

TENETS so flattering to human weakness and human pride, naturally produced a number of converts,

3. SANDOV. *Hist. del Emp. Carl. V.* vol. ii. Robertson, book v. especially

especially among the lower class of people. The peasants greedily embraced opinions which promised to place them on a level with their imperious masters. They assembled in great bodies, and spread devastation wherever they came. But being destitute of a skilful leader, they were soon dispersed; and Muncer, the first Anabaptist prophet, perished on a scaffold at Mulhausen in 1525. Several of his followers, however, lurked in different places, and secretly propagated the opinions of their sect. At last two Anabaptist prophets, John Matthias, a baker of Harlem, and John Bocold, a journeyman taylor of Leyden, possessed with the rage of making proselytes, fixed their residence at Munster, an imperial city in Westphalia; and privately assembling their associates, from the neighbouring country, made themselves masters of the town, and expelled the inhabitants.

A.D. 1533.

HERE the Anabaptists formed a singular kind of republic, over which Matthias assumed absolute authority, and wrote to his brethren in the Low Countries inviting them to assemble at Mount-Sion, so he termed Munster, that they might thence set out in a body to reduce all nations under their dominion. Meanwhile the bishop of Munster having assembled a considerable army, advanced to besiege the town. On his approach, Matthias sallied out, at the head of a chosen band; forced his camp, and returned to the city loaded with glory and spoil. But his success proved fatal to him. Thinking nothing now impossible for the favourites of Heaven, he went out to meet the enemy, accompanied by no more than thirty of his followers; boasting, that, like Gideon, he would smite the host of the ungodly with a handful of

A.D. 1534.

PART I. men. The prophet and his thirty associates were slain.  
 A. D. 1534.

THE Anabaptists, however, did not despair: John of Leyden, their other light, still remained. This man, less bold, but more ambitious than Matthias, assumed the title of king; and being young, and of a complexion equally amorous and enthusiastic, he exercised, in their utmost latitude, those principles of his sect which favoured sensual gratification. He took, in a short time, no less than fourteen wives. His example was followed by his brethren: no man remained satisfied with a single wife. The houses were searched; and young women grown up to maturity were instantly seized, and compelled to marry. Notwithstanding this sensuality, Munster made a gallant defence; but the bishop's army being reinforced, and the besieged greatly distressed for want of provisions, one of their own body deserted, and betrayed them. The city was taken by surprise: most of the Anabaptists were slain; and their king was made prisoner, and put to death by the most exquisite and lingering tortures, all which he bore with astonishing fortitude<sup>4</sup>. So wonderful are the effects of enthusiasm in communicating courage, even to minds naturally the most timid and feeble! and so difficult is it, in such cases, to distinguish between the martyr and the visionary!

WHILE these things were transacting in Germany Charles undertook an expedition against the Piratical States of Africa. Barbary, or that part of the African continent which lies along the coast of the Me-

4. Ant. Lamb. Hortens. Tunnst. Anabaptist. Jo. Bapt. Ottii, *Ann. Anabaptist.* Mosheim. *Hist. Eccles.* vol. iv.

anean sea, was then nearly in the same condition at present. Morocco, Algiers, and Tunis were principal governments; and the two last were nests of pirates. Barbarossa, a famous corsair, had succeeded his brother in the kingdom of Algiers, which he early assisted him to usurp. He regulated with prudence the interior police of his kingdom, and on his piracies with great vigour, and extended conquests on the continent of Africa; but perceiving that the natives submitted to his government with impatience, and fearing that his continual depredations might draw upon him a general combination of the Christian powers, he put his dominions under the protection of the Turkish emperor. Soon, flattered by such an act of submission, and encouraged with the boldness of the man, offered him the command of the Ottoman fleet. Proud of this distinction, Barbarossa repaired to Constantinople, made use of his influence with his sultan to extend his own dominions. Partly by force, partly by bribery, he usurped the kingdom of Tunis; and now possessed of greater power, he carried on depredations against the Christian states with more destructive violence than ever.

DAILY complaints of the piracies and ravages committed by the galleys of Barbarossa were brought to the emperor by his subjects, both in Spain and Italy; all Christendom seemed to look up to Charles, as the greatest and most fortunate prince, for relief from this new and odious species of oppression. At the same time Muley-Hascen, the exiled king of Tunis, finding none of the African princes able or willing to assist him in recovering his throne, applied to the emperor Charles for assistance against the usurper.

**PART I.**  
**A. D. 1535.**

Equally desirous of delivering his dominions from the dangerous neighbourhood of Barbarossa, of appearing as the protector of an unfortunate prince, and of acquiring the glory annexed in that age to every expedition against the Mahometans, the emperor readily concluded a treaty with Muley Hascen, and set sail for Tunis with a formidable armament.

THE Goletta, a strong fortress on an island in the bay of Tunis, and the key of the capital, planted with three hundred pieces of cannon, was taken by storm, together with all Barbarossa's fleet. He was defeated in a pitched battle; and ten thousand Christian slaves, having knocked off their fetters, and made themselves masters of the citadel, Tunis offered to surrender at discretion. But while Charles was deliberating on the means of preserving the lives of the inhabitants, his troops, fearing that they would be deprived of the booty which they had expected, broke suddenly into the town, and pillaged and massacred without distinction. Thirty thousand persons perished by the sword, and ten thousand were made prisoners. The sceptre, drenched in blood, was restored to Muley Hascen, on condition that he should acknowledge himself a vassal of the crown of Spain, put into the emperor's hands all the fortified sea-ports in the kingdom of Tunis, and pay annually twelve thousand crowns for the subsistence of a Spanish garrison in the Goletta. These points being settled, and twenty thousand Christian slaves freed from bondage, either by arms or by treaty, Charles returned to Europe, where his presence was become necessary; while Barbarossa, who had retired to Bona, recovered new strength, and again became the tyrant of the ocean<sup>5</sup>.

5. Sandov. vol. ii. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book v.

THE king of France took advantage of the emperor's absence, to revive his claims in Italy. The treaty of Cambray had covered up, but not extinguished the flames of discord. Francis in particular, who waited only for a favourable opportunity of recovering the territories and reputation which he had lost, continued to negotiate against his rival with different courts. But all his negotiations were frustrated by unforeseen accidents. The death of Clement VII. (whom he had gained by marrying his daughter, the duke of Orleans, afterwards Henry II. to Catherine of Medicis, the niece of that pontiff) deprived him of all the support which he hoped to receive from the court of Rome. The king of England, occupied with domestic cares and projects, declined engaging in the affairs of the continent; and the Protestant princes, associated by the league of the Smalcald, to whom also Francis had applied, and who seemed at first disposed to listen to him, filled with indignation and resentment at the cruelty with which some of their reformed brethren had been treated in France, refused to have any connection with the enemy of their religion.

THE particulars of this persecution it will be proper to relate, as they serve to illustrate the manners of the times. Francis was neither cruel nor bigotted. His levity and love of pleasure allowed him little leisure to concern himself about religious disputes; but his principles becoming suspected, at a time when the emperor was gaining immortal glory by his expedition against the Infidels, he found it necessary to vindicate himself by some extraordinary demonstration of reverence for the established faith. The indiscretion of some Protestant converts furnished him with the

PART I.  
A.D. 1535.

the occasion. They had affixed to the gates of the Louvre, and other public places, papers containing indecent reflections on the rites of the Romish church. Six of the persons concerned in this rash action, were seized; and the king, pretending to be struck with horror at their blasphemies, appointed a solemn procession, in order to avert the wrath of Heaven. The Host was carried through the city of Paris in great pomp; Francis walked uncovered before it, bearing a torch in his hand; the princes of the blood supported the canopy over it; the nobles walked behind. In presence of this numerous assembly, the king declared, that if one of his hands were infected with heresy, he would cut it off with the other: "and I would sacrifice," added he, "even my own children, if found guilty of that crime." As an awful proof of his sincerity, the six unhappy persons who had been seized, were publicly burnt, before the procession was finished, and in the most cruel manner. They were fixed upon a machine which descended into the flames, and retired alternately, until they expired\*.—Little wonder that the Protestant princes were incensed at such barbarity.

BUT Francis, though unsupported by any ally, commanded his army to advance toward the frontiers of Italy, under pretence of chastising the duke of Milan for a breach of the law of nations, in putting to death his ambassador. The operations of war, however, soon took a new direction. Instead of marching directly to the duchy of Milan, Francis commenced hostilities against the duke of Savoy, with whom he had cause to be dissatisfied, and on whom he had some

\*. Belcarii, *Comment. Rer. Gallie. Sicid. Hist. Reformat.*

claims;

claims; and before the end of the campaign, that feeble prince saw himself stripped of all his dominions, except the province of Piedmont. To complete his misfortunes, the city of Geneva, the sovereignty of which he claimed, and where the reformed religion was already established, threw off his yoke : and its revolt drew along with it the loss of the adjacent territory. Geneva was then an Imperial city, and now became the capital of an independent republic.

LETTER  
LIX.

A.D. 1535.

IN this extremity, the duke of Savoy saw no resource, but in the emperor's protection ; and as his misfortunes were chiefly occasioned by his attachment to the imperial interest, he had a title to immediate assistance. But Charles, who was just returned from his African expedition, was not able to lend him the necessary support. His treasury was entirely drained, and he was obliged to disband his army, until he could raise new supplies. So wasting is the continued practice, even of successful war, to the most opulent princes and states !

MEANTIME the death of Sforza duke of Milan, totally changed the nature of the war, and afforded the emperor full leisure to prepare for action. The French monarch's pretext for taking up arms was at once cut off ; but as the duke had died without issue, all Francis's rights to the duchy of Milan, which he had yielded only to Sforza and his descendants, returned to him in full force. He accordingly renewed his claim to it : and if he had ordered his army immediately to advance, he might have made himself master of it. But he unfortunately wasted his time in fruitless negotiations, while his more politic rival took possession of the long disputed territory, as a vacant fief of the empire.



## PART I.

A. D. 1535.

empire. And although Charles seemed still to admit the equity of Francis's claim, he delayed granting the investiture under various pretences, and was secretly taking every possible measure to prevent his recovering footing in Italy.

A. D. 1536.

DURING the time gained in this manner, Charles had recruited his finances, and of course his armies; and finding himself in a condition for war, he at last threw off the mask, under which he had so long concealed his designs from the court of France. Entering Rome with great pomp, he pronounced before the pope and cardinals assembled in full consistory, a violent invective against Francis, by way of reply to his propositions concerning the investiture of Milan. Yet Francis, by an unaccountable fatality, continued to negotiate, as if it had still been possible to terminate their differences in an amicable manner; and Charles, finding him so eager to run into the snare, favoured the deception, and by seeming to listen to his proposals, gained yet more time for the execution of his own ambitious projects 7.

IF misfortune had rendered Francis too dissident, success had made Charles too confident. He presumed on nothing less than the subversion of the French monarchy; nay, he considered it as an infallible event. Having chased the forces of his rival out of Piedmont and Savoy, he pushed forward at the head of fifty thousand men, contrary to the advice of his most experienced ministers and generals, to invade the southern provinces of France; while two other armies were ordered to enter that kingdom, the one on the side of Picardy, the other on the side of Champagne. He

7. *Mém. de Bellay.*

thought it impossible that Francis could resist so many unexpected attacks, on such different quarters; but he found himself mistaken.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1536.

THE French monarch fixed upon the most effectual plan for defeating the invasion of a powerful enemy: and he prudently persevered in following it, though contrary to his own natural temper, and to the genius of his people. He determined to remain altogether upon the defensive, and to deprive the enemy of subsistence, by laying waste the country before them. The execution of this plan was committed to the marshal de Montmorency, its author, a man happily fitted for such a service, by the inflexible severity of his disposition. He made choice of a strong camp, under the walls of Avignon, at the confluence of the Rhone and Durance, where he assembled a considerable army; while the king, with another body of troops, encamped at Valence, higher up the Rhone. Marseilles, and Arles were the only towns he thought it necessary to defend, and each of these he furnished with a numerous garrison of his best troops. The inhabitants of the other towns were compelled to abandon their habitations; the fortifications of such places as might have afforded shelter to the enemy, were thrown down; corn, forage, and provisions of every kind were carried off or destroyed; the mills and ovens were ruined, and the wells filled up or rendered useless.

THIS devastation extended from the Alps to Marseilles, and from the sea to the confines of Dauphiny; so that the emperor, when he arrived with the van of his army on the confines of Provence, instead of that rich and populous country which he expected to enter, beheld nothing but one vast and desert solitude.

He

## PART I.

A.D. 1536.

He did not, however, despair of success, though he saw that he would have many difficulties to encounter; and, as an encouragement to his officers, he made them liberal promises of lands and honours in France. But all the land which any of them obtained was a grave, and their master lost much honour by this rash and presumptuous enterprize. After unsuccessfully investing Marseilles and Arles; after attempting in vain to draw Montmorency from his camp at Avignon, and not daring to attack it, Charles having spent two inglorious months in Provence, and lost one half of his troops by famine or disease, was under the necessity of ordering a retreat; and although he was some time in motion before the enemy suspected his intention, his retreat was conducted with so much precipitation and disorder, as to deserve the name of a flight, the light troops of France having turned his march into a perfect rout. The invasion of Picardy was not more effectual: the Imperial forces were obliged to retire without effecting any conquest of importance<sup>2</sup>.

CHARLES had no sooner conducted the shattered remains of his army to the frontiers of Milan, than he set out for Genoa; and, unwilling to expose himself to the scorn of the Italians, after such a reverse of fortune, he embarked directly for Spain<sup>3</sup>.

MEANWHILE Francis gave himself up to that vain resentment, which had formerly disgraced the prosperity of his rival. They had frequently, in the course of their quarrels, given each other the lie, and mutual challenges had been sent; which though productive of no serious consequences between the par-

<sup>2</sup> *Sandro. Hist. del Emp. Carl. V.* Robertson, book vi. <sup>3</sup> *Id. ibid.*

ies, had a powerful tendency to encourage the pernicious practice of duelling. Charles in his invective pronounced at Rome, had publicly accused Francis of perfidy, and breach of faith: Francis now exceeded Charles in the indecency of his accusations. The Dauphin dying suddenly, his death was imputed to poison: Montecuculi, his cup-bearer, was put to the rack: and that unhappy nobleman, in the agonies of torture, accused the emperor's generals, Gonzaga and de Leyva, of instigating him to the detestable act. The emperor himself was suspected; nay, this extorted confession, and some obscure hints, were considered as incontestible proofs of his guilt; though it was evident to all mankind, that neither Charles nor his generals could have any inducement to perpetrate such a crime, as Francis was still in the vigour of life himself, and had two sons besides the Dauphin <sup>10</sup>.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1537.

BUT the incensed monarch's resentment did not stop here. Francis was not satisfied with endeavouring to blacken the character of his rival by an ambiguous testimony, which led to the most injurious suspicions, and upon which the most cruel constructions had been put: he was willing to add rebellion to murder. For this purpose, he went to the parliament of Paris; where being seated with the usual solemnities, the advocate-general appeared, and accused Charles of Austria (so he affected to call the emperor) of having violated the treaty of Cambray, by which he was freed from the homage due to the crown of France for the counties of Artois and Flanders; adding, that this treaty being now void, he was still to be considered

10. Sandev. ubi sup.

**PART I.** as a vassal of France, and consequently had to  
AD. 1537. guilty of rebellion, in taking arms against his so-  
 reign. The charge was sustained by the court, Charles was summoned to appear before the parliament of Paris at a day fixed. The term expired and no person appearing in the emperor's name, parliament gave judgment, that Charles of Austria had forfeited, by rebellion and contumacy, the counties of Flanders and Artois, and declared these reunited to the crown of France<sup>11</sup>.

FRANCIS soon after this vain display of his animosity, marched into the Low Countries, as if he intended to execute the sentence pronounced by parliament. But a suspension of arms took place through the interposition of the queens of France and Hungary, before any thing of consequence effected: and this cessation of hostilities was followed by a truce, concluded at Nice, through the mediation of the reigning pontiff Paul III. of the family of Farnese, a man of a venerable character and pacific disposition.

EACH of these rival princes had strong reasons to incline them to peace. The finances of both were exhausted; and the emperor, the most powerful of the two, was deeply impressed with the dread of Turkish arms, which Francis had drawn upon himself by a league with Solyman. In consequence of this league, Barbarossa, with a great fleet, appeared on the coast of Naples; filled that kingdom with consternation; landed without resistance near Taranto; obliged Castro, a place of some strength, to surrender; plundered the adjacent country, and was taking measures

11. *Mem. de Ribier.*

securing and extending his conquest, when the unexpected arrival of Doria, the famous Genoese admiral, together with the pope's gallies and a squadron of the Venetian fleet, made it prudent for him to retire. The sultan's forces also invaded Hungary, where the Turkish general, after gaining several inferior advantages, defeated the Germans in a great battle at Essek on the Drave.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1538.

HAPPILY for Charles and for Europe, it was not in Francis's power, at this juncture, either to join the Turks, or to assemble an army strong enough to penetrate into the duchy of Milan. The emperor however was sensible, that he could not long resist the efforts of two such powerful confederates, or expect that the same fortunate circumstances would concur a second time in his favour. He therefore thought it necessary, both for his safety and reputation, to give his consent to a truce : and Francis chose rather to run the risk of disobliging his new ally the sultan, than to draw on his head the indignation and perhaps the arms of all Christendom, by obstinately obstructing the re-establishment of tranquillity, and contributing to the aggrandisement of the Infidels.<sup>12</sup>

THESE considerations inclined the contending monarchs to listen to the arguments of the pope : but his holiness found it impossible to bring about a final accommodation between them, each inflexibly persisting in asserting his own claims. Nor could he prevail on them to see one another, though both came to the place of rendezvous ; so great were the remains of distrust and rancour, or such the difficulty of adjusting

<sup>12</sup> Jovii. *Hist.* lib. xxxv.

PART I.  
  
 A.D. 1538.

the ceremonial! Yet, improbable as it may seem, a few days after signing the truce, the emperor in his passage to Barcelona, being driven on the coast of Provence, Francis invited him to come a-shore; frankly visited him on board his galley, and was received and entertained with the warmest demonstrations of esteem and affection. Charles with an equal degree of confidence, paid the king next day a visit at Aigues-mortes; where these two hostile rivals, and vindictive enemies, who had accused one another of every kind of baseness, conversing together with all the cordiality of brothers, seemed to vie with each other in expressions of respect and friendship!!—Such sudden transitions from enmity to affection, and from suspicion to confidence, can only be accounted for from that spirit of chivalry, with which the manners of both princes were strongly tinged.

Besides the glory of having restored tranquillity to Europe, Paul III. secured a point of much consequence to his family. He obtained in marriage, for his grandson, Margaret of Austria, the emperor's natural daughter, formerly wife to Alexander of Medicis, whom Charles had raised to the supreme power in Florence. Lorenzo of Medicis, the kinsman and intimate companion of Alexander, had assassinated him by one of the blackest treasons recorded in history. Under pretence of having secured him an assignation with a lady of great beauty, and of the highest rank, he drew him into a secret apartment of his palace, and there stabbed him, as he lay carelessly on a couch, expecting the presence of the lovely fair, whom he had often solicited in vain. Lorenzo, however, did not reap the fruits of his

13. Sandov. *Hif. del Emp. Carl. V.*

crime;

crime; for although some of his countrymen extolled him as a third Brutus, and endeavoured to seize this occasion for recovering their liberties, the government of Florence passed into the hands of Cosmo II. another kinsman of Alexander<sup>14</sup>. Cosmo was desirous of marrying the widow of his predecessor; but the emperor chose rather to oblige the pope, by bestowing his daughter upon Octavio Farnese, son of the duke of Parma, and grandson of his Holiness.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1538.

CHARLES had soon farther cause to be sensible of his obligations to Paul III. for negotiating the truce of Nice. His troops, every where, mutinied for want of pay, and the ability of his generals, only could have prevented a total revolt. He had depended upon the subsidies which he expected from his Castilian subjects for discharging the arrears of his army. He accordingly assembled the Cortes of Castile at Toledo; and having represented to them the great expence of his military operations, he proposed to levy such supplies as the present exigency of his affairs demanded, by a general excise on commodities. But the Spaniards, who already felt themselves oppressed with a load of taxes unknown to their ancestors, and who had often complained, that their country was drained of its wealth and its inhabitants, in order to prosecute quarrels in which they had no interest, determined not to add voluntarily to their own burthens. The nobles, in particular, inveighed with great vehemence against the measure proposed; as it would encroach on the most valuable and distinguished privilege of their order, that of being exempted from the payment of any tax. After employing arguments and

A. D. 1539.

14. *Lett. di Princip.*



PART I.

A.D. 1539.

promises in vain, Charles therefore dismissed the assembly with indignation: and from that period neither the nobles nor the prelates have been called to the Cortes, on pretence that such as pay no part of the public taxes, should not claim a vote in laying them on. These assemblies have since consisted merely of the procurators or representatives of eighteen cities, two from each; in all thirty-six members, who are absolutely at the devotion of the crown<sup>15</sup>.

THE citizens of Ghent, still more bold, broke out not long after into open rebellion against the emperor's government, on account of a tax which they judged contrary to their ancient privileges, and a decision of the council of Mechlin in favour of the imperial authority. Enraged at an unjust imposition, and rendered desperate on seeing their rights betrayed by that very court which was bound to protect them, they flew to arms; seized several of the emperor's officers, and drove such of the nobility as resided among them out of the city. Sensible, however, of their inability to support what their zeal had prompted them to undertake, and desirous of securing a protector against the formidable forces with which they might expect soon to be attacked, they offered to acknowledge the king of France as their sovereign; to put him into immediate possession of their city, and to assist him in recovering those provinces in the Netherlands which had anciently belonged to his crown. True policy directed Francis to comply with this proposal. The counties of Flanders and Artois were more valuable than the duchy of Milan, for which

<sup>15</sup>. *La Science de Gov.* par. M. de Real. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book vi.

he had so long contended ; and their situation in regard to France made it more easy to conquer or to defend them. But we are apt to estimate the value of things by the trouble which they have cost us. Francis, computing in this manner, over-rated the territory of Milan. He had lived in friendship with the emperor, ever since their interview at Aigues-mortes, and Charles had promised him the investiture of that duchy. Forgetting therefore all his past injuries, and the deceitful promises by which he had been so often duped, the credulous, generous, but unprincipled Francis, not only rejected the propositions of the citizens of Ghent, but communicated to the emperor his whole negociation with the malcontents <sup>16</sup>.

LETTER  
LIX.

A.D. 1539.

JUDGING of Charles's heart by his own, Francis hoped, by this seemingly interested proceeding, to obtain at once the investiture of Milan : and the emperor, well acquainted with the weakness of his rival, flattered him in this hope, for his own selfish purposes. His presence being necessary in the Netherlands, he demanded a passage through France. It was immediately granted him ; and Charles, to whom every moment was precious, set out, notwithstanding the remonstrances of his council, and fears of his Spanish subjects, with a small but splendid train of an hundred persons. He was met on the frontiers of France by the dauphin and the duke of Orleans, who offered to go into Spain, and remain there as hostages, till he should reach his own dominions ; but Charles replied, that the king's honour was sufficient for his safety, and prosecuted his journey without any

16. Sandov. ubi sup. *Mem. de Bellay.*

## PART I.

other security. The king entertained him with the utmost magnificence at Paris, and the two young princes did not take leave of him till he entered the Low Countries; yet he still found means to evade his promise, and Francis continued to believe his professions sincere <sup>17</sup>.

A. D. 1540.

THE citizens of Ghent, alarmed at the approach of the emperor, who was joined in the Netherlands by three armies, sent ambassadors to implore his mercy, and offered to throw open their gates. Charles only condescended to reply, that he would appear among them, "as a sovereign and a judge, with the sceptre and the sword." He accordingly entered the place of his nativity, on the anniversary of his birth; and instead of that lenity which might have been expected, exhibited an awful example of his severity. Twenty-six of the principal citizens were put to death; a greater number were banished; the city was declared to have forfeited its privileges; a new system of laws and political administration was prescribed; and a large fine was imposed on the inhabitants, in order to defray the expence of erecting a citadel, together with an annual tax for the support of a garrison. They were not only despoiled of their ancient immunities, but made to pay, like conquered people, for the means of perpetuating their own slavery <sup>18</sup>.

HAVING thus re-established his authority in the Low Countries, and being now under no necessity of continuing that scene of falsehood and dissimulation with which he had amused the French monarch, Charles began gradually to throw aside the veil under which he had concealed his intentions with respect to

<sup>17</sup> *Mém. de Ribier.* Thuan. lib. i. *Journ. de Bellay.*

<sup>18</sup> *Hazari.*

the duchy of Milan, and at last peremptorily refused to give up a territory of such value, or voluntarily to make such a liberal addition to the strength of an enemy by diminishing his own power. He even denied, that he had ever made any promise which could bind him to an action so foolish, and so contrary to his own interest <sup>19</sup>.

LETTER  
LVIII.  
A. D. 1547.

THIS transaction exposed the king of France to as much scorn as it did the emperor to censure. The blind credulity of Francis, after he had experienced so often the duplicity and artifices of his rival, seemed to merit no other return. He remonstrated, however, and exclaimed, as if this had been the first instance in which the emperor had deceived him. The insult offered to his understanding, affected him even more sensibly than the injury done to his interest; and he discovered such resentment as made it obvious that he would seize on the first opportunity of revenge, and that a new war would soon desolate the European continent.

MEANWHILE Charles was obliged to turn his attention towards the affairs of Germany. The Protestants having in vain demanded a general council, pressed him earnestly to appoint a conference between a select number of divines of each party, in order to examine the points in dispute. For this purpose a diet was assembled at Ratisbon: and such a conference, notwithstanding the opposition of the pope, was held with great solemnity in the presence of the emperor. But the divines chosen to manage the controversy, though men of learning and moderation, were only able to settle a few speculative opinions, all points

A. D. 1542.

19. *Mém. de Bellay.*

PART I.  
A. D. 1541.

relative to worship and jurisdiction serving only to inflame the minds of the disputants. Charles therefore, finding his endeavours to bring about an accommodation ineffectual, and being impatient to close the diet, prevailed on a majority of the members to approve of the following edict of recess:—That the articles concerning which the divines had agreed, should be held as points decided; that those about which they had differed, should be referred to the determination of a general council, or if that could not be obtained, to a national synod; and should it prove impracticable also to assemble a synod of Germany, that a general diet of the empire should be called within eighteen months, in order to give final judgment on the whole controversy; that, in the meantime, no innovations should be made, nor any means employed to gain proselytes <sup>20</sup>.

THIS edict gave great offence to the pope. The bare mention of allowing a diet, composed chiefly of laymen, to pass judgment in regard to articles of faith, appeared to him no less criminal and profane than the worst of those heresies which the emperor seemed so zealous to suppress. The Protestants also were dissatisfied with it, as it considerably abridged the liberty which they at that time enjoyed. They murmured loudly against it; and Charles, unwilling to leave any seeds of discontent in the empire, granted them a private declaration, exempting them from whatever they thought injurious or oppressive in the edict of recess, and ascertaining to them the full possession of all their former privileges <sup>21</sup>.

20. Father Paul, lib. i. Seckend. lib. iii. Dumont, *Corps Diplom.* tom. iv.

21. Id. *ibid*.

THE situation of the emperor's affairs at this juncture made these extraordinary concessions necessary. He foresaw a rupture with France to be unavoidable, and he was alarmed at the rapid progress of the Turks in Hungary. A great revolution had happened in that kingdom. John Zapol Scæpius, by the assistance of Solyman, had wrested from the king of the Romans a considerable part of the country. John died, and left an infant son. Ferdinand attempted to take advantage of the minority, in order to repossess himself of the whole kingdom; but his ambition was disappointed by the activity and address of George Martinuzzi, bishop of Waradin, who shared the regency with the queen. Sensible that he was unable to oppose the king of the Romans in the field, Martinuzzi satisfied himself with holding out the fortified towns, all which he provided with every thing necessary for defence; and he at the same time sent ambassadors to Solyman, beseeching him to extend toward the son, that imperial protection which had so generously maintained the father on the throne. Ferdinand used his utmost endeavours to thwart this negotiation, and even meanly offered to hold the Hungarian crown on the same ignominious conditions by which John had obtained it, that of paying tribute to the Porte. But the sultan saw such advantages from espousing the interest of the young king, that he instantly marched into Hungary; and the Germans, having formed the siege of Buda, were defeated with great slaughter before that city. Solyman, however, instead of becoming the protector of the infant Sovereign whom he had relieved, made use of this success to extend his own dominions: he sent the queen and her son into Transylvania, which

LETTER  
LIX.

A.D. 1541

PART I.

A. D. 1541.

province he allotted them, and added Hungary to the Ottoman empire <sup>22</sup>.

HAPPILY for the Protestants, Charles had received intelligence of this revolution before the close of the diet at Ratisbon; and in consequence of the concessions which he made them, he obtained such liberal supplies, both of men and money, in order to prosecute the war against the Turks, as left him little anxiety about the security of Germany. He therefore hastened to join his fleet and army in Italy, on purpose to carry into execution a great and favourite enterprize, which he had concerted against Algiers; though it would certainly have been more consistent with his dignity to have conducted the whole forces of the empire against Solyman, the common enemy of Christendom, who was preparing to enter his Austrian dominions. But many reasons induced Charles to prefer the African expedition. He wanted strength to combat the Turks in so distant a country as Hungary; and the glory which he had formerly acquired in Barbary led him to hope for like success, while the cries of his Spanish subjects roused him to take vengeance on their ravagers.

ALGIERS, since the taking of Tunis, was become the common receptacle of all the Barbary corsairs; and from the time that Barbarossa, as captain-basha, commanded the Turkish fleet, it had been governed by Hascen Aga, a renegado eunuch, who out-did, if possible, his master in boldness and cruelty. The commerce of the Mediterranean was greatly interrupted by his gallies; and such frequent alarms were given to the coasts of Spain, that there was a necessity for

22. *Istuanhaffc, Hist. Hung. lib. xiv.*

erecting watch-towers at certain distances, and of keeping a guard constantly employed, in order to defy the approach of his squadrons, and to protect the inhabitants from the depredations of the rapacious ruffians with which they were manned.

LETTER  
LIX.

A. D. 1541.

CHARLES, before he left Spain, had resolved to humble this daring corsair, and to exterminate the lawless crew who had so long infested the ocean. With this view he had ordered a fleet and army to assemble on the coast of Italy: and although the autumn was now far advanced, he obstinately persisted in his purpose, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Andrew Doria, who conjured him not to expose so noble an armament to almost inevitable destruction, by venturing at so late a season to approach the stormy coast of Algiers. Doria's words proved prophetic.

No sooner had the emperor landed in Barbary, than a frightful hurricane arose; scattered his fleet, and dashed great part of it in pieces; while he and his land forces were exposed to all the fury of the elements, in an enemy's country, without a hut or a tent to shelter them, or so much as a spot of firm ground on which they could rest their wearied bodies. In this calamitous situation, cold and wet, they continued during several days, harrassed at the same time by the attacks of the Algerines. At last Doria happily being able to assemble the remains of the fleet, Charles was glad to reembark, after having lost the greater part of his army, by the inclemency of the weather, famine, or the sword of the enemy. And the men who yet survived were doomed to encounter new miseries in their return; the fleet being scattered by  
a fresh



**PART I.** a fresh storm, and the ships obliged to take shelter, separately, in those parts of Spain or Italy they could first reach <sup>22</sup>.

**A. D. 1541.**

SUCH, my dear Philip, was the result of the emperor's pompous expedition against Algiers, the most unfortunate enterprize of his reign, and that on which he built the highest hopes. But if Charles failed to acquire the glory which ever attends success, he secured that which is more essentially connected with merit. He never appeared greater than amidst his misfortunes. His firmness and constancy of spirit, his magnanimity, fortitude, humanity and compassion, were eminently conspicuous. He endured as severe hardships as the meanest soldier; he exposed his own person to whatever danger appeared; he encouraged the desponding, visited the sick and wounded, and animated all by his words and example <sup>24</sup>. He paid dearly for his obstinacy and presumption; but he made mankind sensible, that he possessed many valuable qualities, which an almost uninterrupted flow of prosperity had hitherto afforded him little opportunity of shewing.

THE loss which the emperor suffered in this calamitous enterprize encouraged the king of France to begin hostilities, on which he had been for some time resolved; an action dishonourable to civil society having furnished him with too good a pretext for taking arms. The marquis del Guasto, governor of the duchy of Milan, had got intelligence of the motions and destination of two ambassadors, Rincon and Fergoso, whom Francis had dispatched, the one to the Otto-

<sup>23</sup>. Nic. Villag. *Expedit. Car. V. ad Argvriam*. Sandov. vol. ii. Robertson, book vi.

<sup>24</sup>. Id. *Ibid.*

nan Porte, the other to the republic of Venice; and knowing how much his master wished to discover the intentions of the French monarch, and of what consequence it was to retard the execution of his measures, he employed some soldiers belonging to the garrison of Pavia to lie in wait for these ambassadors as they sailed down the Po. The ambassadors and most of their attendants were murdered, and their papers seized<sup>25</sup>.

FRANCIS immediately demanded reparation for that barbarous violence; and as Charles endeavoured to put him off with an evasive answer, he appealed to all the courts of Europe, setting forth the heinousness of the injury, the iniquity of the emperor in disregarding his just request, and the necessity of vengeance. But Charles, who was a more profound negotiator, defeated in a great measure the effects of these spirited representations. He secured the fidelity of the Protestant princes in Germany, by granting them new concessions; and he engaged the king of England to espouse his cause, under pretence of defending Europe against the Infidels; while Francis was only able to form an alliance with the kings of Denmark and Sweden (who for the first time interested themselves in the quarrels of the sovereigns of the South), and to renew his treaty with Solymán, which drew on him the indignation of Christendom.

BUT the activity of Francis supplied all the defects in his negociation. Five armies were soon ready to take the field, under different generals, and with different destinations. Nor was Charles wanting in his preparations. He and Henry, a second time, made an ideal division of the kingdom of France. But as

A. D. 1542.

<sup>25</sup>. *Mém. de Bellay.*

## PART I.

the hostilities that ensued were followed by no important consequence, nor distinguished by any memorable event, except the battle of Cerisoles, gained count d'Enguien over the Imperialists, and in which ten thousand of the emperor's best troops fell, I do not enter into particulars. It will be sufficient to serve, That, after France, Spain, Piedmont, and the Low Countries, had been alternately, or at the scene of war; after the Turkish fleet, under barossa, had ravaged the coasts of Italy, and the of France and the crescent of Mahomet had appeared in conjunction before Nice, where the cross of St. was displayed, Francis and Charles, mutually tiring and harrassing each other, concluded at Crespy a treaty of peace, in which the king of England was not mentioned; and, from being implacable enemies, became once more, in appearance, cordial friends, and allies by the ties of the blood<sup>26</sup>.

A. D. 1544.

THE chief articles in this treaty were, That all conquests which either party had made since the treaty of Nice should be restored; that the emperor should give in marriage to the duke of Orleans, either his own eldest daughter, with the Low Countries, or his second daughter of his brother Ferdinand, with the vestiture of the duchy of Milan; that Francis should renounce all pretensions to the kingdom of Naples, as well as to the sovereignty of Flanders and Artois, Charles gave up his claim to the duchy of Burgundy, and that both should unite in making war against the Turks<sup>27</sup>.

26. *Mém. de Montmor. Mém. de Bellay.*  
tom. i.

27. *Rassemblement des Tr.*

## MODERN EUROPE.

319

THE emperor was chiefly induced to grant conditions so advantageous to France, by a desire of humbling the Protestant princes in Germany. With the jurisdiction, he foresaw they would endeavour to wrest off the imperial authority; and he had determined to make his zeal for the former a pretence for checking and extending the latter. But before I enter of the wars in which that resolution involved me, I must carry forward the domestic history of France, and the knowledge of which will throw light on many foreign transactions.

LETTER  
LIX.

MEANWHILE I shall observe, for the sake of perspicuity, that the death of the duke of Orleans, before the consummation of his marriage, disentangled the emperor from the most troublesome stipulation in the treaty of Crespy; and that the French monarch, still engaged in hostilities with England, was unable to obtain any reparation for the loss which he sustained by this unforeseen event. These hostilities, those between Charles and Francis, terminated in a peace decisive. Equally tired of a struggle, attended with no glory or advantage to either; the contending powers concluded at Cambray, near Ardres, a treaty of peace, in which it was stipulated, That France should pay the arrears due by former treaties to England. These arrears did not amount to more than one-third of the sum expended by Henry on his military operations; and Francis being in no condition to discharge them, Boulogne (a chargeable pledge) was left in the hands of the English monarch as a security for the debt<sup>23</sup>. Such was the result of a war which had exhausted the wealth and strength of both kingdoms, and threatened the final ruin of one of them!

A.D. 1549

A.D. 1546.

<sup>23</sup>. Herbert. Stowe.

LETTER

## THE HISTORY OF

## LETTER LX.

*The domestic History of ENGLAND during the Reign of HENRY VIII. with some Account of the Affairs of SCOTLAND, and of the Rise of the Reformation in both Kingdoms.*

LETTER  
LX.

A.D. 1509.

**N**O prince ever ascended the throne of England with more advantages than Henry VIII. You have already had occasion, my dear Philip, to observe his fortunate situation with respect to the great powers on the continent: he was no less happy in regard to the internal state of his kingdom, and other domestic circumstances. His title to the crown was undisputed; his treasury was full; his subjects were in tranquillity; and the vigour and comeliness of his person, his freedom of manners, his love of shew, and his dexterity in every manly exercise, rendered his accession highly popular, while his proficiency in literature, and his reputation for talents, made his character respectable. Every thing seemed to prognosticate a happy and prosperous reign.

THE first act of Henry's administration confirmed the public hopes: it was the prosecution of Empson and Dudley, the two unfeeling ministers whom his father had employed in his extortions. They insisted, and perhaps justly, that they had acted solely by royal authority; but the jury was so far moved by popular prejudices as to give a verdict against them, and Henry, at the earnest desire of the people, granted a warrant for their execution<sup>t</sup>.

z. Hollingshed.

HAYING

HAVING punished the instruments of past oppression, the king's next concern was to fulfil his former engagements. He had been affianced during his father's life-time to the infanta Catharine, his brother's widow; and notwithstanding some scruples on that step, he now agreed that their nuptials should be celebrated. We shall afterwards have occasion to observe the extraordinary effects of this marriage, and of the king's remorse, either real or pretended.

LETTER  
LX.

A. D. 1509.

SOME princes have been their own ministers, but almost every one has either had a minister or a favourite: Wolsey, whose character has already been delineated, was both to Henry. Being admitted to the youthful monarch's pleasures he took the lead in every jovial conversation, and promoted, notwithstanding his religious habit, all that frolic and gaiety, which he found to be agreeable to the age and inclinations of the king. During the intervals of amusement, he introduced business and state affairs, and insinuated those maxims of conduct, which he was desirous his master should pursue<sup>a</sup>. By these means he insensibly acquired that absolute ascendant over Henry, which distinguished his administration; and the people saw, with concern, every day new instances of his uncontrouled authority.

THE duke of Buckingham, lord high constable of England, the first nobleman in the kingdom both in family and fortune, having wantonly given disgust to Wolsey, soon found reason to repent his imprudence. He was descended by a female from the duke of Gloucester, youngest son of Edward III. and being infatuated with judicial astrology, he consulted

a. Cavendish.

## PART I.

with a Carthusian friar, named Hopkins, who flattered him with the hope of ascending one day the English throne. He had even been so ungoverned as to utter some expressions against the king's life. The cardinal made these the grounds of an impeachment; and although Buckingham's threats seem to have proceeded more from indiscretion than deliberate malice, he was brought to trial, condemned, and executed<sup>3</sup>. The office of high constable, which this nobleman inherited from the Bohuns, earls of Hereford, being forfeited by his attainder, was never afterward revived in England.

A. D. 1521.

THE next memorable event in the domestic history of this reign, is the divorce of queen Catherine. The king's scruples in regard to the lawfulness of his marriage increased with the decay of the queen's beauty. She had borne him several children, but they were all dead except the princess Mary; and Henry was passionately fond of male issue. He consulted his confessor, the bishop of Lincoln, on the legality of marrying a brother's widow, and found that prelate possessed with some doubts and difficulties. He next proceeded to examine the question by his own learning and study, being himself a great divine and casuist; and having had recourse to the works of his oracle, Thomas Aquinas, he discovered that this celebrated doctor had expressly declared against the lawfulness of such marriages. The archbishop of Canterbury was now applied to, and desired to consult his brethren. All the prelates in England, except Fisher, bishop of Rochester, unanimously declared under their hand and seal, that they deemed the king's marriage unlawful<sup>4</sup>.

A. D. 1527.

Wolsey also fortified his master's scruples; and the bright eyes of Anne Boleyn, maid of honour to the

3. Herbert.

4. Burnet. *Hist. Reformat.* book i.

queen,

queen, carried home every argument to the heart of Henry, more forcibly than even the suggestions of that powerful favourite.

LETTER  
LX.

A. D. 1527.

THIS young lady was daughter of sir Thomas Bo-  
leyn, who had been employed by Henry in several  
embassies, and was allied to all the chief nobility  
in the kingdom. She had been carried over to Paris  
in early youth, by the king's sister, when espoused to  
Lewis XII. of France; and the graces of her mind,  
no less than the beauty of her person, had distinguished  
her even in that polished court. The time at which  
she returned to England is not certainly known; but  
it appears to have been after the king had entertained  
doubts concerning the lawfulness of his marriage.  
She immediately caught the roving and amorous  
eye of Henry; and as her virtue and modesty left  
him no hope of licentious indulgencies, he resolved to  
raise her to the throne, which her accomplishments,  
both natural and acquired, seemed equally fitted to  
adorn.

BUT many bars were yet in the way of Henry's  
wishes. It was not only necessary to obtain a divorce  
from the pope, but a revocation of the bull which had  
been granted for his marriage with Catharine, before  
he could marry Anne: and he had to combat all the  
interest of the emperor, whose aunt he was going to  
degrade. The king of England, however, did not  
despair of success. He was in high favour with the  
court of Rome, and he deserved to be so. He had  
not only opposed the progress of the Lutheran tenets,  
by all the influence which his extensive and almost ab-  
solute authority conferred upon him, but he had even  
written a book against them: a performance in itself



## PART I.

not contemptible, and which gave so much pleasure to Leo. X. that he conferred upon Henry the title of *Defender of the Faith*. Sensible therefore of his importance, as the chief pillar of the church, at a time when it stood in much need of support, he confidently applied to Clement VII. the reigning pontiff, for a dissolution of his marriage with Catharine.

THE pope seemed at first favourable to Henry's inclinations; but his dread of displeasing the emperor, whose prisoner he had lately been, prevented him from coming to any fixed determination. He at last, however, empowered Campeggio and Wolsey, his two legates in England, to try the validity of the king's marriage. They accordingly opened their court at London, and proceeded to the examination of the matter. The first point which came before them, and that which Henry wanted chiefly to establish, was Arthur's consummation of his marriage with Catherine; and although the queen protested that her virgin honour was yet untainted, when the king received her into his bed, and even appealed to his Grace (the title then taken by our kings) for the truth of her asseveration, stronger proofs than were produced could not be expected of such a fact, after so long an interval. But when the business seemed drawing near to a close, and while Henry was in anxious expectation of a sentence in his favour, all his hopes were suddenly blasted. Campeggio, on the most frivolous pretences, prorogued the court; and Clement, at the intercession of the emperor, revoked the cause soon after to Rome<sup>s</sup>.

THIS finess occasioned the fall of Wolsey. Anne Boleyn imputed to him the failure of her expecta-

<sup>s</sup>. Herbert. Burnet, ubi sup.

## MODERN EUROPE.

tions, and Henry, who entertained the highest opinion of the cardinal's capacity, ascribed his miscarriage in the present undertaking, not to misfortune or mistake, but to the malignity or infidelity of that minister. The great seal was taken from him, and given to sir Thomas More, a man of learning, virtue, and capacity. He was indicted in the Star-Chamber; his lands and goods were declared forfeited; his houses and furniture were seized; he was pronounced without the protection of the laws, and his person liable to be committed to custody<sup>6</sup>. The king's heart, however, relented, and the prosecution was carried no farther; but the cardinal was ordered to remove from court, and his final ruin was hanging over him.

LETTER  
LX.

A. D. 1529.

THE parliament laid hold of the present opportunity to pass several bills, restraining the impositions of the clergy; and Henry was not displeased, that the pope and his whole militia, should be made sensible of their dependence upon him, and of the willingness of his subjects, if he was so disposed, to reduce the power and privileges of ecclesiastics. Amid the anxieties with which he was agitated, he was often tempted to break off all connexion with Rome: and Anne Boleyn used every insinuation, in order to make him proceed to extremities with Clement; both as the readiest and surest means of her exaltation to the royal dignity, and of spreading the new doctrines, in which she had been initiated under

6. Strype. Cavendish. The richness of Wolsey's furniture was such as must astonish even the present age. The principal apartments of his palace were lined with cloth of gold, or cloth of silver; he had a side-board of plate of massy gold; and every other article for domestic use or ornament, was proportionably sumptuous. Ibid.

## PART I.

A. D. 1529.

the duchess of Alençon, a warm friend to the Reformation. But Henry, notwithstanding these inducements, had still many reasons to desire a good agreement with the sovereign pontiff. Having been educated in a superstitious veneration for the holy see, he dreaded the reproach of heresy; and he abhorred all alliance with the Lutherans, the chief opponents of the papal power, because Luther, their apostle, had handled him roughly, in an answer to his book in defence of the Romish communion,

A. D. 1530.

WHILE Henry was fluctuating between these contrary opinions, two of his courtiers fell accidentally, one evening, into company with Dr. Thomas Cranmer, fellow of Jesus college, in Cambridge, a man distinguished by his learning, but still more by his candour; and as the affair of the divorce became the subject of conversation, he observed, that the best way, either to quiet the king's conscience or obtain the pope's consent, would be to consult all the universities in Europe with regard to that controverted point. When Henry was informed of this proposal, he was delighted with it, and swore with great violence, "By God! Cranmer has got the right sowing by the ear." The doctor was immediately sent for, and taken into favour: the universities were consulted, according to his advice; and all of them declared the king's marriage invalid.

CLEMENT, however, lying still under the influence of the emperor, continued inflexible; and as Henry was sensible, that the extremities to which he was

pushed, both against the pope and the ecclesiastical order, must be disagreeable to Wolsey, whose opposition he dreaded, he renewed the prosecution against his ancient favourite.

LETTER  
LX.

A. D. 1530.

THE cardinal, after his disgrace, had remained for some time at Richmond; but being ordered to remove to his see of York, he took up his residence at Ca-wood, in Yorkshire, where he rendered himself extremely popular in the neighbourhood, by his affability and hospitality. In this retreat he lived, when the earl of Northumberland received orders to arrest him for high treason, and conduct him to London, as a prelude to his trial. On his journey he was seized with a disorder, which turned into a dysentery; and it was with much difficulty that he was able to reach Leicester-abbey. "I am come to lay my bones among you," said Wolsey to the abbot and monks, who came out to receive him: and he immediately took to his bed, whence he never rose more. "O had I but served my God," cried he, a little before he expired, "as diligently as I have served my king, he would not have deserted me in my grey hairs." His treason, indeed, seems rather to have been against the people than the prince, or even the state; for although the violence and obstinacy of Henry's character ought perhaps to apologize for many of the cardinal's public measures, his continued extortions upon the subject, by the most iniquitous methods, in what he called his Legantine court, admit of no alleviation.

THUS freed from a person whom he considered as an obstacle in the way of his inclinations, and sup-

**PART I.**

ported by the opinion of the learned in the step which he intended to take, Henry ordered a parliament, together with a convocation, to meet; in which he was acknowledged, "the Protector and supreme Head of the Church and Clergy of England." And being now fully determined in his own mind relative to a matter which had long engaged his thoughts, and resolved to administer ecclesiastical affairs without having farther recourse to Rome, as well as to abide all consequences, he privately celebrated his marriage with Anne Boleyn, whom he had previously created marchioness of Pembroke.

**A. D. 1532.** CRANMER, now become archbishop of Canterbury, annulled soon after the king's marriage with Catherine (a step which ought to have preceded his second nuptials), and ratified that with Anne, who was publicly crowned queen, with all the pomp and dignity suited to such a ceremony. And, to complete the satisfaction of Henry on the conclusion of this troublesome business, the queen was safely delivered of a daughter, who received the name of Elizabeth, and whom we shall afterwards see swaying the English sceptre with equal glory to herself and happiness to her people.

**A. D. 1533.**

WHEN intelligence was conveyed to Rome of these transactions, the conclave was all in a rage, and the pope was urged by the cardinals of the imperial faction, to dart his spiritual thunders against Henry. But Clement was still unwilling to proceed to extremities; he only declared Cranmer's sentence null, and threatened the king with excommunication, if he did not put things in their former condition, before a da

9. Heylin.

name:

d. In the mean time Henry was prevailed upon, <sup>LETTER</sup> by the mediation of the king of France, to submit his <sup>LX.</sup> to the Roman consistory, provided the cardinals <sup>A.D. 1533.</sup> and Imperial faction were excluded from it. The king consented; and promised, that if the king would give a written agreement to this purpose, his demands should be fully complied with. But on what slight occasions often depend the greatest events! The king appointed to carry the king's written promise, was detained beyond the day fixed: news arrived at Rome, that a libel had been published in London against the Holy See, and a farce acted before the pope in derision of the apostolic body <sup>10</sup>. The pope and cardinals entered into the consistory inflamed with rage; the marriage between Henry and Catherine was pronounced valid; the king was declared excommunicated, if he refused to adhere to it, and the rupture between England was rendered final.

THE English parliament, assembled soon after this <sup>A.D. 1534.</sup> session of the court of Rome, conferred on the king the title of "The *only supreme* HEAD of the Church of England *upon Earth*," as they had already invested him with all the real power belonging to it; a measure of the utmost consequence to the kingdom, whether considered in a civil or ecclesiastical view, and which was a memorable æra in our constitution. The legislature by thus acknowledging the king's supremacy in ecclesiastical matters, and uniting the spiritual with the temporal power, introduced greater simplicity into government, and prevented all future disputes about the limits of contending jurisdictions. A door was also opened for striking the exorbitances of superstition, and breaking the shackles, by which human reason, policy, and

10. Father Paul, lib. i.

## PART I.

A.D. 1534.

industry had so long been circumscribed; for, as a profound historian has justly observed, the prince being head of the religion, as well as of the temporal jurisdiction of the kingdom, though he might sometimes be tempted to employ the former as an engine of government, could have no interest, like the Roman pontiff, in encouraging its usurpations<sup>11</sup>.

BUT England though thus happily released from the oppressive jurisdiction of the pope, was far from enjoying religious freedom. Liberty of conscience was, if possible, more confined than ever. Henry not only retained his aversion against Luther and his doctrines, but so many of his early prejudices hung about him, that the idea of heresy still filled him with horror. Separate as he stood from the Catholic church, he continued to value himself on maintaining its dogmas, and on guarding with fire and sword the imaginary purity of his speculative opinions. All who denied the king's supremacy, the legitimacy of his daughter Elizabeth, or who embraced the tenets of the reformers, were equally the objects of his vengeance. Among the latter were many unhappy persons, who had greedily imbibed the Lutheran doctrines, during Henry's quarrel with Rome, in hopes of a total change of worship: and who having gone too far to recede, fell martyrs to their new faith. Among the former were Fisher, bishop of Rochester, and sir Thomas More, late chancellor, who refused to acknowledge the king's supremacy, and died upon A.D. 1535. the scaffold with heroic constancy. More, who was a man of a gay humour, retained even his facetiousness to the last. When he laid his head on the block, and saw the executioner ready with his weapon,

11. Humc, *Hist. Eng.* chap. xxx.

“ Stay,

“Stay, friend,” said he, “till I put aside my beard;” [LETTER LX.]  
 for, added he, “it never committed treason”<sup>12</sup>.  
 What pity, and what an instance of the inconsistency of human nature, that the man who could make a jest of death, should make a matter of conscience of the pope’s supremacy ! A. D. 1535.

ALTHOUGH Henry thus punished both Protestants and Catholics, his most dangerous enemies, he was sensible, were the zealous adherents to the ancient religion, and more especially the monks, who having their immediate dependence on the Roman pontiff, apprehended their own ruin to be the certain consequence of abolishing his authority in England. The king therefore determined to suppress the monasteries, as so many nurseries of rebellion, as well as of idleness, superstition, and folly, and to put himself in possession of their ample revenues. In order to effectuate this robbery with some colour of justice, he appointed commissioners to visit all religious houses; and these men, acquainted with the king’s design, brought reports, whether true or false, of such frightful disorders, lewdness, ignorance, priest-craft, and unnatural lusts, as filled the nation with horror against institutions held sacred by their ancestors, and lately objects of the most profound veneration. The lesser monasteries, said to have been the most corrupted, to the number of three hundred and seventy-six, were at once suppressed by parliament; and their revenues, A. D. 1536. goods, chattles, and plate, were granted to the king<sup>13</sup>.

THE convocation, which sat at the same time with the parliament, passed a vote for a new translation of

<sup>12</sup>. *Life of Sir T. More.* Fox. Herbert.

<sup>13</sup>. Burnet.



**PART I.**  
**A.D. 1536.**

the Bible, none being yet published, by authority, in the English language; and the Reformation seemed fast gaining ground in the kingdom, though the king still declared himself its enemy, when its promoters, Crammer, Latimer, and others, met with a severe mortification, which seemed to blast all their hopes, in the untimely fate of their patroness, Anne Boleyn.

THIS lady now began to experience the decay of the king's affections, and the capriciousness of his temper. That heart whose allegiance she had withdrawn from another, revolted at last against herself. Henry's passion, which had subsisted in full force, during the six years that the prosecution of the divorce lasted and seemed only to increase under difficulties, had scarcely attained possession of its object, when it sunk into langour, succeeded by disgust. His love was suddenly transferred to a new mistress. The charms of Jane Seymour, maid of honour to the queen, a young lady of exquisite beauty, had entirely captivated him; and as he appeared to have had little idea of any other connexion than that of marriage, he thought of nothing but how to raise her to his bed and throne.

THIS peculiarity in Henry's disposition, proceeding from an indolence of temper, or an aversion against the vice of gallantry, involved him in crimes of a blacker dye, and in greater anxieties, than those which he sought to avoid by forming a legal connexion. Before he could marry Jane, it was necessary to get rid of his once beloved Anne, now become a bar in the way of his felicity. That obstacle, however, was soon removed. The heart is not more ingenious in suggesting apologies for its deviations, than courtiers in finding expedients for gratifying the inclinations

of

of their prince. The queen's enemies, among Henry's courtiers, immediately sensible of the alienation of the king's affections, accomplished her ruin by flattering his new passion. They represented that freedom of manner, which Anne had acquired in France, as a dissolute levity: they indirectly accused her of a criminal correspondence with several gentlemen of the bedchamber, and even with her own brother! and they extolled the virtues of Jane Seymour<sup>14</sup>. Henry believed all, because he wished to be convinced. The queen was committed to the Tower; impeached, brought to trial; condemned without evidence, and executed without remorse. History affords us no reason to call her innocence in question; and the king, by marrying her known rival the day after her execution; made the motives of his conduct sufficiently evident, and left the world in little doubt about the iniquity of her sentence.

LETTER  
LX.  
A.D. 1556

If farther arguments, my dear Philip, should be thought necessary in support of the innocence of the unfortunate Anne Boleyn, her serenity, and even cheerfulness, while under confinement and sentence of death, ought to have its weight, as it is perhaps unexampled in a woman, and could not well be the associate of guilt. "Never prince," says she, in a letter to Henry, "had wife more loyal in all duty, and in all true affection, than you have ever found in Anne Boleyn: with which name and place I could willingly have contented myself, if God, and your grace's pleasure had been so pleased: neither did I at any time so far forgot myself in my exaltation, or received queenship, but that I always looked for such an alteration as I now find; for the ground of my

14. Strype, Burnet.

"prefer-

## PART I.

A.D. 1536.

“ preferment being on no surer foundation than your  
 “ grace’s fancy, the least alteration I knew was fit  
 “ and sufficient to draw that fancy to some other ob-  
 “ ject.” In another letter to the king, she says, “ You  
 “ have raised me from a private gentlewoman to a  
 “ marchioness; from a marchioness to a queen; and  
 “ since you can exalt me no higher in this world, you  
 “ are resolved to send me to heaven, that I may be-  
 “ come a saint !” This gaiety continued to the last.  
 The morning of her catastrophe, conversing with the  
 lieutenant of the Tower on what she was going to suf-  
 fer, he endeavoured to comfort her by the shortness of  
 its duration. “ The executioner indeed,” replied  
 she, “ I am told is very expert; and I have but a  
 “ slender neck;” grasping it with her hand, and  
 smiling<sup>15</sup>. The queen’s brother, and three gentlemen  
 of the bedchamber, also fell victims to the king’s sus-  
 picions; or rather were sacrificed to hallow his nup-  
 tials with Jane Seymour.

THE Catholics, who had been the chief instru-  
 ments of these tragical events, did not reap so much  
 advantage from the fall of queen Anne as they expect-  
 ed. The friends of the Reformation still maintained  
 their credit with the king; and articles of faith were  
 drawn up by the convocation under Henry’s eye,  
 more favourable to the new than the old religion,  
 but still more conformable to the ideas of the royal  
 theologian, than agreeable to the partizans of either.  
 Prudence, however, taught the Protestants to be silent,  
 and to rest satisfied with the ground which they had  
 gained. The disappointed Catholics were less quiet.  
 The late innovations, particularly the dissolution of  
 the smaller monasteries, and the imminent danger to

15. Ibid,

which

which all the rest were exposed, had bred discontents among the people. The Romish religion, suited to vulgar capacity, took hold of the multitude by powerful motives : they were interested for the souls of their forefathers, which they believed must now lie during many ages in the torments of purgatory, for want of masses to relieve them. The expelled monks, wandering about the country, encouraged these prejudices to rouse the populace to rebellion ; and they assembled in large bodies in different parts of the kingdom ; particularly in Lincolnshire and the northern counties. But by the prudent conduct of the duke of Norfolk, who commanded the king's forces, and who secretly favoured the cause of the rebels, but not their rebellious measures, tranquillity was happily restored to the kingdom, with little effusion of blood<sup>16</sup>.

LETTER  
LX.  
A.D. 1536.

THE suppression of these insurrections was followed by an event which completed Henry's domestic felicity ; the birth of a son, who was baptized under the name of Edward. But this happiness was not without alloy : the queen died two days after. A son, however, had been so long, and so ardently desired by Henry, and was now become so necessary, in order to prevent disputes with regard to the succession, the two princesses being declared illegitimate, that the king's sorrow was drowned in his joy. And his authority being thus confirmed at home, and his consideration increased abroad, he carried into execution a measure on which he had been long resolved, the utter destruction of the monasteries.

A.D. 15

THE better to reconcile the minds of the people to this great innovation, the impostures of the monks

A.D. 1583.

16. Herbert.

**PART I.** were zealously brought to light. Among the sacred  
**A.D. 1538.** repositories of convents were found, the parings of St. Edmund's toes; some coals that roasted St. Laurence; the girdle of the blessed Virgin, shewn in eleven different places; two or three heads of St. Ursula; and part of St. Thomas of Canterbury's shirt, much revered by big-bellied women. Some impostures of a more artificial nature also were discovered; particularly a miraculous crucifix, which had been kept at Boxley in Kent, and bore the appellation of the *Rood of Grace*, the eyes, lips, and head of which moved on the approach of its votaries. The crucifix was publicly broke at St. Paul's-cross, and the springs and wheels by which it had been secretly moved were shewn to the whole people. The shrine of St. Thomas à Becket, commonly called St. Thomas of Canterbury, was likewise destroyed, and seemingly deservedly, though much to the regret of the populace. So superstitious was the veneration for this saint, that it appeared, in one year, not a penny had been offered at God's altar; at the Virgin's only four pounds one shilling and eight-pence; but at that of St. Thomas, nine hundred and fifty-four pounds six shillings and three-pence.<sup>17</sup>

THE exposure of such enormous absurdities and impieties took off much of the odium from a measure in itself rapacious, violent, and unjust. The acquiescence of the nobility and gentry was farther procured by grants of the revenues of convents, or leases of them at a reduced rent: and the minds of the people were quieted by being told, that the king would have no farther occasion to levy taxes, but would be able, during war as well as peace, to bear from the abbey-

17. Burnet. Herbert. Godwin. Stowe.

lands the whole expence of government <sup>18.</sup> Henry also settled pensions on the ejected monks, and erected six new bishopricks; which silenced the murmurs of such of the secular clergy as were not altogether wedded to the Romish communion.

LETTER  
LX.

A.D. 1538.

AFTER renouncing the pope's supremacy, and suppressing monasteries, the spirit of opposition, it was thought, would lead the king to declare war against the whole doctrine and worship, as well as discipline of the church of Rome. But although Henry, since he came to the years of maturity, had been gradually changing the tenets of that theological system in which he had been educated, he was no less dogmatical in the few which yet remained to him, than if the whole fabric had been preserved entire; and so great was his scholastic arrogance, though he stood alone in his belief, that he thought himself entitled to regulate by his own particular standard the religious faith of the nation. The chancellor was accordingly ordered to open the parliament with informing them, that it was his majesty's earnest desire to extirpate from his kingdom all diversity of opinion in matters of religion. In consequence of this desire, a bill, consisting of six articles, called by the Protestants the *Bloody Bill*, was drawn up according to the king's ideas; and having passed through both houses, received the royal assent. In this statute was established the doctrine of the real presence, or transubstantiation; the communion in one kind, or with bread only; the perpetual obligation of vows of chastity; the utility of private masses; the celibacy of the clergy and the necessity of auricular confession. The violation of either of these articles was made punishable with death; and a denial

A.D. 1539.

18. Coke, *Inst.* fol. 44.

**PART I.** of the real presence, to the disgrace of common-sense, could not be atoned for by the most humble recantation<sup>19</sup>: an instance of severity unknown even to the inquisition!

**A. D. 1539.**

THE affairs of religion being thus settled, the king began to think of a new wife; and as the duke of Cleves had great interest with the princes of the Smalcaldic league, whose alliance was considered as advantageous to England, Henry solicited in marriage Anne, daughter of that duke. A flattering picture of this princess, drawn by Hans Holbein, co-operated with these political motives to determine the king in his choice; and Anne was sent over to England. But Henry, though fond of large women, no sooner saw her, than (so devoid was she of beauty and grace!) he swore she was a great Flanders mare, and declared he never could bear her any affection. He resolved, however, to consummate his marriage, notwithstanding his dislike, sensible that a contrary conduct would be highly resented by her friends and family. He therefore told Cromwell, his minister since the death of Wolsey, and who had been instrumental in forming the match, that "as matters had gone so far, he must put his neck into the yoke."

**A. D. 1540.**

BUT although political considerations had induced Henry to consummate, at least in appearance, his marriage with Anne of Cleves, they could not save him from disgust. His aversion against her increased every day; and Cromwell, though still seemingly in favour, saw his own ruin, and the queen's disgrace, fast approaching. An unforeseen cause accelerated

<sup>19</sup> Stat. 31 Henry VIII. cap. xiv.

both. The king had fixed his affections on Catherine Howard, niece to the duke of Norfolk; and as usual, he determined to gratify his passion, by making her his royal consort. The duke, who had long been at enmity with Cromwell, made use of his niece's insinuations against that minister, who was a promoter of the Reformation, as he formerly had of those of Anne Boleyn against Wolsey. Cromwell was accused of heresy and treason, committed to the Tower, condemned and executed <sup>20</sup>. He was a man of low birth, but worthy, by his integrity and abilities, of the high station to which he was raised; worthy of a better master, and a better fate.

LETTER  
I.X.  
A. D. 1540.

THE measures for divorcing Henry from Anne of Cleves were carried forward at the same time with the bill of attainder against Cromwell. Henry pleaded, that when he espoused Anne, he had not *inwardly* given his consent; and that, notwithstanding the near approach he had made, he had not thought proper to *consummate* the marriage. The convocation sustained these reasons, and solemnly annulled the engagements between the king and queen. The parliament, ever obsequious to Henry's will, ratified the decision of the church.

THE marriage of the king with Catherine Howard, which followed soon after his divorce from Anne of Cleves, was regarded as a favourable incident by the Catholic party; and the subsequent events corresponded with their expectations. The king's councils being now directed by the duke of Norfolk and bishop Gardiner, a furious persecution was begun against the Protestants. The *Law of the Six Articles*, which

20. Burnet, vol. i.



Cromwell had, on all occasions, taken care to soften, was executed with rigour; and Dr. Barnes, and several other clergymen, were prosecuted, and brought to the stake.

**B**UT Henry's attention was soon turned to prosecutions of a very different kind; and on a subject which affected him still more sensibly than even the violation of his favourite theological statute. He had thought himself extremely happy in his new consort. The elegant person, and agreeable manners of Catherine, had entirely captivated his heart; and he had publicly, in his chapel, returned thanks to Heaven for the felicity which the conjugal state afforded him. This happiness, however, was of short duration. It disappeared like a gaudy meteor, almost as soon as perceived; and its loss afflicted the king the more keenly, by reason of the circumstances with which it was accompanied. It not only vanished on a point which intimately concerned his peace, but on which he peculiarly valued himself, his skill in distinguishing a true maid. It at once wounded his pride and his passion. The queen had led a dissolute life before marriage. She had abandoned herself to the footmen of her grandmother, the old duchess of Norfolk, while her maid was in the same chamber, and even along with her in the same bed. The proofs of this licentiousness were positive. There was also room to believe, notwithstanding her declaration to the contrary, that she had not been faithful to the king's bed; for it appeared, that one Colepepper had passed the night with her alone since her marriage, and that she had taken Derham, one of her old paramours into her service".

WHEN these proofs of Catherine's incontinence were laid before Henry, he was so deeply affected, that he remained for some moments speechless, and at last burst into tears. The natural ferocity of his temper, however, soon returned; and he assembled a parliament, the usual instrument of his tyranny, in order to satiate his vengeance. A bill of attainder was voted against the queen and the viscountess of Rochford, who had conducted her criminal amours. A singular bill was also passed at the same time, making it treason in any person to conceal the incontinence of a queen of England; and farther enacting, That if a king of England should marry any woman who had been incontinent, taking her for a true maid, she likewise should be deemed guilty of treason, in case she did not previously reveal her shame to him—And the queen and lady Rochford were beheaded on Tower-hill, though their guilt had preceded the framing of that statute <sup>22</sup>.

LETTER  
IX.

A. D. 1542.

HAVING got over this troublesome business, Henry again turned his attention to the affairs of religion; altering several times the national creed, according to his own capricious humour. And he turned his arms against his nephew, James V. of Scotland, because that prince had refused to imitate his conduct, in throwing off the jurisdiction of the pope.

THE principles of the Reformation had already found their way into Scotland. Several persons there had fallen martyrs to the new faith; and the nobility, invited by the example of England, had cast a wishful eye on the ecclesiastical revenues; hoping, if a change in religion should take place, to enrich themselves

22. Buruct, ubi sup.

PART I.  
A. D. 1542.

with the plunder of the church. But the king, though very poor, not superstitious, and somewhat inclined to magnificence, fortified by the arguments of the clergy, and guided by the inclinations of his queen, a daughter of the duke of Guise, resisted every temptation to such robbery, and continued faithful to the see of Rome. This respect for the rights of the church proved fatal to James, and brought many miseries on his kingdom, both before and after his death.

Aug. 24.

HAD the king of Scotland flattered the pride of Henry, by following his example in ecclesiastical affairs, he would have been supported in his measures with the whole force of England; whereas he now had that force to oppose, and a dissatisfied people to rule. Flushed, however, with an advantage gained over a detachment from the English army by lord Hume, he marched at the head of thirty thousand men to meet their main body, commanded by the duke of Norfolk, who had advanced as far as Kelso; and as that nobleman retreated on the approach of the Scottish army, the king resolved to enter England, and take vengeance on the invaders. But his nobility, dissatisfied on account of the preference shewn to the clergy, opposed his resolution, and refused to attend him. Equally enraged and surprised at this mutiny, he reproached them with cowardice, he threatened punishment; and still determined to make some impression on the enemy's country with the forces that adhered to him, he dispatched ten thousand men to ravage the western border. They entered England near Solway Frith, while he himself followed, at a small distance, ready to join them upon occasion.

BUT this expedition also proved unsuccessful, and even highly unfortunate: and from a cause allied to

that which had ruined the former enterprize. The king of Scotland, become peevish by disappointment, and dissident of all his nobility, deprived lord Maxwell of the command of the army, and conferred it on Oliver Sinclair, a private gentleman. The Scots, displeased with this alteration, were preparing to disband; when a small body of English forces appearing, they suddenly took to flight, and were all either killed or made prisoners <sup>21</sup>.

LETTER  
LX.  
A. D. 1542.

THIS disaster had such an effect on the haughty mind of James, that he would admit of no counsel or consolation, but abandoned himself wholly to despair. All the passions that are inimical to human life, shame, rage, and despondency, took hold of him at once. His body wasted daily by sympathizing with his anxious mind; and he was brought to the verge of the grave, when his queen was safely delivered of the celebrated and unfortunate Mary Stuart. Having no former issue living, he anxiously inquired whether his consort had brought him a son or a daughter; and being told a daughter, he turned himself in his bed, and said, the "The crown came with a woman, and it will go with a woman! Many woes await this unhappy kingdom: Henry will make it his own either by force of arms or by marriage." He expired soon after uttering these sorrowful words.

Dec. 14.

WHAT James had foretold came in part to pass. Henry was no sooner informed of the victory at Solway, and the death of his nephew, than he formed the project of uniting Scotland to his own dominions,

21. Buchanan, lib. xiv. Hume, chap. xxxiii.

**PART I.** by marrying prince Edward, his only son, to the  
**A.D. 1542.** heirs of that kingdom. For this purpose he called  
 together such of the Scottish nobility as were his prisoners, and offered them their liberty without ransom, provided they would second his views. They readily agreed to a proposal so favourable to themselves, and which seemed so natural, and so advantageous to both kingdoms; and by their means, notwithstanding the opposition of cardinal Beaton, archbishop of St. Andrews, who had placed himself at the head of the regency, by forging a will in the name of the late king, the parliament of Scotland consented to a treaty of marriage and union with England <sup>24</sup>. The stipulations in that treaty, it would be of little consequence to enumerate, as they were never executed.

HENRY now finding himself at peace with all his neighbours, began to look out for another wife; and by espousing Catherine Par, relict of lord Latimer, he confirmed what had been foretold in jest, that he would be obliged to marry a widow, as no reputed maid would ever be persuaded to incur the penalty of his statute respecting virginity. Catherine was a woman of virtue and good sense: and though somewhat inclined to promote the Reformation, a circumstance which gave great joy to the Protestant party, she delivered her sentiments with much caution in regard to the new doctrines. Henry, however, whose favourite topic of conversation was theology, by engaging her frequently in religious disputes, found means to discover her real principles; and his unwieldy corpulence and ill health having soured his temper, and increased the severity of his naturally passionate

<sup>24</sup> Id. Ibid. See also Sir Ralph Sadler's *Letters*.

sionate and tyrannical disposition, he ordered an impeachment to be drawn up against her. And the greatest prudence and address only could have saved her from the block.

LETTER  
LX.

A. D. 1543.

HAVING happily got information of the king's displeasure, Catherine replied, when he next offered to converse with her on theological subjects, that such profound speculations were little suited to the natural imbecility of her sex; observing, at the same time, that though she declined not discourse on any topic, however sublime, when proposed by his majesty, she well knew that her conceptions could serve no other purpose than to afford him a momentary amusement; that she found conversation apt to languish when not revived by some opposition, and had ventured, at times, to feign a contrariety of sentiment, in order to afford him the pleasure of refuting her. And she ingeniously added, that she also proposed by this innocent artifice to engage the king in arguments, whence she had observed, by frequent experience, that she reaped much profit and instruction. "And is it so, sweetheart!" said Henry; "then we are friends again!" embracing her tenderly, and assuring her of his affection. The chancellor however, ignorant of this reconciliation, came next day to arrest Catherine, pursuant to the king's warrant, but was dismissed by Henry with the opprobrious appellations of *knave*, *fool*, and *beast*<sup>25</sup>. So violent and capricious was the temper of that prince!

A. D. 1546.

BUT although the queen was so fortunate as to appease Henry's resentment against herself, she could

<sup>25</sup>. Burnet, vol. i. Herbert, p. 560.  
vol. ii.

Fox, *Acts and Monuments*.

PART I.  
A. D. 1546.

not save those whom she most respected. Catherine and Cranmer excepted, the king punished with unfeeling rigour all others, who presumed to differ from him in religious opinions; but more especially in the capital tenet, transubstantiation. Among the unhappy victims committed to the flames for denying that absurd doctrine, was Anne Askue, a young woman of singular beauty and merit, connected with the principal ladies at court, and even with the queen. She died with great tranquillity and fortitude, refusing to earn, by recantation, a pardon, though offered her at the stake <sup>25</sup>.

NOR did Henry's tyrannical and persecuting spirit confine its vengeance to religious offenders: it was no less severe against such as excited his political jealousy. Amongst these were the duke of Norfolk and his gallant son the earl of Surrey. The duke had rendered considerable services to the crown; and although understood to be the head of the Catholic party, he had always conformed to the religion of the court. He had acquired an immense fortune in consequence of the favours bestowed upon him by Henry, and was confessedly the first subject in England. That eminence drew upon him the king's jealousy. As Henry found his death approaching, he was afraid that Norfolk might disturb the Government during his son's minority, or alter his religious system.

THE earl of Surrey was a young nobleman of the most promising hopes, distinguished by every accomplishment which could adorn a scholar, a courtier, or a soldier of that age. But he did not always regulate his conduct by the caution and reserve which his si-

25. Id. *ibid.*

tuation required: and as he had declined all proposals of marriage among the nobility, Henry imagined that he entertained hopes of espousing his eldest daughter, the princess Mary. The suspicion of such a dangerous ambition was enough. Both he and his father, the duke of Norfolk, were committed to the Tower; tried for high treason, and condemned to suffer death, without any evidence of guilt being produced against either of them; unless that the earl had quartered the arms of Edward the Confessor on his scutcheon, which was considered as a proof of his aspiring to the crown, although the practice and privilege of so doing had been openly avowed by himself, and maintained by his ancestors. Surrey was immediately executed, and an order was issued for the execution of Norfolk; but the king's death happening in the interval, nothing farther was done in the matter <sup>27</sup>.

A.D. 1547.

Henry's health had long been declining, and his approaching dissolution had been foreseen by all around him for some days; but as it had been declared treason to foretell the king's death, no one durst inform him of his condition, lest he should, in the first transports of his fury, order the author of such intelligence to immediate punishment. Sir Anthony Denny, however, at last ventured to make known to him the awful truth. He signified his resignation, and desired that Cranmer might be sent for. The primate came, though not before the king was speechless; but as he still seemed to retain his senses, Cranmer desired him to give some sign of his dying in the faith of Christ. He squeezed the primate's hand, and immediately expired, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and thirty-eighth of his reign <sup>28</sup>; affording, in his end, a striking

<sup>27</sup> Burnet, vol. i. Fox, vol. ii. Fuller.

<sup>28</sup> Burnet. Herbert.

example,



## PART I.

A.D. 1547.

example, that composure in the hour of death is not the inseparable characteristic of a life well-spent, nor vengeance in this world the universal fate of blood-thirsty tyrants. Happily we know, that there is a state beyond the grave, where all accounts will be settled, and a tribunal before which every one must answer for the deeds done in the flesh; otherwise we should be apt to conclude, from seeing the same things happen to the just and to the unjust, to the cruel and the merciful, that there was no eye in heaven that regarded the actions of man nor any arm to punish.

BUT the history of this reign, my dear Philip, yields other lessons than those of a speculative morality; lessons which come home to the breast of every Englishman, and which he ought to remember every moment of his existence. It teaches us the most alarming of all political truths; "That absolute despotism may prevail in a state, and yet the form of a free constitution remain." Nay, it even leads us to a conjecture still more interesting to Britons, "That in this country, an ambitious prince may most successfully exercise his tyrannies under the shelter of those barriers which the constitution has placed as the security of national freedom; of our lives, our liberty, and our property."

HENRY changed the national religion, and, in a great measure, the spirit of the laws of England. He perpetrated the most enormous violences against the first men in the kingdom; he loaded the people with oppressive taxes, and he pillaged them by loans, which it was known he never meant to repay; but he never attempted to abolish the parliament, or even to retrench any of its doubtful privileges. The parliament

ment was the prime minister of his tyrannical administration. It authorised his oppressive taxes, and absolved him from the payment of his debts: it gave its sanction to his most despotic and sanguinary measures; to measures, which, of himself, he durst not have carried into execution; or which, if supposed to be merely the result of his own arbitrary will, would have roused the spirit of the nation to assert the rights of humanity, and the privileges of a free people: and law would have been given to the tyrant's power, or some arm would have been found bold enough to rid the world of such a scourge, by carrying vengeance to his heart.

THE conclusion which I mean to draw from these facts and reasonings is, and it deserves our most serious attention, That the British constitution, though so happily poised, that no one part of it seems to preponderate; though so admirably constructed that every one of the three estates is a check upon each of the other two, and both houses of parliament upon the crown; though the most rational and perfect system of freedom that human wisdom has framed, it is no positive security against the despotism of an artful or tyrannical prince; and that, if Britons should ever become slaves, such an event is not likely to happen, as in France, by the abolition of our national assembly, but by the corruption of its members; by making that proud bulwark of our liberty, as in ancient Rome, the means of our slavery. Our admirable constitution is but a gay curtain to conceal our shame, and the iniquity of our oppressors, unless our senators are animated by the same spirit which gave it birth. If they can be over-awed by threats, seduced from their duty by bribes, or allured by promises,  
another

## PART I.

another Henry may rule us with a rod of iron, and drench once more the scaffold with the best blood of the nation : the parliament will be the humble and secure instrument of his tyrannies.

WE must now, my dear Philip, return to the continent, where we left Charles V. attempting that despotism which Henry VIII. had accomplished.

## LETTER LXI.

*A General View of the Continent of EUROPE, including the Progress of the REFORMATION in GERMANY, from the first Meeting of the COUNCIL of TRENT, in 1546, to the PEACE of RELIGION concluded at PASSAU, in 1552.*

LETTER  
LXI.

A.D. 1546.

IN consequence of the resolution of the emperor Charles V. to humble the Protestant princes, his chief motive, as has been observed, for concluding a disadvantageous peace with Francis I. he sent ambassadors to Constantinople, and concluded a dishonourable truce with Solyman II. He stipulated, that his brother Ferdinand should pay an annual tribute to the Porte for that part of Hungary which still acknowledged his sway, and that the sultan should retain the imperial and undisturbed possession of the other<sup>1</sup>. Charles at the same time entered into an alliance with Paul III. the reigning pontiff, for the extirpation of heresy ; or, in other words, for oppressing the liberties of Germany, under pretence of maintaining the jurisdiction of the Holy See.

1. Barre. tom. viii. *Mém. de Ribier.*

MEANWHILE a general council had been assembled at Trent, by the authority of the pope, in order to regulate the affairs of religion. But the Protestants, though they had appealed to a general council, refused to acknowledge the legality of this, which they were sensible was convoked to condemn, not to examine their opinions. The proceedings of the council confirmed them in this resolution; they therefore renounced all connection with it; and as they had discovered the emperor's ambitious views, they began to prepare for their own defence.

LETTER  
LXI.  
A. D. 1546.

THE emperor, whose schemes were not yet ripe for execution, though much chagrined at this obstinacy, smothered his resentment; and, in order to gain time, he attempted anew that dissimulation which he had so often practised with success. He assured, and endeavoured to persuade the princes of the Smalkaldic league, that he had no design to abridge their spiritual liberty. It being impossible however, to conceal his military preparations, he declared, That he took arms, not in a religious, but in a civil quarrel; not to oppress those who continued to behave as quiet and dutiful subjects, but to humble the arrogance of such as had thrown off all sense of that subordination in which they were placed under him, as the head of the Germanic body. But the substance of his treaty with the pope, coming to light, these artifices did not long impose on the greater and sounder part of the Protestant confederacy. Its more intelligent members saw, that not only the suppression of the reformed religion, but the extinction of the German liberties was intended; and as they determined neither to renounce those sacred truths, the knowledge of which they had attained by means so wonderful, nor to abandon those

## PART I.

A.D. 1546.

those civil rights which had been transmitted to them from their ancestors, they had immediately recourse to arms<sup>2</sup>.

IN the meantime the death of Luther, their great apostle, threw the German Protestants into much consternation, and filled the Catholics with excessive and even indecent joy; neither party reflecting, that his opinions were now so firmly rooted, as to stand in no farther need of his fostering hand. The members of the Smalkaldic league were also discouraged by the little success of their negotiations with foreign courts; having applied in vain for assistance, not only to the republic of Venice, and to the Swiss cantons, but to the kings of France and England. But they found at home no difficulty in bringing a sufficient force into the field.

GERMANY abounded at that time in inhabitants. The feudal institutions subsisted in full force, and enabled the nobles to call out their numerous vassals, and to put them in motion on the shortest warning. The martial spirit of the people not broken or enervated by the introduction of commerce and arts, had acquired additional vigour during the continual wars in which they had been employed, for half a century, either by the emperors or the kings of France. On every opportunity of entering upon action, they were accustomed to run eagerly to arms: and to every standard that was erected, volunteers flocked from all quarters. Zeal seconded on this occasion their native ardour. Men, on whom the doctrines of the Reformation had made that deep impression which accompanies truth when first discovered, prepared to maintain it with proportional courage; and among a warlike peo-

2. Sleid. Thuan, Father Paul,

ple, it appeared impossible to remain inactive, when the defence of religion and liberty were the motives for drawing the sword. The confederates were therefore able, in a few weeks, to assemble an army of seventy thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, provided with every thing necessary for the operations of war <sup>3</sup>.

LETTER  
LII  
A.D. 1648

THE emperor was in no condition to resist such a force : and had the Protestants immediately proceeded to hostilities, they might have dictated their own terms. But they imprudently negotiated instead of acting, till Charles received supplies from Italy and the Low Countries. He still, however, cautiously declined a battle, trusting that discord and the want of money would oblige the confederates to disperse. Meantime, he himself began to suffer from the want of forage and provisions. Great numbers of his foreign troops, unaccustomed to the climate, or the food of Germany, were become unfit for service ; and it still remained a doubtful point, whether his steadiness was most likely to fail, or the zeal of the confederates to be exhausted, when an unexpected event decided the contest, and occasioned a fatal reverse in their affairs.

SEVERAL of the protestant princes, over-awed by the emperor's power, had remained neutral ; while others, allured by the prospect of advantage, had voluntarily entered into his service. Among the latter was Maurice, marquis of Misnia and Thuringia, of the house of Saxony ; a man of bold ambition, extensive views, and profound political talents. After many conferences with Charles, and his ministers, he

3. Seehead. lib. lli. Thuan. i.

PART I.  
A.D. 1546.

concluded a treaty, by which he engaged to concur in assisting the emperor as a faithful subject; and Charles, in return, stipulated to bestow on him all the spoils of his relation and benefactor, the elector of Saxony, his dignities as well as territories.

THESE engagements, however, so contradictory to all that is just and honourable among men, Maurice was able to conceal, as they had been formed with the most mysterious secrecy. And so perfect a master was he in the art of dissimulation, that the confederates, notwithstanding his declining all connection with them, and his singular assiduity in paying court to the emperor, seem to have entertained no suspicion of his designs! — The elector of Saxony, when he marched to join his associates, even committed his dominions to the protection of Maurice, who undertook the charge with an insidious appearance of friendship. But scarce had the confederates taken the field, when he began to consult with the king of the Romans, how to invade those dominions he had engaged to defend; and no sooner did he receive a copy of the imperial ban denounced against his cousin and his father-in-law, the elector of Saxony and the landgrave of Hesse, as leaders of the confederacy, than he suddenly entered one part of the electoral territories, at the head of twelve thousand men, while Ferdinand with an army of Bohemians and Hungarians, overran the other <sup>4</sup>.

THE news of this violent invasion, and the success of Maurice, who in a short time made himself master of the whole electorate of Saxony, except Wittemberg, Gotha, and Eisenach, no sooner reached the

4. Id. ibid.

camp of the confederates than they were filled with astonishment and terror. The elector immediately proposed to return home with his troops, in order to recover his hereditary dominions; and his associates, forgetting, that it was the union of their forces which had hitherto rendered the confederacy formidable, and more than once obliged the Imperialists to think of quitting the field, consented to his proposal of dividing the army:

BETTER  
LXI.

A.D. 1546.

ULM, one of the chief cities of Suabia, highly distinguished by its zeal for the Smaikaldic league, submitted to the emperor. An example once set for deserting the common cause, the rest of the members became instantly impatient to follow it, and seemed afraid lest others, by getting the start of them in returning to their allegiance, should on that account obtain more favourable terms. All the terms, however, were sufficiently severe. Charles, being in great want of money, not only imposed heavy fines upon the princes and cities that had taken arms against him, but obliged them to deliver up their artillery and warlike stores, and to admit garrisons into their principal towns and places of strength. Thus a confederacy, so powerful lately as to shake the imperial throne, fell to pieces, and was dissolved in the space of a few weeks; scarce any of the associates now remaining in arms, except the elector of Saxony, and the landgrave of Hesse, who the emperor was at no pains to reconcile, having marked them out as the victims of his vengeance.

A.D. 1547.

MEANWHILE the elector having expelled the invaders from Saxony, not only recovered in a short

5. Sleidan. Thuan. *Mem. de Ribier.*



PART I.  
A.D. 1547.

time possession of his own territories, but over-ran Misnia, and stripped his rival of all that belonged to him, except Dresden and Leipzig; while Maurice, obliged to abandon the field to superior force and to shut himself up in his capital, dispatched courier after courier to the emperor, representing his dangerous situation, and soliciting him with the most earnest importunity to march immediately to his relief.

BUT many causes conspired to prevent the emperor from instantly taking any effectual step in favour of his ally. His army was diminished by the departure of the Flemings, and by the number of garrisons which he had been obliged to throw into the towns that had capitulated; and the pope now perceiving that ambition not religion, was the chief motive of Charles's, hostilities had weakened the imperial army still farther, by unexpectedly recalling his troops.

ALARMED at the rapid progress of Charles, Paul began to tremble, and not without reason, for the liberties of Italy. Francis also, the emperor's ancient rival, had observed with deep concern, the humiliation of Germany, and was become sensible, that if some vigorous and timely effort was not made, Charles must soon acquire such a degree of power as would enable him to give law to the rest of Europe. He therefore resolved to form such a combination against the emperor as should put a stop to his dangerous career. He accordingly negotiated for this purpose with Solyman II. with the pope, the Venetians, and with England. He encouraged the elector of Saxony and the landgrave of Hesse, by remitting them considerable sums, to continue the struggle for their liberties: he levied troops

troops in all parts of his dominions, and he contracted for a considerable body of Swiss mercenaries <sup>6</sup>.

LETT.  
LXI  
A.D. 15

MEASURES so complicated could not escape the emperor's observation, nor fail to alarm him : and the news of a conspiracy at Genoa, where Fiesco, count of Lavigna, an ambitious young nobleman, had almost overturned the government in one night, contributed yet farther to divert Charles from marching immediately into Saxony, as he was uncertain how soon he might be obliged to lead his forces into Italy. The politic Maurice, however, found means to save himself during this delay, by a pretended negociation with his injured kinsman ; while the death of Francis I. which happened before he was able to carry any of his schemes into execution, together with the final extinction of Fiesco's conspiracy, by the vigilance of the celebrated Andrew Doria, equally a friend to the emperor and republic, encouraged Charles to act with vigour in Germany ; more especially as he foresaw that Henry II. who had succeeded his father in the throne of France, though a prince of vigour and ability, would be so much occupied at home in forming his new ministry, that he had nothing to fear for some time either from the negociations or personal efforts of that young monarch.

THIS interval of security the emperor seized to take vengeance on the elector and the landgrave ; and as he was uncertain how long the calm might continue, he instantly marched into Saxony, at the head of sixteen thousand veterans. The elector's forces were more numerous, but they were divided. Charles did not allow them time to assemble. He attacked the

<sup>6</sup> Id. *ibid.*

## PART I.

A.D. 1547.

main body at Mulhausen, near Mulberg; defeated it after an obstinate dispute, and took the elector prisoner. The captive prince was immediately conducted to the emperor, whom he found standing on the field of battle, in the full exultation of victory. The elector's behaviour, even in his present unfortunate and humbling condition, was alike equal, magnanimous, and decent. It was worthy of his gallant resistance. He alike avoided a sullen pride and a mean submission. "The fortune of war," said he, "most gracious emperor, has made me your prisoner, and I hope to be treated"—Here Charles rudely interrupted him:—"And am I then, at last, acknowledged to be emperor? Charles of Ghent was the only title you lately allowed me. You shall be treated as you deserve!" turning from him with a haughty air. To this cruel repulse the king of the Romans added reproaches in his own name, using expressions still more harsh and insulting. The elector made no reply; but with an unaltered countenance, which discovered neither astonishment nor dejection, accompanied the Spanish soldiers appointed to guard him.

THE emperor speedily marched towards Wittenberg (the capital, in that age, of the electoral branch of the Saxon family) hoping that while the consternation occasioned by his victory was still recent, the inhabitants would submit as soon as he appeared before their walls. But Sybilla of Cleves, the elector's wife, a woman equally distinguished by her virtue and abilities, instead of obeying the imperial summons, or abandoning herself to tears and lamentation on account of her husband's misfortunes, animated the

7. *Hortens. de Bell. Germ.* Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book ix.

citizens by her example, as well as exhortation, to a vigorous defence; and Charles, finding that he could not suddenly reduce the place by force, had recourse to means at once ungenerous and unwarlike, but more expeditious and certain. He summoned Sybilla a second time to open the gates; informing her, that in case of refusal, the elector should answer with his head for her obstinacy. And, in order to convince her that he was in earnest, he brought his prisoner to an immediate trial, subjecting the greatest prince in the empire to the jurisdiction of a court martial composed of Spanish and Italian officers; who founding their charge against him upon the imperial ban, a sentence pronounced by the sole authority of Charles, and destitute of every legal formality which could render it valid, presumed the elector convicted of treason and rebellion, and condemned him to suffer death by being beheaded<sup>8</sup>.

LETTER  
LXI.  
A. D. 1547.

FREDERIC was amusing himself in playing at chess with his fellow-prisoner, Ernest of Brunswic, when this decree was intimated to him. He paused for a moment, though without any symptom of surprize or terror; and after taking notice of the irregularity as well as injustice of the proceedings against him, "It is easy," said he, "to comprehend the emperor's scheme. I must die because Wittemberg refuses to surrender: and I will lay down my life with pleasure, if by that sacrifice I can preserve the dignity of my house, and transmit to my posterity the inheritance which I received from my ancestors. Heaven grant," continued he, "that this sentence may affect my wife and children no more than it does me! that they may not, for the sake of adding

8. Id. *ibid.*

## PART I.

A. D. 1547.

" a few years to a life already too long, renounce both  
 " noirs and territories which they were born to pos-  
 " sess!" He then turned to his antagonist, chal-  
 lenged him to continue the game, and played with his  
 usual attention and ingenuity 9.

It happened as the elector had feared : the account  
 of his condemnation was not received with the same  
 indifference at Wittemberg. Sybilla, who had sup-  
 ported with such undaunted fortitude her husband's  
 misfortunes, while she imagined his person was free  
 from danger, felt all her resolution fail, the moment  
 his life was threatened. Anxious for his safety, she  
 despised every other consideration ; and was willing to  
 make any sacrifice, in order to appease the rage of an  
 incensed conqueror. Meantime Charles, perceiving  
 that the expedient he had tried began to produce the  
 intended effect, fell by degrees from his former firm-  
 ness, and allowed himself to soften into promises of cle-  
 mency and forgiveness, if the elector would shew him-  
 self worthy of favour, by submitting to certain con-  
 ditions. Frederic, on whom the consideration of what  
 he himself might suffer had made no impression, was  
 melted by the tears of a wife whom he loved. He  
 could not resist the entreaties of his family. In com-  
 pliance with their repeated solicitations, he agreed to  
 articles of accommodation, which he would otherwise  
 have rejected with disdain ;—to resign the electoral  
 dignity, to put the imperial troops immediately in  
 possession of his capital, and to remain the emperor's  
 prisoner. In return for these important concessions, the  
 emperor promised, not only to spare his life, but to  
 settle on him and his posterity the city of Gotha and

its territory, together with a revenue of fifty thousand florins<sup>10</sup>. The Saxon electorate was instantly bestowed upon Maurice. This sacrifice, though with no small reluctance, Charles was obliged to make : as it would neither have been safe nor prudent to violate his engagements with a warlike prince, whom he had seduced by ambitious hopes to abandon his natural allies, and whose friendship was still necessary.

LETTER  
XII.  
A. D. 1547.

THE landgrave of Hesse, Maurice's father-in-law, was still in arms, but he thought no more of resistance. Alarmed at the fate of the elector of Saxony, his only care was how to procure favourable terms from the emperor, whom he now viewed as a conqueror, to whose will there was a necessity of submitting. Maurice encouraged this tame spirit, by magnifying Charles's power, and boasting of his own interest with his victorious ally. The landgrave accordingly threw himself at the emperor's feet, after ratifying what terms he was pleased to impose, Maurice and the elector of Brandenburg being sureties for his personal freedom. But his submission was no sooner made, than Charles ordered him to be arrested, and detained prisoner under the custody of a Spanish guard ; and when the elector and Maurice, filled with indignation at being made the instruments of deceiving and ruining their friend, represented the infamy to which they would be exposed, unless the landgrave was set at liberty ; that they were bound to procure his release, having pledged their faith to that effect, and even engaged their own persons as sureties for his, the emperor, who no longer stood in need of their services, coolly replied, that he was ignorant of their parti-

<sup>10</sup> Du Mont, *Corps Diplom.* tom. iv.

PART I.

A.D. 1547.

cular or private transactions with the landgrave, nor was his conduct to be regulated by theirs. "I know," added he, in a decisive tone, "what I myself have promised; for that alone I am answerable." These words put an end to the conference, and all future entreaties proved ineffectual.

CHARLES having now in his power the two greatest princes of the empire, carried them about with him in triumph; and having humbled all whom he had not attached to his interest, proceeded to exercise the rights of a conqueror. He ordered his troops to seize the artillery and military stores of all who had been members of the Smalkaldic league; and he levied, by his sole authority, large sums, as well upon those who had served him with fidelity, as upon such as had appeared in arms against him. Upon the former, as their contingent towards a war undertaken, as he pretended, for the common benefit; upon the latter, as a fine, by way of punishment, for their rebellion. His brother Ferdinand tyrannized with still more severity over his Bohemian subjects, who had taken arms in support of their civil and religious liberties: he stripped them of all their ancient privileges, and loaded them with oppressive taxes<sup>11</sup>.

THE good fortune, or, as it has been called, the STAR of the house of Austria, was now at its height. The emperor having humbled, and, as he imagined, subdued the independent spirit of the Germans, summoned a diet to meet at Augsbourg, "in order to compose finally the controversies with regard to religion, which had so long disturbed the empire;" or,

<sup>11</sup> Thuanus, lib. iv. Struv. *Corps. Hist. Germ.* tom. ii. <sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*

in other words, to enslave the minds of those whose persons and properties were already at his disposal. He durst not, however, commit to the free suffrage of the Germans, broken as their spirit was by subjection, the determination of a matter so interesting. He therefore entered the city at the head of his Spanish troops, and assigned them quarters there. He cantoned the rest of his army in the adjacent villages; and he took possession by force of the cathedral, together with one of the principal churches, where his priests re-established with great pomp the rites of the Romish worship. These preliminary steps being taken, in order to intimidate the members, and to make them acquainted with the emperor's pleasure, he opened the diet with a speech, in which he pointed out the fatal effects of the religious dissensions which had arisen in Germany; exhorted them to recognize the authority of the general council, which he had taken so much pains to procure; and to stand the award of an assembly to which they had originally appealed, as having the sole right of judgment in the case.

LETTER  
LXI.  
A.D. 1547.

BUT the council, to which Charles wished to refer all controversies, had undergone by this time a violent change. The same jealousy, which had made the pope recall his troops, had also made him translate the council to Bologna, a city subject to his own jurisdiction. The diet of Augsburg, over-awed by threats, and influenced by promises, petitioned the pope, at the emperor's desire, in the name of the whole Germanic body, to enjoin the prelates who had retired to Bologna, to return again to Trent, and renew their deliberations in that place. But Paul eluded the demand. He made the fathers at Bologna, to whom he referred the petition of the diet, put a direct  
negative



**PART I.** negative upon the request; and Charles, as he could  
**A. D. 1547.** no longer hope to acquire such an ascendant in the council as to render it subservient to his ambitious aim, and to prevent the authority of so venerable an assembly from being turned against him, sent two Spanish lawyers to Bologna, who, in presence of the legates, protested, That the translation of the council to that place had been unnecessary, and founded on false, or frivolous pretences; that while it continued to meet there, it ought to be deemed an unlawful and schismatical conventicle, and all its decisions held null and void; and that as the pope, together with the corrupt ecclesiastics who depended upon him (those who depended upon Charles having remained at Trent) had abandoned the care of the church, the emperor as its protector, would employ all the power which God had committed to him, in order to preserve it from those calamities with which it was threatened.

**A. D. 1548.**

In consequence of this resolution, Charles employed some divines of known abilities and learning to prepare a system of doctrine, which he presented to the diet, as what all should conform to, "until a council, such as they wished for, could be called." Hence the name **INTERIM**, by which this system is known. It was conformable in almost every article to the tenets of the Romish church, and the Romish rites were enjoined; but all disputed doctrines were expressed in the softest words, in scripture phrases, or in terms of studied ambiguity. In regard to two points only, some relaxation of popish rigour was granted, and some latitude in practice admitted. Such ecclesiastics as had married, and did not chuse to part from their wives, were allowed nevertheless to perform their sacred functions; and those provinces  
 which

which had been to of the cup as well as of the br... union, were still indulged the privilege of receiv...

LETTER  
LXI.  
A. D. 1548.

THIS treatise being read in presence of the members, according to form, the archbishop of Mentz, president of the electoral college, rose up hastily, as soon as it was finished, and having thanked the emperor for his unwearied endeavours to restore peace to the church, signified, in the name of the diet, their approbation of the system of doctrine which his imperial Majesty had prepared, together with their resolution of conforming to it in every particular. And although the whole assembly was amazed at a declaration so unprecedented and unconstitutional, as well as at the elector's presumption, in pretending to deliver the sense of the diet upon a point which had not hitherto been the subject of consultation or debate, not one member had the courage to contradict what he had said. Charles therefore held the archbishop's declaration to be a ratification of the *Interim*, and prepared to enforce the observance of it as a decree of the empire.

THE *Interim* was accordingly published, immediately after the dissolution of the diet, in the German as well as in the Latin language; but, like all conciating schemes proposed to men heated by disputation, it pleased neither party. The Protestants thought it granted too little indulgence; the Catholics, too much; both were dissatisfied. The emperor, however, fond of his plan, adhered to his resolution of carrying it into execution. But this proved one of

13. Father Paul, lib. iii. Goldast. *Cons. Imp.* vol. i.

14. Id. *Ibid.*

## PART I.

A. D. 1548.

the most difficult and dangerous undertakings in his reign; for although three Protestant princes, Maurice, the elector Palatine, and the elector of Brandenburg, agreed to receive the Interim, several others remonstrated against it: and the free cities, with one voice, joined in refusing to admit it, till force taught them submission. Augsburg and Ulm being barbarously stripped of their privileges, on account of their opposition, many other cities feigned compliance. But this obedience, extorted by the rigour of authority, produced no change in the sentiments of the Germans. They submitted with reluctance to the power that oppressed them; and although for a time they concealed their resentment, it was daily gathering force, and soon broke forth with a violence that shook the Imperial throne,

IN this moment of general submission it is worthy of remark, that the elector of Saxony, though the emperor's prisoner, and tempted both by threats and promises, refused to lend his sanction to the Interim. His reasons were those of a philosopher, not of a bigot. After declaring his fixed belief in the doctrines of the Reformation, "I cannot now," said he, "in my old age, abandon the principles for which I early contended; nor, in order to procure freedom during a few declining years, will I betray that good cause, on account of which I have suffered so much, and am still willing to suffer: better for me to enjoy, in this solitude, the esteem of virtuous men, together with the approbation of my own conscience, than to return into the world with the imputation and guilt of apostacy, to disgrace and embitter the remainder of my days!"

THE contents of the Interim were no sooner known in Rome, than the members of the sacred college were excited with rage and indignation. They exclaimed against the emperor's prophane encroachment on the sacerdotal function, in presuming, with the concurrence of an assembly of laymen, to define articles of faith, and regulate modes of worship. They compared this rash deed to that of Uzziah, who, with an unhallowed hand, had touched the ark of God. But the pope, whose judgment was improved by longer experience in great transactions, and more extensive observation of human affairs, though displeased at the emperor's encroachment on his jurisdiction, viewed the matter with more indifference. He perceived that Charles, by joining any one of the contending parties in Germany, might have had it in his power to have crushed the other, but that the presumption of success had now inspired him with the vain thought of being able to domineer over both; and he foresaw that a system, which all attacked and none defended, could not be of long duration<sup>16</sup>. He was more sensibly affected by the emperor's political measures, and his own domestic concerns.

LETTER  
LXI  
A. D. 1542.

CHARLES, as I have already had occasion to notice, had married Margaret of Austria, his natural daughter, to Octavio Farnese, the pope's grandson. In his own son Lewis, Octavio's father, whose aggrandisement he had sincerely at heart, Paul bestowed the duchies of Parma and Placentia, then part of St. Peter's Patrimony. But the emperor, less fond of aggrandising his daughter, whose children were to succeed to the inheritance, refused to grant to Lewis the investiture of those territories, under pretence that

16. Father Paul, lib. iii. Palavacini, lib. ii.

they

**PART I.** they were appendages of the duchy of Milan. Enraged at such ungenerous conduct, the pope undertook to bestow himself that investiture which he craved, and the emperor persisted in refusing to confirm the deed. Hence a secret enmity took place between Paul and Charles, but one still stronger between Charles and Lewis. To complete the pope's misfortunes Lewis became one of the most detestable tyrants that ever disgraced human nature, and justly fell a sacrifice to his own crimes, and to the injuries of his oppressed subjects. Gonzaga, governor of Milan, who had watched for such an opportunity, and even abetted the conspirators, immediately took possession of Placentia, in the emperor's name, and reinstated the inhabitants in their ancient privileges. The Imperialists likewise attempted to surprise Parma, but were disappointed by the vigilance and fidelity of the garrison<sup>17</sup>.

PAUL was deeply afflicted for the loss of a son, whom, notwithstanding his vices, he loved with an excess of parental affection, and immediately demanded of the emperor the punishment of Gonzaga, and the restitution of Placentia to his grandson Octavio, its rightful heir. But Charles evaded both demands: he chose rather to bear the infamy of defrauding his own son-in-law of his patrimonial inheritance, and even to expose himself to the imputation of being accessory to the crime which had given an opportunity of seizing it, than quit a possession of such value. An ambition so rapacious, and which no considerations either of decency or justice could restrain, transported Paul beyond his usual moderation. Eager to take arms against the emperor, but consci-

17. THUCYD., lib. iv. *Mem. & Edit.*

s of his own inability to contend with such an enemy, he warmly solicited the king of France and the republic of Venice to take part in his quarrel; but finding all his negotiations ineffectual, he endeavoured to acquire by policy what he could not recover by force. Upon a supposition that Charles would not dare to detain the possessions of the Holy See, he proposed to reunite to it Parma and Placentia, by recalling his grant of Parma from Octavio, whom he could indemnify in the mean time for the loss, by a new establishment in the ecclesiastical state; and by demanding Placentia from the emperor, as part of the patrimony of the church. But while Paul was priding himself in this happy device, Octavio, an ambitious and high-spirited young man, having little faith in such a refinement in policy, and not chusing to abandon certainty for hope, applied to the emperor to protect him in his duchy<sup>18</sup>.

A.D. 1549.

THIS unexpected defection of one of his own family, of the grandson whose fortune it had been the care of his declining years to build, to an enemy whom he hated, agitated the venerable pontiff beyond his strength, and is said to have occasioned that illness of which he soon after died<sup>19</sup>.—An historian, more sprightly than profound, and more keen than candid, has here effected to raise a smile, that “any other cause than *old age* should be assigned for the death of a *man of fourscore*”<sup>20</sup>; and a more respectable historian, one equally elegant and learned, and no less intelligent than judicious, has taken much pains to prove, that the pope’s “disease was the *natural effect*

18. Thuanus, lib. vi. Palav. lib. ii.

19. Id. *ibid*.20. Voltaire, *Hist. Gen*.

**PART I.** "of *old age*, not one of those occasioned by *violence of passion* <sup>21</sup>." — But both allow that Paul was *violently* affected, when informed of Octavio's undutiful conduct; and the latter informs us, That "he was seized with such a *transport of passion*, and cried so *bitterly*, that his voice was heard in several apartments of the palace;" that "his mind was *irritated almost to madness* <sup>22</sup>." And *weak and credulous* as some historians may be, and fond of "attributing the death of illustrious persons to *extraordinary causes*," — there is surely nothing extraordinary in supposing, that *mental irritation* and *bitter crying* might occasion a *catarrh*, the distemper of which the pope died, or a *violent transport of passion* increase the *natural* imbecility of *old age*, and hasten a *man of fourscore* to the grave. It is more extraordinary, how violently some great men, from a desire of being thought superior to vulgar prejudices, will struggle against common sense.

**A. D. 1550.** PAUL was succeeded in the papacy by the cardinal de Monte, who had been employed as principal legate in the council of Trent, and owed his election to the Farnese party. He assumed the name of Julius III. and, in order to express his gratitude towards his benefactors, he put Octavio Farnese in possession of Parma, which had been delivered up to his predecessor. "I would rather," replied he, when told what injury he did the Holy See by alienating a territory of such value, "be a poor pope with the reputation of a gentleman, than a rich one with the infamy of having forgot the obligations conferred upon me, and the promises I made <sup>23</sup>." He discovered less incli-

<sup>21</sup> Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book x.

<sup>22</sup> Id. *Ibid.*

<sup>23</sup> *Memo. de Ribier.*

nation, however, to observe the oath which each cardinal had taken when he entered the conclave, that if the choice should fall on him, he would immediately call the general council to resume its deliberations. He knew, by experience, how difficult it was to confine the inquiries, or even the decisions of such a body of men; within the narrow limits which it was the interest of the court of Rome to prescribe. But as the emperor persisted in his resolution of forcing the Protestants to return into the bosom of the church, and earnestly solicited that a council might be called, in order to combat their prejudices, and support his pious intentions, Julius could not with decency reject his request; and, willing to assume to himself the merit of a measure become necessary, and also to ingratiate himself more particularly with Charles, he pretended to move, and to deliberate on the matter; and afterwards issued a bull for the council to re-assemble at Trent <sup>24</sup>.

LETTER  
LXI  
A.D. 1550.

MEANWHILE the emperor held a diet at Augsbourg, in order to enforce the observation of the Interim, and to procure a more authentic act of the empire, acknowledging the jurisdiction of the council, as well as an explicit promise of conforming to its decrees. And such absolute ascendancy had Charles acquired over the members of the Germanic body, that he procured a *Recess*, in which the authority of the council was recognized, and declared to be the proper remedy for the evils which afflicted the church. The observation of the Interim was more strictly enjoined than ever; and the emperor threatened all who had hitherto neglected, or refused to conform to it, with

<sup>24</sup>. Father Paul, lib. iii.



**PART I.** the severest effects of his vengeance, if they persisted  
 in their disobedience.

**A.D. 1550.**

**DURING** the meeting of this diet, a new attempt was made to procure liberty to the landgrave. No-  
 wise reconciled by time to his condition, he grew every  
 day more impatient of restraint; and having often  
 applied to his sureties, Maurice and the elector of  
 Brandenburg, who took every opportunity of solicit-  
 ing the emperor in his behalf, though without effect,  
 he now commanded his sons to summon them, with  
 legal formality, to perform their engagements, by sur-  
 rendering themselves to be treated as the emperor had  
 treated him. Thus pushed to extremity, the sureties  
 renewed their application to Charles. Resolved not  
 to grant their request, but anxious to get rid of their  
 incessant importunity, the emperor endeavoured to  
 prevail on the landgrave to give up the obligation  
 which he had received from them; and when that  
 prince refused to part with a security which he deemed  
 essential to his safety, Charles, by a singular act of de-  
 spotism, cut the knot which he could not untie. As  
 if faith, honour, and conscience had been subjected to  
 his sway, he, by a public deed annulled the bond  
 which Maurice and the elector of Brandenburg had  
 granted, and absolved them from all their obligations  
 to the landgrave <sup>25</sup>! A power of cancelling those so-  
 lemn contracts which are the foundation of that mu-  
 tual confidence whereby men are held together in  
 social union, was never claimed by the most despotic  
 princes or arrogating priests of heathen antiquity:  
 that enormous usurpation was reserved for the Roman  
 pontiffs, who had rendered themselves odious by the  
 exercise of such a pernicious prerogative; all Ger-

**A.D. 1551.**

<sup>25</sup>. Thuanus, lib. vi.

many was therefore filled with astonishment, when Charles assumed the same right. The princes who had hitherto contributed to his aggrandisement, began to tremble for their own safety, and to take measures for preventing the danger.

LETTER  
LXI.

A.D. 1551.

THE first check which Charles met with in his ambitious projects, and which convinced him that the Germans were not yet slaves, was in his attempt to transmit the empire, as well as the kingdom of Spain, and his dominions in the Low Countries, to his son Philip. He had formerly assisted his brother Ferdinand in obtaining the dignity of king of the Romans; and that prince had not only studied to render himself acceptable to the people, but had a son, who was born in Germany, grown up to the years of manhood, and who possessed in an eminent degree such qualities as rendered him the darling of his countrymen. The emperor, however, warmed with contemplating this vast design, flattered himself, that it was not impossible to prevail on the electors, to cancel their former choice of Ferdinand, or at least to elect Philip a second king of the Romans, substituting him as next in succession to his uncle. With this view he took Philip, who had been educated in Spain, along with him to the diet at Augsburgh, that the Germans might have an opportunity to observe and become acquainted with the prince in whose behalf he solicited their interest; but no sooner was the proposal made known, than all the electors, the ecclesiastical as well as secular, concurred in expressing such strong disapprobation of the measure, that Charles was obliged to drop his project as impracticable<sup>26</sup>. They foresaw, that by continuing the imperial crown, like an here-

<sup>26</sup> Id. *ibid.* *Mém. de Ribier.*

ditary dignity, in the same family, they should give the son an opportunity of carrying on that system of oppression which the father had begun, and put it in his power to overturn whatever was yet left entire of the ancient and venerable fabric of the German constitution.

THIS plan of domestic ambition, which had long engrossed his thoughts, being laid aside, Charles imagined he should now have leisure to turn all his attention towards his grand scheme of establishing uniformity of religion in the empire, by forcing all the contending parties to acquiesce in the decisions of the council of Trent. But the machine which he had to conduct was so great and complicated, that an unforeseen irregularity, or obstruction in one of the inferior wheels, often disconcerted the motion of the whole, and disappointed him of the effect which he depended upon with most confidence. Such an unlooked for occurrence now happened, and created new obstacles against the execution of his plan in regard to religion.

THOUGH Julius III. during the first effusions of joy and gratitude on his promotion to the papal throne, had confirmed Octavio Farnese in the possession of the duchy of Parma, he soon began to repent of his generosity. The emperor still retained possession of Placentia; and Gonzaga, governor of Milan, a sworn enemy to the family of Farnese, was preparing, by Charles's permission, to make himself master of Parma. Octavio saw his danger; and sensible of his inability to defend himself against the imperial troops, he applied to the pope for protection, as a vassal of the Holy See. But the imperial minister having already  
pre-

pre-occupied the ear of Julius, Octavio's petition met with a cold reception. Despairing, therefore, of support from his Holiness, he began to look elsewhere for assistance: and Henry II. of France, the only prince powerful enough to protect him, was fortunately in a situation to lend him that assistance,

LETTER  
LXI.  
A.D. 1551.

HAVING not only settled his own domestic concerns, but brought his transactions with the two British kingdoms which had hitherto diverted his attention from the affairs of the continent, to such an issue as he desired, Henry was at full leisure to pursue the measures which his hereditary jealousy of the emperor's power naturally suggested. He accordingly listened to the overtures of Octavio; and, glad of an opportunity of regaining footing in Italy, furnished him with what assistance he desired,

THE war of Parma, where the French took the field as the allies of the duke, and the imperialists as the protectors of the Holy See, the pope having declared Octavio's fief forfeited, was distinguished by no memorable event; but the alarm which it occasioned in Italy prevented most of the Italian prelates from repairing to Trent on the day appointed for re-assembling the council, so that the legate and nuncios found it necessary to adjourn to a future day, hoping that such a number might then assemble, as would enable them in decency to begin their deliberations. When that day came, the French ambassador demanded audience, and protested in his master's name, against an assembly called at such an improper juncture; when a war, wantonly kindled by the pope, made it impossible for the deputies from the Gallican

PART I.  
A. D. 1551.

church to resort to Trent in safety, or to deliberate concerning articles of faith and discipline with the requisite tranquillity. He declared, That Henry did not acknowledge this to be a general œcumenic council, but must consider and would treat it as a particular and partial convention<sup>27</sup>.

THAT declaration gave a deep wound to the credit of the council, at the commencement of its deliberations. The legate, however, affected to despise Henry's protest; the prelates proceeded to determine the great points in controversy concerning the sacrament of the Lord's supper, penance, and extreme unction; and the emperor strained his authority to the utmost, in order to establish the reputation and jurisdiction of that assembly. The Protestants were prohibited to teach any doctrine contrary to its decrees or to the tenets of the Romish church; and on their refusing compliance, their pastors were ejected and exiled; such magistrates as had distinguished themselves by their attachment to the new opinions were dismissed; their offices were filled with the most bigotted of their adversaries; and the people were compelled to attend the ministration of priests whom they regarded as idolaters, and to submit to the authority of rulers, whom they detested as usurpers<sup>28</sup>.

THESE tyrannical measures fully opened the eyes of Maurice of Saxony and other Lutheran princes, who, allured by the promise of liberty of conscience, and the prospect of farther advantages, had assisted the emperor in the war against the confederates of Smalkalde.

27. Father Paul, lib. iv. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book 1.

28. *Id.* *ibid.*

Maurice,

Maurice, in particular, who had long beheld with jealous concern the usurpations of Charles, now saw the necessity of setting bounds to them; and he who had perfidiously stript his nearest relation and benefactor of its hereditary possessions, and been chiefly instrumental in bringing to the brink of ruin the civil and religious liberties of his country, became the deliverer of Germany.

LETTER  
LXI.

A. D. 1551.

THE policy with which Maurice conducted himself in the execution of his design was truly admirable. He was so perfect a master of address and dissimulation, that he retained the emperor's confidence, while he recovered the good opinion of the Protestants. As he knew Charles to be inflexible with respect to the submission which he required to the Interim, he did not hesitate a moment whether he should establish that form of doctrine and worship in his dominions: he even undertook to reduce to obedience the citizens of Magdeburg, who persisted in rejecting it; and he was chosen general, by a diet assembled at Augsburg, of the imperial army levied for that purpose. But he, at the same time, issued a declaration, containing professions of his zealous attachment to the reformed religion, as well as of his resolution to guard against all the errors and encroachments of the papal see; and he entered his protest against the authority of the council of Trent, unless the Protestant divines had a full hearing granted them, and were allowed a decisive voice in that assembly; unless the pope renounced his pretensions to preside in it, should engage to submit to its decrees, and to absolve the bishops from their oath of obedience, that they might deliver their sentiments with greater freedom. He reduced Magdeburg, after a siege of twelve months; protracted by design, in order that

that his schemes might be ripened before his army was disbanded <sup>29</sup>. The public articles of capitulation were perfectly conformable to the emperor's views, and sufficiently severe. But Maurice gave the magistrates secret assurances that their city should not be dismantled, and that the inhabitants should neither be disturbed in the exercise of their religion, nor deprived of any of their ancient privileges; and they, in their turn, elected him their burgrave, a dignity which had formerly belonged to the electoral house of Saxony, and which entitled its possessor to very ample jurisdiction both in the city and its dependencies.

FAR from suspecting any thing fraudulent or collusive in the terms of accommodation, the emperor ratified them without hesitation, freely absolving the Magdeburgers from the sentence of ban denounced against them; and Maurice, under various pretences, kept his veteran troops in pay, while Charles, engaged in directing the affairs of the council, entertained no apprehension of his designs. But, previous to the unfolding of these designs, some account must be given of a new revolution in Hungary, which contributed not a little toward the extraordinary success of Maurice's operations.

WHEN Solyman deprived the young king of Hungary of the dominions which his father had left him, he granted that unfortunate prince, as has been already related, the country of Transylvania, a province of his paternal kingdom. The government of this province, together with the care of educating the infant king (for the sultan still allowed him to retain that

<sup>29</sup> Schaft. Besseln. *Obfd. Magdeb.* Arnoldi, *Vit. Mauriti.*

title),

title), was committed to Isabella the queen-mother, and Martinuzzi bishop of Waradin, whom the late king of Hungary had appointed his son's guardians, and regents of his dominions. This co-ordinate jurisdiction occasioned the same dissensions in a small principality, which it would have excited in a great monarchy. The queen and bishop grew jealous of each other's authority: both had their partizans amongst the nobility; but as Martinuzzi, by his superior talents, began to acquire the ascendant, Isabella courted the protection of the Turks. The politic prelate saw his danger; and, through the mediation of some of the nobles, who were solicitous to save their country from the calamities of civil war, he concluded an agreement with the queen. But he, at the same time, secretly dispatched one of his confidants to Vienna, and entered into a negotiation with the king of the Romans, whom he offered to assist in expelling the Turks, and in recovering possession of the Hungarian throne.

LETTER  
LXI.

A. D. 1551.

ALLURED by such a flattering prospect, Ferdinand agreed, notwithstanding his truce with Solymán, to invade the principality of Transilvania. The troops destined for that service, consisting of veteran Spanish and German soldiers, were commanded by Castaldo marquis de Piadena, an officer of great knowledge in the art of war, who was powerfully seconded by Martinuzzi and his faction among the Hungarians; and the sultan being then at the head of his forces on the borders of Persia, the Turkish basbas could not afford the queen such immediate or effectual assistance as the exigency of her affairs required. She was, therefore, obliged to listen to such conditions as she would at any other time have rejected with disdain.

She



## PART I.

A. D. 1551.

She agreed to give up Transilvania to Ferdinand, and to make over to him her son's title to the crown of Hungary, in exchange for the principalities of Op-pelen and Ratibor in Silesia, for which she immediately set out.

MARTINUZZI, as the reward of his services, was appointed governor of Transilvania, with almost unlimited authority : and he proved himself worthy of it. He conducted the war against the Turks with equal ability and success : he recovered some places, of which they had taken possession ; he rendered their attempts to reduce others abortive ; and he established the dominion of the king of the Romans not only in Transilvania, but in several of the adjacent countries. Always, however, afraid of the talents of Martinuzzi, Ferdinand now became jealous of his power ; and Castaldo, by imputing to the governor designs which he never formed, and charging him with actions of which he was not guilty ; at last convinced the king of the Romans that, in order to preserve his Hungarian crown, he must cut off that ambitious prelate. The fatal mandate was accordingly issued : Castaldo willingly undertook to execute it : Martinuzzi was assassinated. But Ferdinand, instead of the security which he expected from that barbarous measure, found his Hungarian territories only exposed to more certain danger. The nobles, detesting such jealous and cruel policy, either retired to their own estates, or grew cold in the service, if they continued with the Austrian army ; while the Turks, encouraged by the death of an enemy whose vigour and abilities they dreaded, prepared to renew hostilities with fresh vigour<sup>3</sup>.

3c. Isuanhaffi, *Hist. Reg. Hung.* lib. xvi. *Mém. de Ribier.* tom. ii.

## MODERN EUROPE.

384

MAURICE, in the meantime, having almost finished his intrigues and preparations, was on the point of taking the field against the emperor. He had concluded a treaty with Henry II. of France, who wished to distinguish himself, by trying his strength against the same enemy, whom it had been the glory of his father's reign to oppose. But as it would have been indecent in a popish prince to undertake the defence of the Protestant church, the interests of religion, however soever they might be affected by the treaty, were not once mentioned in any of the articles. The only motives assigned for now leaguering against Charles, were to procure the Landgrave liberty, and to prevent the subversion of the ancient constitution and laws of the German empire. Religious concerns the confederates pretended to commit entirely to the care of Providence.

LETTER  
LXI.  
A.D. 1551.

HAVING secured the protection of the French monarch, Maurice proceeded with great confidence, but equal caution, to execute his plan. As he judged it necessary to demand once more, before he took off the mask, that the Landgrave should be set at liberty, he sent a solemn embassy, in which most of the German princes joined, to the emperor at Inspruck, in order to enforce his request. Constant to his system in regard to the captive prince, Charles eluded the demand, though urged by such powerful intercessors. But this application, though of no benefit to the Landgrave, was of infinite service to Maurice. It served to justify his subsequent proceedings, and to demonstrate the necessity of taking arms, in order to extort that equitable concession, which his mediation or entreaty could not obtain. He accordingly dispatched Albert of Brandenburg to Paris, to hasten the march

A.D. 1551.

of

**PART I.** of the French army : he took measures to bring his own troops together on the first summons ; and he provided for the security of Saxony, while he should be absent.

**A. D. 1552.**

ALL these complicated operations were carried on with so much secrecy, as to elude the observation of Charles, whose sagacity in observing the conduct of all around him, commonly led him to excess of distrust. He remained in perfect tranquillity at Inspruck, solely occupied in counteracting the intrigues of the pope's legate at Trent, and in settling the conditions on which the Protestant divines should be admitted into the council. Even Granville, bishop of Arras his prime minister, though one of the most subtle statesmen of that, or perhaps of any age, was deceived by the exquisite address with which Maurice concealed his designs. " A drunken German head," replied he to the duke of Alva's suspicions, concerning the elector's sincerity, " is too gross to form any scheme which I cannot easily penetrate and baffle." Granville was on this occasion, however, the dupe of his own artifice. He had bribed two of Maurice's ministers, on whose information he depended for their master's intentions ; but that prince having fortunately discovered their perfidy, instead of punishing them for their crime dexterously availed himself of the fraud. He affected to treat these ministers with greater confidence than ever : he admitted them into his consultations, and seemed to lay open his heart to them ; but he took care all the while to make them acquainted with nothing but what it was his interest should be known, and they transmitted to Inspruck  
such

such accounts as lulled the crafty Granville in security <sup>31</sup>.

LETTER  
LXI.

A. D. 1552.

AT last Maurice's preparations were completed: and he had the satisfaction to find, that his intrigues and designs were still unknown. But although ready to take the field, he did not yet lay aside the arts he had hitherto employed. Pretending to be indisposed, he dispatched one of the ministers whom Granville had bribed, to inform the emperor, that he meant soon to wait upon him at Inspruck, and to apologize for his delay <sup>32</sup>. In the mean time he assembled his army, which amounted to twenty thousand foot and five thousand horse, publishing at the same time a manifesto, containing his reasons for taking arms; namely, to secure the Protestant religion, to maintain the German constitution, and deliver the Landgrave of Hesse from the miseries of a long and unjust imprisonment. To this the king of France, in his own name, added a manifesto, in which he assumed the extraordinary appellation of *Protector of the Liberties of Germany and its captive Princes* <sup>33</sup>.

No words can express the emperor's astonishment at events so unexpected. He was not in a condition to oppose such formidable enemies. His embarrassment increased their confidence: their operations were equally bold and successful. The king of France immediately entered Lorraine, made himself master of Toul, Verdun, and Metz; while Maurice, no less intrepid and enterprising in the field than cautious and crafty in the cabinet, traversed all Upper Germany, every where reinstating the magistrates whom Charles had deposed, and putting the ejected Protestant ministers in possession of the churches.

<sup>31</sup>. Melvil's *Mémoires*.

<sup>32</sup>. *Ibid.*

<sup>33</sup>. *Mémoires de Richelieu*, tom. ii.

## PART I.

A.D. 1552.

THE emperor had recourse to negotiation, the only resource of the weak ; and Maurice, conscious of his own political talents, and willing to manifest a pacific disposition, agreed to an interview with the king of the Romans, in the town of Lintz, in Austria, leaving his army to proceed on its march, under the command of the duke of Mecklenburg. Nothing was determined in the conference at Lintz, except that another should be held at Passau. Meanwhile Maurice continued his operations with vigour. He marched directly towards Inspruck ; and hoping to surprise the emperor in that open town, he advanced with the most rapid motion that could be given to so great a body of men, forcing several strong passes and bearing down all resistance.

CHARLES was happily informed of his danger a few hours before the enemy's arrival ; and although the night was far advanced, dark, and rainy, he immediately fled over the Alps in a litter, being so much afflicted with the gout as to be incapable of any other mode of travelling. Enraged that his prey should escape him, when he was just on the point of seizing it, Maurice pursued the emperor and his attendants some miles : but finding it impossible to overtake men, whose flight was hastened by fear, he returned to Inspruck, and abandoned the emperor's baggage to the pillage of his soldiers <sup>34</sup>. Meantime Charles pursued his journey, and arrived in safety at Villach in Carinthia, where he continued till matters were finally settled with the Protestant princes.

In consequence of Maurice's operations, the council of Trent broke up. The German prelates, anxious for the safety of their territories, returned home ; the rest were extremely impatient to be gone ; and the le-

34. Arnoldi, *Vit. Maurici*.

gate, who had hitherto disappointed all the endeavours of the imperial ambassadors to procure the Protestant divines an audience in the council, gladly laid hold on such a plausible pretext for dissolving an assembly, which he had found it so difficult to govern. The breach which had unhappily been made in the church, instead of being closed, was widened; and all mankind were made sensible of the inefficacy of a general council for reconciling the contending parties.

LETTER  
LXL  
A.D. 1554.

THE victorious Maurice repaired to Passau, on the day appointed for the second conference with the king of the Romans; and, as matters of the greatest consequence to the future peace and independency of the empire were then to be agitated, thither resorted the ministers of all the electors, together with deputies from most of the considerable princes and free cities. The elector limited his demand to three articles set forth in his manifesto; namely, the liberty of the Landgrave, the public exercise of the Protestant religion; and the re-establishment of the ancient constitution of Germany.

THESE demands appearing extravagant to the imperial ambassadors, they were presented by Ferdinand to the emperor in person, at Villach, in the name of all the princes of the empire, Popish as well as Protestant; in the name of such as had assisted in forwarding his ambitious schemes, as well as of those who had viewed the progress of his power with jealousy and dread. Unwilling, however, to forego at once objects which he had long pursued with ardour and hope, Charles, notwithstanding his need of peace, was deaf to the united voice of Germany. He rejected

## PART I.

A. D. 1552.

July 17.

the proffered terms with disdain ; and Maurice, well acquainted with the emperor's arts, suspecting that he meant only to amuse and deceive by a shew of negotiation, immediately rejoined his troops, and laid siege to Frankfort on the Maine. This measure had the desired effect. Firm and haughty as his nature was, Charles found it necessary to make concessions ; and Maurice thought it more prudent to accept of conditions less advantageous than those he had proposed, than again commit all to the doubtful issue of war<sup>36</sup>. He therefore repaired once more to Passau, renewed the congress, and concluded a peace on the following terms :—“ The confederates shall lay down their  
 “ arms before the 12th day of August ; the Land-  
 “ grave shall be set at liberty, on or before that day ;  
 “ a diet shall be held within six months, in order to  
 “ deliberate concerning the most effectual method of  
 “ preventing for the future all dissensions concerning  
 “ religion ; in the mean time, no injury shall be offered  
 “ to such as adhere to the Confession of Augsburg,  
 “ nor shall the Catholics be molested in the exercise  
 “ of their religion ; the imperial chamber shall administer justice impartially to persons of both parties,  
 “ and Protestants be admitted indiscriminately with  
 “ Catholics to sit as judges in that court ; the encroachments said to have been made upon the constitution and liberties of Germany, shall be remitted to the consideration of the approaching diet of  
 “ the empire ; and if that diet should not be able to  
 “ terminate the disputes respecting religion, the stipulations in the present treaty in behalf of the Protestants, shall continue for ever in full force<sup>37</sup>.”

36. Thuanus, lib. x.

37. *Recueil de Traitez*, tom. ii.

Such, my dear Philip, was the memorable treaty of Passau, which set limits to the authority of Charles, overturned the vast fabric which he had employed many years in erecting, and established the Protestant church in Germany, upon a firm and secure basis. singular, that in this treaty, no article was inserted in favour of the king of France, to whom the federates had been so much indebted for their success. But Henry II. experienced only the treatment which every prince, who lends his aid to the authors of civil war, may expect<sup>38</sup>. As soon as the rage of contention began to subside, and any prospect of accommodation to open, his services were forgotten, and associates made a merit with their sovereign of ingratitude with which they had abandoned their patron.

LETTER  
LXI.  
A.D. 1552.

The French monarch, however, sensible that it was in his interest to keep on good terms with the Germanic body than to resent the indignities offered him by any particular member of it, concealed his displeasure at the perfidy of Maurice and his associates. He affected to talk, in the same strain as formerly, of his zeal for maintaining the ancient constitution and liberties of the empire. And he prepared to defend, by force of arms, his conquests in Lorraine, when he foresaw Charles would take the first opportunity of wresting from him. But before I relate the events of the new wars to which those conquests gave rise, we must take a view of the affairs of our own country; a more contracted but not less turbulent, and discoloured by more horrors and cruelties than the continent, during the dark and changeable period that followed the death of Henry VIII.

<sup>38</sup>. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book 2.



ENGLAND, from the Death of HENRY VIII. to the  
Accession of ELIZABETH, in 1558, together with  
Account of the Affairs of SCOTLAND, during the same  
Period, and of the Progress of the Reformation in  
the British Kingdoms.

LETTER  
LXII.  
A. D. 1558.

**H**ENRY VIII. by his will, made near a  
before his death, left the crown, first to  
Edward, his son by Jane Seymour ; then to the  
cess Mary, his daughter by Catherine of Aragon ;  
and lastly to the princess Elizabeth, his daughter  
Anne Boleyn, though both princesses had been  
declared illegitimate by parliament. These part  
my dear Philip, are necessary to be mentioned  
in order to the better understanding of the  
which afterwards arose in regard to the succe

EDWARD VI. being only nine years of age  
at the time of his father's death, the government of the  
kingdom was committed to sixteen executors ;  
among whom was Cranmer, archbishop of Canterbury,  
chancellor, chamberlain, and all the great officers of  
state. They chose one of their number, namely  
the earl of Hertford, the king's maternal uncle, and  
created duke of Somerset, to represent the royal  
authority, under the title of Protector ; to whom di  
rected from English ministers abroad should be direc

clamations. Him they invested with all the exterior symbols of regal dignity; and he procured a patent from the young king, investing him also with regal power.

LETTER  
LXX.

A.D. 1547.

THIS patent, in which the executors are not so much as mentioned, being surreptitiously obtained from a minor, the protectorship of Somerset was a palpable usurpation; but as the executors acquiesced in the new establishment, and the king discovered an extreme attachment to his uncle, who was a man of moderation and probity, few objections were made to his power or title. Other causes conspired to confirm both. Somerset had long been regarded as the secret partizan of the reformers, become by far the most numerous and respectable body of men in the kingdom; and, being now freed from restraint, he scrupled not to discover his intention of correcting all abuses in the ancient religion, and of adopting still more of the Protestant innovations. He also took care that the king should be educated in the same principles. To these Edward soon discovered a zealous attachment; and all men foreseeing, in the course of his reign, the total abolition of the Catholic faith in England, they began early and very generally to declare themselves in favour of those tenets, which were likely to become in the end triumphant, and of that authority by which they were propagated.

In his schemes for advancing the progress of the Reformation, the protector had always recourse to the counsels of Cranmer, whose moderation and prudence made him averse against all violent changes, and de-

PART I.  
A.D. 1547.

terminated him to draw over the people, by insensible gradations, to that system of doctrine and discipline which he esteemed the most pure and perfect <sup>a</sup>. And to these moderate counsels we are indebted, not only for the full establishment of the Protestant religion in England, but also for that happy medium between superstition and enthusiasm observable in the constitution of the English church. The fabric of the secular hierarchy was left and maintained entire: the ancient liturgy was preserved, as far as was thought consistent with the new principles: many ceremonies, become venerable from age and preceding use, were retained; and the distinctive habits of the clergy, according to their different ranks, were continued. No innovation was admitted merely from a spirit of opposition, or a fanatical love of novelty. The establishment of the Church of England was a work of reason.

As soon as the English government was brought to some degree of composure, Somerset made preparations for a war with Scotland; determined to execute, if possible, that project of uniting the two kingdoms by marriage, on which the late king had been so intent, and which seemed once so near a happy issue, but which had been defeated by the intrigues of cardinal Beaton. This politic and powerful prelate, though not able to prevent the parliament of Scotland from agreeing to the treaty of marriage and union with England, being then in the hands of the Protestant party, afterwards regained his authority, and acquired sufficient influence not only to oblige the earl of Arran, who had succeeded him in the regency, to renounce his alliance with Henry VIII. but also to abjure the principles of the Reformation, to which he seemed zealously

a. *Id.* *ibid.*

attached,

attached, and to reconcile himself, in 1543, to the Romish communion, in the Franciscan church at Stirling<sup>3</sup>.

LETTER  
LXII.

A. D. 1547

THE fatal effects of this change in the religious and political sentiments of the regent, were long felt in Scotland. Arran's apostacy may even perhaps be considered as the remote cause of all the civil broils which afflicted both kingdoms in the subsequent century, and which terminated in the final expulsion of the house of Stuart, of which the infant queen of Scots was now the sole representative. The southern and most fertile parts of the kingdom were suddenly laid waste by an English army. Various hostilities ensued with various success, but without any decisive event. At last an end was put to that ruinous and inglorious warfare by the peace concluded between Henry VIII. and Francis I. at Campe, in 1546; the French monarch generously stipulating, that his Scottish allies should be included in the treaty. The religious consequences were more serious and lasting, and their political influence was great.

THE Scottish regent consented to every thing that the zeal of the cardinal thought necessary for the preservation of the established religion. The reformers were every where cruelly persecuted, and many were condemned to that dreadful punishment which the church has appointed for its enemies. Among those committed to the flames was a popular preacher named George Wishart; a man of honourable birth, and of primitive sanctity, who possessed in an eminent degree the talent of seizing the attention and engaging the affections of the multitude. Wishart suffered with the patience of a martyr; but he could not forbear remarking

3. Robertson, *Hist. Scot.* book ii.

**PART I.** the barbarous triumph of his insulting adversary, who beheld from a window of his sumptuous palace the inhuman spectacle :—and he foretold, that in a few days the cardinal should, in the same palace, lie as low as now he was exalted high, in opposition to true piety and religion \*.

**A. D. 1547.**

THIS prophecy, like many others, was probably the cause of the event which it foretold. The disciples of Wishart, enraged at his cruel execution, formed a conspiracy against Beatoun ; and having associated with them Norman Lesly, eldest son of the earl of Rothes, who was instigated by revenge on account of private injuries, they surprised the cardinal in his palace or castle at St. Andrews, and instantly put him to death. One of the assassins, named James Melvil, before he struck the fatal blow, turned the point of his sword towards Beatoun, and in a tone of pious exhortation called to him, “ Repent thee, thou wicked Cardinal ! of all thy sins and iniquities ; but especially of the murder of George Wishart, that instrument of Christ for the conversion of these lands, “ It is his death which now cries for vengeance. We are sent by God to inflict the deserved punishment upon thee.”

THE conspirators, though only sixteen in number, took possession of the castle, after turning out one by one the cardinal’s formidable retinue ; and being reinforced by their friends, they prepared themselves for a vigorous defence, and sent a messenger to London, craving assistance from Henry VIII. The death of that prince, which happened soon after, blasted all their hopes. They received, however during the siege, sup-

4. Spotswood. Buchanan.

5. Knox. Keith.

plies both of money and provisions from England; and if they had been able to hold out only a few weeks longer, they would have escaped that severe capitulation to which they were reduced, not by the regent alone, but by a body of troops sent to his assistance from France.

LETTER  
LXII.

A.D. 1547.

SOMERSET entered Scotland at the head of eighteen thousand men; while a fleet of sixty sail, one half of which consisted of ships of war, and the other of vessels laden with provisions and military stores, appeared on the coast, in order to second his operations, and supply his army. The earl of Arran, regent of Scotland, had for some time observed this storm gathering, and was prepared to meet it. He had summoned together the whole force of the kingdom; and his army, double in number to that of the enemy was posted to the greatest advantage on a rising ground, guarded by the banks of the river Eske, a little above Musselburgh, when the Protector came in view. Alarmed at the sight of a force so formidable, and so happily disposed, Somerset made an overture of peace to the earl of Arran, on conditions very admissible. He offered to withdraw his troops, and compensate the damage he had done by his inroad, provided the Scottish regency would engage to keep their young queen at home, and not to contract her to any foreign prince, until she should arrive to the age of maturity, when she might chuse a husband without the consent of her council. But this moderate demand was rejected by the Scottish regent with disdain, and merely on account of its moderation. It was imputed to fear; and Arran, confident of success, was afraid of nothing but the escape of the English army. He therefore left his strong camp, as soon as he saw the protector begin to move toward the sea, suspecting that he intended to embark on board his fleet; and

and passing the river Eske, advanced into the plain, and attacked the English army near the village of Pinkey, with no better success than his rashness deserved

HAVING drawn up his troops on an eminence, Somerset had not now the advantage of ground on his side. The Scottish army consisted chiefly of infantry, whose principal weapon was a long spear, and whose files for that reason were deep, and their ranks close. A body so compact and firm easily resisted the attack of the English cavalry, broke them and drove them off the field. Lord Grey, their commander, was dangerously wounded; lord Edward Seymour, son of the protector, had his horse killed under him, and the royal standard was near falling into the hands of the enemy. But the Scots being galled by the protector's artillery in front, and by the fire from the ships in flank, while the English archers, and a body of foreign fusiliers, poured in volleys of shot upon them from all quarters, they at last began to give way: the rout became general, and the whole field was soon a scene of confusion, terror, flight, and consternation. The pursuit was long and bloody. Ten thousand of the Scots are said to have fallen, and but a very inconsiderable number of the conquering enemy<sup>6</sup>.

THIS victory, however, which seemed to threaten Scotland with final subjection, was of no real utility to England. It served only to make the Scots throw themselves inconsiderately into the arms of France, and send their young queen to be educated in that kingdom; a measure universally regarded as a prelude to her marriage with the dauphin, and which effectually

disappointed the views of Somerset, and proved the source of Mary's accomplishments as a woman, and of her misfortunes as a queen.—The Scottish nobles in taking this step, hurried away by the violence of resentment, seem to have forgot that zeal for the independency of their crown, which had made them violate their engagements with Henry VIII. and oppose with so much ardour the arms of the protector.

LETTER  
LXII.

A.D. 1547.

THE cabals of the English court obliged the duke of Somerset to return, before he could take any effectual measures for the subjection of Scotland; and the supplies which the Scots received from France, enabled them, in a great measure, to expel their invaders. while the protector was employed in re-establishing his authority, and in quelling domestic insurrections. His brother, lord Seymour, a man of insatiable ambition, had married the queen dowager, and openly aspired at the government of the kingdom. In order to attain this object, he endeavoured to seduce the young king to his interests; found means to hold a private correspondence with him, and publicly decried the protector's administration. He had brought over to his party many of the principal nobility, together with some of the most popular persons of inferior rank; and he had provided arms for ten thousand men, whom it was computed he could muster from among his own domestics and retainers.

A.D. 1548.

THOUGH apprised of all these alarming circumstances, Somerset shewed no inclination to proceed to extremities. He endeavoured by the most friendly

7. Haynes, p. 205. 206,

expedients,



**PART I.** expedients, by reason, entreaty, and even by loading Seymour with new favours, to make him desist from such dangerous politics. But finding all his endeavours ineffectual, he began to think of more serious remedies; and the earl of Warwick, who hoped to raise his own fortune on the ruin of both, inflamed the quarrel between the brothers. By his advice lord Seymour was committed to the Tower, attainted of high treason, condemned, and executed<sup>2</sup>.

**A. D. 1549.** THE protector had now leisure to complete the Reformation, the great work which he had so successfully begun, in conjunction with Cranmer, the primate, and which was now the chief object of concern throughout the nation. A committee of bishops and divines had been appointed by the privy-council to compose a liturgy: they had executed the work committed to them, as already observed, with judgment and moderation; and they not unreasonably flattered themselves, that they had framed a service in which every denomination of Christians might concur. This form of worship, which was nearly the same with that at present authorized by law, established by parliament in all the churches, and uniformity was ordered to be observed in all the rites and ceremonies<sup>3</sup>.

Thus, my dear Philip, in the course of a few years, was the Reformation happily completed in England: and its civil and religious consequences have since been deservedly valued. But there is no abuse in society so great, as not to be attended with some advantages; and in the beginnings of innovation, the loss of those advantages is always sensibly felt, by the bulk of a nation, before it can perceive the benefits resulting from the desirable change.

<sup>2</sup> 3. Burnet, vol ii.

<sup>3</sup> 2 & 3 Edw. VI. cap. i.

No institution can be imagined less favourable to the interests of mankind than that of the monastic life; yet was it followed by many effects, which having ceased with the suppression of monasteries, were much regretted by the people of England. The monks, by always residing at their convents, in the centre of their estates, spent their money in the country, and afforded a ready market for commodities. They were also acknowledged to have been in England, what they still are in kingdoms where the Romish religion is established, the best and most indulgent landlords; being limited by the rules of their order to a certain mode of living, and consequently having fewer motives for extortion than other men. The abbots and priors were besides accustomed to grant leases at an under value, and to receive a present in return. But the abbey-lands fell under different management, when distributed among the principal nobility and gentry; the rents of farms were raised, while the tenants found not the same facility in disposing of the produce. The money was often spent in the capital; and to increase the evil, pasturage in that age being found more profitable than tillage, whole estates were laid waste by inclosure. The farmers, regarded as an useless burden, were expelled their habitations; and the cottagers, deprived even of the commons, on which they had formerly fed their cattle, were reduced to beggary <sup>10</sup>.

THESE grievances of the common people occasioned insurrections in several parts of England; and Somerset, who loved popularity, imprudently encouraged them, by endeavouring to afford that redress which was not in his power. Tranquillity, however,

**PART I.**

A. D. 1549.

was soon restored to the kingdom by the vigilance of lord Ruffel and the earl of Warwick, who cut many of the unhappy malcontents in pieces, and dispersed the rest. But the protector never recovered his authority. The nobility and gentry were in general displeased with the preference which he seemed to have given to the people; and as they ascribed all the insults in which they had been lately exposed to his premeditation, and to the countenance shewn to the multitude, they apprehended a renewal of the same disorders from his passion for popular fame. His enemies even attempted to turn the rage of the populace against him, by working upon the lower class among the Catholics; and having gained over to their party the lord mayor of London, the lieutenant of the Tower, and many of the great officers of state, they obliged Somerset to resign the protectorship, and committed him to custody. A council of regency was formed, in which the earl of Warwick, who had conducted this revolution, bore the chief sway, and who actually governed the kingdom without the invidious title of protector <sup>1</sup>.

A. D. 1550.

THE first act of Warwick's administration was the negotiation of a treaty of peace with France and with Scotland. Henry II. had taken advantage of the disturbances in England, to recover several places in the Boulonnois, and even to lay siege, though without effect to Boulogne itself. He now took advantage, in treating, of the state of the English court. Sensible of the importance of peace to Warwick and the party, the French monarch absolutely refused to pay the two millions of crowns, which his predecessor had acknowledged to be due to the crown of England, as ar-

11. Stowe. Burnet. Hollinghed.

years of form : la : : c  
 he said, to ~~that~~ ~~man~~ t : ry  
 alluding to the reversion of :  
 ed; but he offered a large : for :  
 stitution of Boulogne and its terr : F  
 thousand crowns were agn d : : al  
 Scotland was comprehended : : T  
 lish stipulated to restore so : : tr  
 still held in that kingdom".

LETTER  
 LXX  
 A. D. 1554

HAVING thus established his administration, freed the kingdom from all foreign danger, and gained partisans, who were disposed to second him in every domestic enterprize, the earl of Warwick began to think of carrying into execution those vast projects which he had formed for his own aggrandisement. The last earl of Northumberland had died without issue; and as his brother, sir Thomas Percy, had been attainted on account of the share which he took in the Yorkshire insurrection during the late reign, the title was at present extinct, and the estate was vested in the crown. Warwick procured for himself a grant of that large estate, which lay chiefly in the North, the most warlike part of the kingdom, and was dignified with the title of duke of Northumberland. This was a great step; but there was yet a strong bar in the way of his ambition. Somerset, though degraded, and lessened in the public esteem, in consequence of his spiritless conduct, continued to possess a considerable share of popularity. Northumberland, therefore, resolved to ruin the man he had injured, and whom he still regarded as the chief obstacle against the full attainment of his views. For that purpose, he employed

A. D. 1551.

## PART I.

A. D. 1552.

his emissaries to suggest desperate projects to this unguarded nobleman, and afterwards accused him of high treason for seeming to acquiesce in them. Somerset was tried, condemned, and executed on Tower hill; and four of his friends shared the same unjust and unhappy fate. His death was sincerely lamented by the people, to whom he had been peculiarly indulgent, and who regarded him as a martyr in their cause. Many of them dipped their handkerchiefs in his blood, which they long preserved as a precious relique<sup>13</sup>.

NORTHUMBERLAND might seem to have now attained the highest point of elevation, to which a subject could aspire, and the greatest degree of power. His rank was second only to the royal family, his estate was one of the largest in the kingdom, and the government was entirely under his direction. But he aspired after yet greater power and consequence: his ambition knew no bounds. Having procured a parliament, which ratified his most despotic measures, and regulated its proceedings according to his will, he next endeavoured to ingratiate himself particularly with the young king, by manifesting an uncommon zeal for the reformed religion; to which the opening mind of Edward was warmly devoted, and the interests of which more sensibly touched him than all other objects.

In his frequent conversations on this subject, Northumberland took occasion to represent to that pious prince, whose health began visibly to decline, the danger to which the Reformation would be exposed, should his sister Mary, a bigotted Catholic, succeed to

<sup>13</sup>. Hayward, p. 324, 325. Hollingshed, p. 1068.

the throne of England; that although no such objection lay against the princess Elizabeth, he could not, with any degree of propriety, exclude one sister, without also excluding the other; that both had been declared illegitimate by parliament; that the queen of Scots stood excluded by the late king's will, and was besides attached to the church of Rome; that these three princesses being set aside for such solid reasons, the succession devolved on the marchioness of Dorset, eldest daughter of the duke of Suffolk and the French queen, his father's youngest sister; that the apparent successor to the marchioness was her daughter, lady Jane Gray, who was every way worthy of a crown.

LETTER  
LXX.  
A. D. 1554.

THESE arguments made a deep impression upon the mind of Edward. He had long lamented the obstinacy of his sister Mary, in adhering to the Romish communion, and seemed to foresee all the horrors of her reign. He respected, and even loved Elizabeth. But lady Jane Gray, being of the same age, had been educated along with him, and had commanded his esteem and admiration, by the progress which she made in every branch of literature. He had enjoyed full opportunity of becoming acquainted with the purity of her religious principles, a circumstance that weighed with him above every other consideration in the choice of a successor; and it seems besides probable, that her elegant person and amiable disposition had inspired his heart with a tender affection. He therefore listened to the proposal of disinheriting his sisters with a patience which would otherwise have been highly criminal.

MEANWHILE, Northumberland, finding he was likely to carry his principal point with the king, began to propose the other parts of his scheme. Two

## PART I.



A.D. 1553.

sons of the duke of Suffolk, by a marriage subsequent to the death of the French queen, having died this season of the Sweating Sickness (an epidemical malady which raged all over the kingdom), that title was become extinct. Northumberland persuaded the king to bestow it on the marquis of Dorset; and by means of this and other favours, he obtained from the new duke and duchess of Suffolk, their eldest daughter lady Jane, in marriage to his fourth son, lord Guildford Dudley <sup>1</sup>.

IN order to complete his plan of ambition, it now only remained for Northumberland to procure the desired change in the succession; and, in the present languishing state of the king's health, after all the arguments that had been used, it was no difficult matter to obtain a deed to that effect from Edward. He met with more opposition from the judges, and other persons necessary to the execution of such a deed. But they, at last, were all silenced, either by threats or promises; and the great seal was affixed to the king's letters patent, settling the crown on the heirs of the duchess of Suffolk, she herself being content to give place to her daughters; or, in other words, to lady Jane, for whom she was sensible the change in the succession had been projected.

THE king died soon after this singular transaction; and so much the sooner by being put into the hands of an ignorant woman, who undertook to restore him, in a little time, to his former state of health.—Most of our historians, but especially such as were well affected to the Reformation, dwell with peculiar plea-

14. Strype. Helyn. Stowe.

sure on the excellent qualities of this young prince, whom (as an elegant writer observes) the flattering promises of hope, joined to many real virtues, had made an object of fond regard to the public; and making allowance for the delicacy of his frame, and the manners of the age in which he lived, he seems to have possessed all the accomplishments that could be expected in a youth of sixteen.

LETTER  
LXII.

A. D. 1553.

AWARE of the opposition that would be made to the concerted change in the succession, Northumberland had carefully concealed the destination of the crown signed by Edward. He even kept that prince's death secret for a while, in hopes of getting the two princesses into his power. With this view, he engaged the council to desire their attendance at court, under pretence that the king's infirm state of health required the assistance of their advice, and the consolation of their company. All obedience or anxiety, they instantly left their several retreats in the country, and set out for London; but happily before their arrival, they both got intelligence of their brother's death, and of the conspiracy formed against themselves. Mary, who had advanced as far as Hodsdon, when she received this notice, made haste to retire, and wrote letters to the nobility and most considerable gentry in every county of England, commanding them to assist her in the defence of her crown and person<sup>15</sup>.

FARTHER dissimulation Northumberland now saw would be fruitless; he therefore went to Sion-house, where lady Jane Gray resided, accompanied by a body of the nobility, and approaching her with the respect usually paid to the sovereign, informed her of her elevation to the throne. Lady Jane, who was in a great

15. Burnet. Fox. Heylin.



## PART I.

measure ignorant of the intrigues of her father-in-law, received this information with equal grief and surprize. She even refused to accept the crown; pleaded the preferable title of the two princesses; expressed her dread of the consequences attending an enterprize so dangerous, nay so criminal, and begged to remain in that private station in which she was born. Her heart, full of the passion for literature and the elegant arts, and of affection for her husband, who was worthy of all her regard, had never opened itself to the flattering allurements of ambition. Overcome, however, at last by the entreaties rather than the reasons of her relations, she submitted to their will; and Northumberland immediately conveyed her to London, where she was proclaimed queen, but without one applauding voice.

THE people heard the proclamation with silence and concern: the very preachers employed their eloquence in vain to convince their auditors of the justice of lady Jane's title. Respect for the royal line, and indignation against the Dudleys, was stronger, even in the breasts of the Protestants, than the dread of popery <sup>16</sup>.

MEANTIME the inhabitants of Suffolk, whither the princess Mary had fled, resorted to her in crowds; and when she assured them, that she never meant to alter the laws of Edward VI. concerning religion, they zealously enlisted themselves in her cause. The nobility and gentry daily flocked to her with reinforcements. Sir Edward Hastings, brother to the earl of Huntingdon, carried over to her four thousand men, levied for the support of her rival. The fleet declared for her. Even the earl of Suffolk, who commanded in

16. Ibid.

the Tower, finding resistance fruitless, opened the gates of that fortress: and lady Jane, after the vain pageantry of wearing a crown during ten days, returned without a sigh to the privacy of domestic life. The council ordered Mary to be proclaimed; and Northumberland, deserted by his followers, and despairing of success, complied with that order with exterior marks of joy and satisfaction. He was brought to trial, however, and condemned and executed for high treason. Sentence was also pronounced against lady Jane Gray and lord Guildford Dudley; but they were respited on account of their youth, neither of them having attained the age of seventeen <sup>17</sup>.

LETTER  
I. XII.  
A. D. 1553.

No sooner was Mary seated on the throne than a total change took place both in men and measures. They who had languished in confinement were lifted to the helm of power, and intrusted with the government of the church as well as of the state. Gardiner, Bonner, and other Catholic bishops, were restored to their sees, and admitted to the queen's favour and confidence; while the most eminent protestant prelates and zealous reformers, Ridley, Hooper, Latimer, Coverdale, and Cranmer, were thrown into prison. The men of Suffolk were brow-beaten, because they presumed to plead the queen's promise of maintaining the reformed religion; and one more bold than the rest, in recalling to her memory the engagements into which she had entered, when they enlisted themselves in her service, was set in the pillory. A parliament was procured entirely conformable to the sentiments of the court, and a bill passed declaring the queen to be legitimate; ratifying the marriage of Henry VIII. with

## PART I.

A. D. 1553.

Catharine of Arragon, and annulling the divorce pronounced by Cranmer. All the statutes of Edward VI. respecting religion were repealed; and the queen sent assurances to the pope of her earnest desire of reconciling herself and her kingdoms to the Holy See, and requesting that cardinal Pole might be appointed legate for the performance of that pious office<sup>18</sup>.

REGINALD POLE was descended from the royal family of England, being fourth son of the countess of Salisbury, daughter of the duke of Clarence. He gave early indications of that fine genius, and generous disposition, by which he was so much distinguished during his more advanced age; and Henry VIII. having conceived great friendship for him, proposed to raise him to the highest ecclesiastical dignities. As a pledge of future favours, Henry conferred on him the deanry of Exeter, the better to support him in his education. But when the king of England broke with the court of Rome, Pole not only refused to second his measures, but wrote against him in a treatise on the *Unity of the Church*. This performance produced an irreparable breach between the young ecclesiastic and his sovereign, and blasted all Pole's hopes of rising in the English church. He was not, however, allowed to sink. The pope and the emperor thought themselves bound to provide for a man of so much eminence; who, in support of their cause, had sacrificed all his pretensions to fortune in his own country. Pole was created a cardinal, and sent legate into Flanders. But he took no higher than deacon's orders, which did not condemn him to celibacy; and he was suspected of having aspired to the English crown, by means of a marriage with the princess Mary, during the life of

18. Burnet, vol. ii.

her father. The marquis of Exeter, lord Montacute, the cardinal's brother, and several others persons of rank, suffered for this conspiracy, whether real or pretended. To hold a correspondence with that obnoxious fugitive was deemed perhaps sufficient guilt. It was enough, at least, to expose them to the indignation of Henry; and his will, on many occasions, is known to have usurped the place of both law and equity.

LETTER  
LXII.  
A.D. 1555

BUT whatever doubt may remain of Pole's intrigues for obtaining the crown of England, through an alliance with Mary, it is certain that SHE was no sooner seated upon the throne, than she thought of making him the partner of her sway. The cardinal, however, being now in the decline of life, was represented to queen as the unqualified for the bustle of a court, and the fatigue of business. She therefore laid aside all thoughts of him, as a husband; but as she entertained an high esteem for his wisdom and virtue, she still proposed to reap the benefit of his counsels in the administration of her government—and hence her request to the pope.

THIS alliance, and one with the earl of Devonshire, being rejected for various reasons, the queen turned her eye toward the house of Austria, and there found a ready correspondence with her views. Charles V. whose ambition was boundless, no sooner had heard of the accession of his kinswoman Mary to the crown of England, than he formed the scheme of obtaining the kingdom for his son Philip; hoping by that acquisition to balance the losses he had sustained in Germany. And Philip, although eleven years younger than Mary, who was destitute of every

D d 4 external

## PART I.

A. D. 1553.

external beauty or grace, gave his consent, without hesitation, to the match proposed by his father. The emperor, therefore, immediately sent over an agent to signify his intentions to the queen of England; who, flattered with the prospect of marrying the presumptive heir of the greatest monarch in Europe, pleased with the support of so powerful an alliance, and happy to unite herself more closely to her mother's family, to which she had always been warmly attached, gladly embraced the proposal. The earls of Norfolk and Arundel, lord Paget, whom she had promoted, and bishop Gardiner, now become prime minister, finding how Mary's inclinations leaned, gave their opinion in favour of the Spanish alliance; but as they were sensible the prospect of it diffused universal apprehension and terror for the liberty and independency of the kingdom, the marriage articles were drawn up with all possible attention to the interest and security, and even to the grandeur of England. The emperor agreed to whatever was thought necessary to soothe the fears of the people, or quiet the jealousies of the nobility. The chief articles were, That Philip, during his marriage with Mary, should bear the title of king, but that the administration should be vested solely in the queen; that no foreigner should be capable of holding any office in the kingdom; that no innovation should be made in the English laws, customs, or privileges; that Philip should not carry the queen abroad without her consent, nor any of her children without the consent of the nobility; that the male issue of the marriage should inherit, together with England, Burgundy, and the Low Countries; that if Don Carlos, Philip's son by a former marriage, should die without issue, Mary's issue, whether male or female, should succeed to the crown of Spain and all the emperor's hereditary domi-

ominions; and that Philip, if the queen should die before him, without issue, should leave the crown of England to the lawful heir, without claiming any right of administration whatsoever<sup>19</sup>.

LETTER  
LXII.

A. D. 1554.

BUT this treaty, though framed with so much caution and skill, was far from reconciling the English nation to the Spanish alliance. It was universally said, that the emperor, in order to get possession of England, would agree to any terms; and that the more favourable the conditions which he had granted, the more certainly might it be concluded he had no serious intention of observing them. His general character was urged in support of these observations; and it was added, That Philip, while he inherited his father's vices, fraud and ambition, united to them more dangerous vices of his own, sullen pride and barbarity. England seemed already a province of Spain, groaning under the load of despotism, and subjected to all the horrors of the inquisition. The people were every where ripe for rebellion, and wanted only an able leader to have subverted the queen's authority. No such leader appeared. The more prudent part of the nobility thought it would be soon enough to correct ills when they began to be felt. Some turbulent spirits, however, judged it safer to prevent than to redress grievances. They accordingly formed a conspiracy to rise in arms, and declare against the queen's marriage with Philip. Sir Thomas Wyatt proposed to raise Kent: sir Peter Carew, Devonshire; and the duke of Suffolk was engaged, by the hopes of recovering the crown for lady Jane Grey, to attempt raising the midland counties.

<sup>19</sup>. Rymer, vol. xv. Burnet, vol. ii.

But

## PART I.

A.D. 1554.

But these conspirators imprudently breaking concert, and rising at different times, were soon humbled. Wyat and Suffolk lost their heads, as did lady Jane Grey and her husband lord Guildford Dudley, to whom the duke's guilt was imputed.

THIS fond and unfortunate couple died with much piety and fortitude. It had been intended to execute them on the same scaffold on Tower-hill; but the council dreading the compassion of the people for their youth, beauty, and innocence, changed its orders, and gave directions that lady Jane should be beheaded within the verge of the Tower. She refused to take leave of her husband on the day of their execution; assigning as a reason, that the tenderness of parting might unbend their minds from that firmness which their approaching doom required of them. "Our separation," added she, "will be but for a moment; we shall soon rejoin each other in a scene where our affections will be for ever united, and where death, disappointment, and misfortune, can no longer disturb our felicity<sup>20</sup>." She saw lord Guildford led to execution, without discovering any sign of weakness: she even calmly met his headless body, as she was going to execution herself, returning to be interred in the chapel of the Tower, and intrepidly desired to proceed to the fatal spot, emboldened by the reports which she had received of the magnanimity of his behaviour. On that occasion she wrote in her Table-book, three sentences; one in Greek, one in Latin, and one in English. The meaning of them was, that although human justice was against her husband's body, divine mercy would be favourable to his soul; that if her fault deserved punishment,

20. Heylin, p. 167. Fox, vol. iii.

her youth and inexperience ought to plead her excuse; and that God and posterity, she trusted, would shew her favour. On the scaffold she behaved with great mildness and composure, and submitted herself to the stroke of the executioner with a steady and serene countenance<sup>21</sup>.

LETTER  
LXII.

A.D. 1554.

THE queen's authority was much strengthened by the suppression of this rebellion, commonly called Wyat's, from the figure which he made in it; and the arrival of Philip in England gave still more stability to her government. For although that prince's behaviour was ill calculated to remove the prejudices which the English nation had entertained against him, being distant in his address, and so entrenched in form and ceremony, as to be in a manner inaccessible, his liberality, if money disbursed for the purposes of corruption can deserve that name, made him many friends among the nobility and gentry. Cardinal Pole also arrived in England about the same time with legatine powers from the pope; and both houses of parliament voted an address to Philip and Mary, acknowledging that the nation had been guilty of a most horrible defection from the true church; declaring their resolution to repeal all laws enacted in prejudice of the Romish religion; and praying their majesties, happily uninfected with that criminal schism! to intercede with the Holy Father for the absolution and forgiveness of their penitent subjects. The request was readily granted. The legate, in the name of his Holiness, gave the parliament and kingdom absolution, freed them from all ecclesiastical censures, and received them again into the bosom of the church<sup>22</sup>.

21. Id. *ibid*.

22. Burnet, vol. ii. Fox, vol. iii.



## PART I.

A.D. 1554.

A.D. 1555.

IN consequence of this reconciliation with the see of Rome, the punishment by fire, that frightful expedient of superstition, for extending her empire, and preserving her dominion, was rigorously employed against the most eminent reformers. The mild counsels of cardinal Pole, who was inclined to toleration, were over-ruled by Gardiner and Bonner, and many persons of all conditions, ages, and sexes were committed to the flames. The persecutors made their first attack upon Rogers, prebendary of St. Paul's; a man equally distinguished by his piety and learning, but whose domestic situation it was hoped would bring him to compliance. He had a wife whom he tenderly loved, and ten children; yet did he continue firm in his principles, and such was his serenity after condemnation, that the gaolers, it is said, waked him from a sound sleep, when the hour of his execution approached. He suffered in Smithfield. Hooper, bishop of Gloucester, was condemned at the same time with Rogers, but sent to his own diocese to be punished, in order to strike the greater terror into his flock. The constancy of his death, however, had a very contrary effect. It was a scene of consolation to Hooper to die in their fight, bearing testimony to that doctrine which he had formerly taught among them. He continued to exhort them, till his tongue, swollen by the violence of his agony, denied him utterance: and his words were long remembered <sup>23</sup>.

FERRAR, bishop of St. David's, also suffered this terrible punishment in his own diocese. And Ridley, bishop of London, and Latimer, formerly bishop of Worcester, two prelates venerable by their years, their learning, and their piety, perished together in

<sup>23</sup>. Id Ibid.

the same fire at Oxford, supporting each other's constancy by their mutual exhortations. Latimer, when tied to the stake, called to his companion, "Be of good cheer, my brother! we shall this day kindle such a flame in England, as I trust in God will never be extinguished <sup>24</sup>.

LETTER  
LXII.  
A. D. 1555.

SANDERS, a respectable clergyman, was committed to the flames at Coventry. A pardon was offered him, if he would recant: but he rejected it with disdain, and embraced the stake, saying, "Welcome, cross of Christ! welcome, everlasting life!" Cranmer had less courage at first. Overawed by the prospect of those tortures which awaited him, or overcome by the fond love of life, and by the flattery of artful men, who pompously represented the dignities to which his character still entitled him, if he would merit them by a recantation, he agreed, in an unguarded hour, to subscribe the doctrines of the papal supremacy and the real presence. But Mary and her council, no less perfidious than cruel, determined, that this recantation should avail him nothing; that he should acknowledge his errors in the church before the people, and afterward be led to execution. Whether Cranmer received secret intelligence of their design, or repented of his weakness, or both, is uncertain, but he surprised the audience by a declaration very different from that which was expected from him. After explaining his sense of what he owed to God and his sovereign, "There is one miscarriage in my life," said he, "of which, above all others, I severely repent—the insincere declaration of faith to which I had the weakness to subscribe; but I take

24. Fox, vol. iii. Burnet, vol. ii.

this

**PART I.**  
            
**A.D. 1556.**

"this opportunity of atoning for my error by a sincere and open recantation, and am willing to seal with my blood that doctrine which I firmly believe to have been communicated from Heaven."

As his hand, he added, had erred, by betraying his heart, it should first be punished by a severe but just doom. He accordingly stretched out his arm, as soon as he came to the stake, to which he was instantly led, and without discovering either by his looks or motions, the least sign of compunction, or even of feeling; he held his right-hand in the flames, till it was utterly consumed. His thoughts, appeared to be totally occupied in reflecting on his former fault; and he called aloud several times, "This hand has offended!" When it dropped off, he discovered a serenity in his countenance, as if satisfied with sacrificing to divine justice the instrument of his crime; and when the fire attacked his body, his soul, wholly collected within itself, seemed fortified against every external accident, and altogether inaccessible to pain<sup>25</sup>.

It would be endless, my dear Philip, to enumerate all the cruelties practised in England during this bigotted reign, near three hundred persons having been brought to the stake in the first rage of persecution. Besides the savage barbarity on one hand, and the patient constancy on the other, are so similar, in all those martyrdoms, that a narration, very little agreeable in itself, would become altogether disgusting by its uniformity. It is sufficient to have mentioned the sufferings of our most eminent reformers, whose cha-

<sup>25</sup> Fox, vol. iii. Burnet, vol. ii.

and condition make such notice necessary. I therefore conclude this subject with observing, human nature appears on no occasion so detestful and at the same time so absurd, as in these horrid horrors, which sink mankind below infernal in wickedness, and beneath the brutes in folly. op Bonner seemed to rejoice in the torments of the sons of persecution. He sometimes whipped the constant prisoners, with his own hands, till he was weary with the violence of the exercise: he tore out the eye of a weaver, who refused to relinquish his religion; and in order to give the obstinate heretic a more sensible idea of burning, he held his finger to the candle till the sinews and veins thrunk and burst<sup>26</sup>. All these examples prove, that no human depravity equal revenge and cruelty, inflamed by theological hate.

LETTER  
LXII.  
A. D. 1526.

But the members of the English parliament, though seqious to the queen's will in reuniting the kingdom to the see of Rome, and in authorising the butchery of their fellow-subjects who rejected the Catholic faith, had still some regard left both to their conscience and the national interest. They refused to restore the possessions of the church. And Mary failed, only in an attempt to get her husband declared immediate heir to the crown, and to obtain the consent of parliament for vesting the administration put in his hands, but in all her political hopes. She did not so much as obtain a parliamentary consent to her coronation.

The queen likewise met with much and long opposition from parliament in another favourite mea-

<sup>26</sup> Fox, vol. iii.

sure;

## PART I.

sure; namely, in an attempt to engage the nation in the war which was kindled between France and Spain. The motion was for a time laid aside; and Philip, disgusted with Mary's importunate love, which was equal to that of a girl of eighteen, and with her jealousy and spleen, which increased with her declining years and her despair of having issue, had gone over to his father Charles V. in Flanders. The voluntary resignation of the emperor, soon after this visit, put Philip in possession of all the wealth of America, and of the richest and most extensive dominions in Europe. He did not, however, lay aside his attention to the affairs of England, of which he still hoped to have the direction; and he came over to London, in order to support his parliamentary friends in a new motion for a French war. This measure was zealously opposed by several of the queen's most able counsellors, and particularly by cardinal Pole; who having taken priest's orders, had been installed in the see of Canterbury, on the death of Cranmer. But hostilities having been begun by France, as was pretended, war was at last denounced against that kingdom; and an army of ten thousand men was sent over to the Low Countries, under the command of the earl of Pembroke<sup>27</sup>.

A LIKE attempt was made in Scotland by the French monarch to engage that kingdom in a war with England. Mary of Guise, the queen dowager, had obtained the regency through the intrigues of the court of France, and Henry II. now requested her to take part in the common quarrel. She accordingly summoned a convention of the states, and asked their concurrence for commencing hostilities against England. But the Scottish nobles, who were become as

<sup>27</sup>. Burnet, vol. ii. Strype, vol iii.

jealous of the French, as the English were of Spanish influence, refused their assent; and the regent had in vain recourse to stratagem, in order to accomplish her purpose.

LETTER  
LXII.

A. D. 1557.

THE French monarch, however, without the assistance of his ancient allies, and notwithstanding the unfortunate battle of St. Quintin, of which I shall afterwards have occasion to speak, made himself master of Calais, which the English had held upwards of two hundred years; and which, as it opened to them an easy and secure entry into the heart of France, was regarded as the most valuable foreign possession belonging to the crown. This important place was recovered by the vigilance and valour of the duke of Guise; who informed that the English, trusting to the strength of the town, deemed in that age impregnable, were accustomed to recall towards the close of summer, great part of the garrison, and to replace it in the spring, undertook in the depth of winter, and succeeded in an enterprize, that surprized his own countrymen no less than his enemies. As he knew that success depended upon celerity, he pushed his attacks with such vigour, that the governor was obliged to surrender on the eighth day of the siege<sup>28</sup>.

THE joy of the French on that occasion was extreme. Their vanity indulged itself in the utmost exultation of triumph, while the English gave vent to all the passions which agitate a high spirited people, when any great national misfortune is evidently the consequence of the misconduct of their rulers. They murmured loudly against the queen and her council; who, after engaging the nation in a fruitless war, for

28. Tbuon. lib. xx. cap. ii.

**PART I.** the sake of foreign interest, had thus exposed it, by their negligence, to so severe a disgrace.

**THIS** event, together with the consciousness of being hated by her subjects, and despised by her husband, so much affected the queen of England, whose health **A.D. 1558.** had long been declining, that she fell into a low fever, which put an end to her short and inglorious reign. "When I am dead," said she to her attendants, "you will find Calais at my heart." Mary possessed few qualities either estimable or amiable. Her person was as little engaging as her manners; and amid that complication of vices which entered into her composition, namely obstinacy, bigotry, violence, and cruelty, we scarcely find any virtue but sincerity.

**BEFORE** the queen's death, negotiations had been opened for a general peace. Among other conditions, the king of France demanded the restitution of Navarre to its lawful owner; the king of Spain, that of Calais and its territory to England. But the death of Mary somewhat altered the firmness of the Spanish monarch in regard to that capital article. And before I speak of the treaty which was afterwards signed at Chateau Cambresis, and which restored tranquillity to Europe, I must carry forward the affairs of the continent. Meantime it will be proper to say a few words of the princess Elizabeth, who now succeeded to the throne of England.

**THE** English nation was under great apprehensions for the life of this princess, during her sister's whole reign. The attachment of Elizabeth to the reformed religion offended Mary's bigotry; and menaces had been employed to bring her to a recantation. The  
violent

violent hatred which the queen entertained against her, broke out on every occasion; and all her own distinguished prudence was necessary, in order to prevent the fatal effects of it. She retired into the country; and knowing that she was surrounded with spies, she passed her time wholly in reading and study. She complied with the established mode of worship, and eluded all questions in regard to religion. When asked, on purpose to gather her opinion of the *real presence*, what she thought of these words of Christ, "This is my body?"—and whether she believed it the *true* body of Christ that was in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper? she replied thus:

"Christ was the Word that spake it;  
 "He took the bread and brake it;  
 "And what the word did make it,  
 "That I believe and take it <sup>29</sup>."

AFTER the death of her sister, Elizabeth delivered her sentiments more freely: and the first act of her administration was the re-establishment of the Protestant Religion. The liturgy was again introduced in the English tongue, and the oath of supremacy was tendered to the clergy. The number of bishops had been reduced to fourteen by a sickly season, which preceded this change; and all these, except the bishop of Landaff, having refused compliance, were deprived of their sees. But of the great body of the English clergy, only eighty rectors and vicars, fifty prebendaries, fifteen heads of colleges, twelve archdeacons, and as many deans, sacrificed their livings for their theological opinions <sup>30</sup>.

A. D. 1559.

<sup>29</sup> Baker. Strype. Camden.<sup>30</sup> Ibid.



## PART I

A. D. 1559.

THIS change in religion completed the joy of the people on account of the accession of Elizabeth ; the auspicious commencement of whose reign may be said to have prognosticated that felicity and glory, which uniformly attended it. These particulars, my dear Philip, will make all retrospect in the affairs of England unnecessary, beyond the treaty of Chateau Cambresis.

## L E T T E R LXIII.

*The Continent of EUROPE, from the Peace of PASSAU, in 1552, to the Peace of CHATEAU CAMBRESIS, in 1559.*

LETTER  
LXIII.

THE treaty of Passau was no sooner signed than Maurice, the deliverer of Germany, marched into Hungary against the Turks, at the head of twenty thousand men, in consequence of his engagements with Ferdinand, whom the hopes of such assistance had made the most zealous advocate of the confederates. But the vast superiority of the Turkish armies, together with the dissensions between Maurice and Castaldo, the Austrian general, who was piqued at being superseded in the command, prevented the elector from performing any thing in that country worthy of his former fame, or of much benefit to the king of the Romans.

In the mean time Charles V. deeply affected for the loss of Metz, Toul, and Verdun, which had formed the barrier of the empire on the side of France, and would now secure the frontier of Champagne, left his

inglorious retreat at Villach, and put himself at the head of those forces which he had assembled against the confederates, determined to recover the three bishopricks. In order to conceal the destination of his army, he circulated a report that he intended to lead it into Hungary to second Maurice in his operations against the infidels; and as that pretext failed him, when he began to approach the Rhine, he pretended that he was marching first to chastise Albert of Brandenburg, who had refused to be included in the treaty of Passau, and whose cruel exactions in that part of Germany called loudly for redress.

LETTER  
LXIII.  
A.D. 1552.

THE French, however, were not deceived by these artifices. Henry II. immediately guessed the true object of the emperor's armament, and resolved to defend his conquests with vigour. The defence of Metz, against which it was foreseen the whole weight of the war would be turned, was committed to Francis of Lorraine, duke of Guise, who possessed in an eminent degree all the qualities that render men great in military command. To courage, sagacity, and presence of mind, he added that magnanimity of soul which delights in bold enterprizes, and aspires after fame by splendid and extraordinary actions. He repaired with joy to the dangerous station; and many of the French nobility, and even princes of the blood eager to distinguish themselves under such a leader, entered Metz as volunteers. They were all necessary. The city was of great extent, ill fortified, and the suburbs large. For all these defects the duke endeavoured to provide a remedy. He repaired the old fortifications with all possible expedition, labouring

PART I.  
A.D. 1552.

with his own hands: the officers imitated his example; and the soldiers, thus encouraged, cheerfully submitted to the most severe toils. He erected works, and he levelled the suburbs with the ground. At the same time he filled the magazines with provisions and military stores, compelled all useless persons to leave the place, and laid waste the neighbouring country; yet such were his popular talents, his power of acquiring an ascendant over the minds of men, that the citizens not only refrained from murmuring, but seconded him with no less ardour than the soldiers in all his operations—in the ruin of their estates, and in the havock of their public and private buildings<sup>1</sup>.

MEANWHILE the emperor continued his march toward Lorraine at the head of sixty thousand men. On his approach, Albert of Brandenburg, whose army did not exceed twenty thousand, withdrew from that duchy, as if he intended to join the French king; and Charles, notwithstanding the declining season, it being the month of October, laid siege to Metz, contrary to the advice of his most experienced officers.

THE attention of both the besiegers and the besieged was turned for a time to the motions of Albert, who still hovered in the neighbourhood, uncertain which side to take, though resolved to accept of his services. Charles at last came up to his price, he joined the imperial army. The emperor now entered himself that nothing could resist his force; he found himself deceived. After a siege of al

<sup>1</sup> Thuan. lib. xi.

sixty days, during which he had attempted all that was thought possible for art or valour to effect, and had lost upward of thirty thousand men by the inclemency of the weather, diseases, or the sword of the enemy, he was obliged to abandon the enterprize. "Fortune," said Charles, "I now perceive, like other fine ladies, chuses to confer her favours on young men, and forsakes those advanced in years<sup>2</sup>."

LETTER  
LXIII.  
A. D. 1552.

THIS saying has been thought gallant, and perhaps it is so; but the occasion merited more serious reflections. When the French sallied out to attack the enemy's rear, a spectacle presented itself to their view which extinguished at once all hostile rage, and melted them into compassion. The imperial camp was filled with the sick and wounded, with the dead and the dying. All the roads by which the army retired were strewed with the same miserable objects; who having made an effort beyond their strength to escape, and not being able to proceed, were left to perish without assistance. Happily that, and all the kind offices which their friends had not the power to perform, they received from their enemies. The duke of Guise ordered them all to be taken care of, and supplied with every necessary. He appointed physicians to attend, and direct what treatment was proper for the sick and wounded, and what refreshments for the feeble; and such as recovered, he sent home, under a safe escort, and with money to bear their charges<sup>3</sup>. By these acts of humanity, less common in that age than the present, the duke of Guise completed that

2. Id. Ibid. 3. Thaun. lib. xi. P. Daniel, *Hist. de France*, tom. iv. Father Daniel's account of this siege is copied from the Journal of the Sieur de Salignac, who was present at it.

**PART I.** heroic character, which he had justly acquired, by  
 A. D. 1552. his brave and successful defence of Metz.

THE emperor's misfortunes were not confined to Germany. During his residence at Villach, he had been obliged to borrow two hundred thousand crowns from Cosmo of Medicis; and so low was his credit, that he was obliged to put that prince in possession of the territory of Piombino, as a security for the repayment of the money. By this step he lost the footing he had hitherto maintained in Tuscany, and nearly at the same time he lost Siena. The Siennese, who had long enjoyed a republican government, rose against the Spanish garrison, which they had admitted as a check upon the tyranny of the nobility, but which they now found was meant to enslave them. Forgetting their domestic animosities, they recalled the exiled nobles; demolished the citadel, and put themselves under the protection of France <sup>4</sup>.

THESE unfortunate events were followed by the most alarming dangers. The severe administration of the viceroy of Naples had filled that kingdom with murmuring and dissatisfaction. The prince of Salerno, the head of the malcontents, fled to the court of France. The French monarch, after the example of his father, had formed an alliance with the grand-seignior; and Solymán, at that time highly incensed against the house of Austria, on account of the proceedings in Hungary, sent a powerful fleet into the Mediterranean, under the command of the corsair Dragut, an officer trained up under Barbarossa, and little inferior to his master in courage, talents, or in good fortune. Dragut appeared on the coast of Calabria, where he expected to be joined by a French

<sup>4</sup> *Mém. de Ribier.*

squadron;

squadron; but not meeting with it according to concert, he returned to Constantinople, after plundering and burning several places, and filling Naples with consternation<sup>5</sup>.

LETTER  
LXIII.

HIGHLY chagrined by so many disasters, Charles retired into the Low-Countries, breathing vengeance against France. Meantime, Germany was still disturbed by the restless ambition of Albert of Brandenburg; and as that prince obstinately continued his violences, notwithstanding a decree of the imperial chamber, a league was formed against him by the most powerful princes in the empire, of which Maurice was declared the head. This confederacy, however, wrought no change in the sentiments of Albert. But as he knew that he could not resist so many princes, if they had leisure to unite their forces, he marched directly against Maurice, whom he dreaded most, and hoped to crush before he could receive support from his allies; though in that he was deceived. Maurice was ready to oppose him.

A. D. 1553.

THESE hostile chiefs, whose armies were nearly equal in numbers, each consisting of twenty-four thousand men, met at Siverhausen in the duchy of Lunenburgh. There an obstinate battle was fought, in which the combat long remained doubtful, each gaining ground upon the other alternately; but at last victory declared for Maurice, who was superior in cavalry. Albert's army fled in confusion, leaving four thousand men dead on the field, and their baggage and artillery in the hands of the enemy. But the allies bought their victory dear. Their best troops suffered greatly; several persons of distinction fell; and Maurice himself received a wound, of which he died two days

July 9.

5. Id. Ibid.

after,

**PART I.**  
 4, D. 1553.

after, in the thirty-second year of his age. No prince ancient or modern, ever perhaps discovered such deep political sagacity at so early a period of life. As he left only one daughter, afterwards married to the famous William, prince of Orange, John Frederick the degraded elector, claimed the electoral dignity and that part of his patrimonial estate of which he had been stripped during the Smalkaldic war; but the states of Saxony, forgetting the merits and suffering of their former master, declared in favour of Augustus, Maurice's brother. The unfortunate, but magnanimous, John Frederick, died soon after this disappointment which he bore with his usual firmness<sup>6</sup> and the electoral dignity is still possessed by the descendants of Augustus.

Sept. 12.

THE consternation which Maurice's death occasioned among his troops, prevented them from making a proper use of their victory; so that Albert, having re-assembled his broken forces, and made fresh levies, renewed his depredations with additional fury. But being defeated in a second battle, scarce less bloody than the former, by Henry of Brunswick, who had taken the command of the allied army, he was driven from all his hereditary dominions, as well as from those he had usurped; was laid under the ban of the empire, and obliged to take refuge in France, where he lingered out a few years in an indigent and dependent state of exile<sup>7</sup>.

DURING these transactions in Germany, war was carried on in the Low-Countries with considerable vigour. Impatient to efface the stain which his mili-

6. Arnoldi, *Vit. Mauriti*. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book x.

7. *Ibid.*

reputation had received before Metz, Charles laid  
e to Terouane; and the fortifications being out of  
air, that important place was carried by assault. **LETTER  
LXIII.**  
Men also was invested, and carried in the same man-  
The king of France was too late in assembling  
forces, to afford relief to either of these places;  
the emperor afterwards cautiously avoided an en-  
ement, during the remainder of the campaign.

A. D. 1553.

THE imperial arms were less successful in Italy,  
e viceroy of Naples failed in an attempt to reco-  
Siena; and the French not only established them-  
es more firmly in Tuscany, but conquered part of  
island of Corsica. Nor did the affairs of the house  
Austria wear a better aspect in Hungary during the  
rle of this year. Isabella and her son appeared  
e more in Transylvania, at a time when the people  
e ready for revolt, in order to revenge the death  
Martinuzzi, whose loss they had severely felt:  
ne noblemen of eminence declared in favour of the  
ing king: and the bashaw of Belgrade, by Soly-  
n's order, espousing his cause, Castaldo, the Au-  
an general, was obliged to abandon Transylvania  
Isabella and the Turks<sup>8</sup>.

IN order to counterbalance these and other losses,  
emperor as has been already related, concerted a **A. D. 1554.**  
rriage between his son Philip and Mary of Eng-  
d, in hopes of adding this kingdom to his other  
inions. Meanwhile the war between Henry and  
arles was carried on with various success in the  
w Countries, and in Italy much to the disadvan-  
e of France. The French, under the command of  
ozzi, a Florentine nobleman, were defeated in the  
tle of Marciano; Siena was reduced by Medi-  
o, the imperial general, after a siege of ten months,

<sup>8</sup>. Thuanus, lib. xv.



**PART I.****A. D. 1555,**

and the gallant Sieneſe were again ſubjected to the Spaniſh yoke. Nearly at the ſame time a plot was formed by the Franciſcans, but happily diſcovered before it could be carried into execution, for betraying Metz to the Imperialiſts. The father guardian and twenty other monks received ſentence of death on account of this conſpiracy; but the guardian, before the time appointed for his execution, was murdered by his incenſed accomplices, whom he had ſeduced from their allegiance, and ſix of the youngſt were pardoned<sup>9</sup>.

WHILE war thus raged in Italy and the Low-Countries, accompanied with all its train of miſeries, and all the crimes to which ambition gives birth, Germany enjoyed ſuch profound tranquillity, as afforded the diet full leiſure to confirm and perfect the plan of religious pacification agreed upon at Paſſau, and referred to the conſideration of the next meeting of the Germanic body. For this purpoſe a diet had been ſummoned to meet at Augſburgh, ſoon after the concluſion of the treaty; but the commotions excited by Albert of Bradenburg, and the attention which Ferdinand was obliged to pay to the affairs of Hungary, had hitherto obſtructed its deliberations. The following ſtipulations were at laſt ſettled, and formally publiſhed; namely, “ That ſuch princes and  
“ cities as have declared their approbation of the Con-  
“ feſſion of Augſburg, ſhall be permitted to proteſt  
“ and exerciſe, without moleſtation, the doctrine and  
“ worſhip which it authoriſes; that the popiſh eccle-  
“ ſiaſtics ſhall claim no ſpiritual juriſdiction in ſuch ci-  
“ ties or principalities, nor ſhall the proteſtants moleſt  
“ the princes and ſtates that adhere to the church  
“ of Rome; that no attempt ſhall be made for the  
“ future, toward terminating religious differences,

9. Id. *ibid.*

“ except

“ except by the gentle and pacific methods of per-  
 “ suasion and conference; that the supreme civil  
 “ power in every state may establish what form of  
 “ doctrine and worship it shall deem proper, but shall  
 “ permit those who refuse to conform, to remove  
 “ with their effects; that such as had seized the be-  
 “ nefices or revenues of the church, previous to the  
 “ treaty of Passau, shall retain possession of them,  
 “ and be subject to no prosecution in the imperial  
 “ chamber on that account; but if any prelate or ec-  
 “ clesiastic shall hereafter abandon the Romish reli-  
 “ gion, he shall instantly relinquish his diocese or  
 “ benefice, and that it shall be lawful for those in  
 “ whom the right of nomination is vested, to proceed  
 “ immediately to an election, as if the office was  
 “ vacant by death or translation “.

LETTER  
 LXIII.  
 A. D. 1555.

THESE, my dear Philip, are the principal articles in the famous *Recess* of Augsberg, which is the basis of religious peace in Germany. The followers of Luther were highly pleased with that security which it afforded them, and the Catholics seem to have had no less reason to be satisfied. That article which preserved entire to the Romish church the benefices of such ecclesiastics as should hereafter renounce its doctrines, at once placed a hedge around its patrimony, and effectually guarded against the defection of its dignitaries. But cardinal Caraffa, who was now raised to the papal throne, under the name of Paul IV. full of high ideas of his apostolic jurisdiction, and animated with the fiercest zeal against heresy, regarded the indulgence given to the Protestants, by an assembly composed of laymen, as an impious act of that power which the diet had usurped. He therefore

10. Father Paul, lib. v. Pallavicini, lib. xiii.

threatened

**PART I.**  
**A.D. 1555.**

threatened the emperor and the king of the Romans with the severest effects of his vengeance, if they did not immediately declare the Recess of Augsburg illegal and void ; and as Charles shewed no disposition to comply with this demand, the pope entered into an alliance with the French king, in order to ruin the imperial power in Italy.

**DURING** the negotiation of that treaty, an event happened, which astonished all Europe, and confounded the reasonings of the wisest politicians. The emperor Charles V. though no more than fifty-six, an age when objects of ambition operate with full force on the mind, and are generally pursued with the greatest ardour, had for some time formed the resolution of resigning his hereditary dominions to his son Philip. He now determined to put it in execution. Various have been the opinions of historians concerning a resolution so singular and unexpected ; but the most probable seem to be, the disappointments which Charles had met with in his ambitious hopes, and the daily decline of his health. He had early in life been attacked with the gout ; and the fits were now become so frequent and severe, that not only the vigour of his constitution was broken, but the faculties of his mind were sensibly impaired. He therefore judged it more decent to conceal his infirmities in some solitude, than to expose them any longer to the public eye : and as he was unwilling to forfeit the same, or lose the acquisitions of his better years, by attempting to guide the reins of government, when he was no longer able to hold them with steadiness, he prudently determined to seek in the tranquillity of retirement, that happiness, which he had in vain pursued

fued amid the tumults of war and the intrigues of  
state.

LETTER  
LXIII.

A. D. 1555.

IN consequence of this resolution, Charles, who had already ceded to his son Philip the kingdom of Naples and the duchy of Milan, assembled the states of the Low-Countries at Brussels; and, seating himself for the last time, in the chair of state, he explained to his subjects the reasons of his resignation, and solemnly devolved his authority upon Philip. He recounted with dignity, but without ostentation, all the great things which he had undertaken, and performed since the commencement of his administration: and that enumeration gives us the highest idea of his activity and industry. “I have dedicated,” observed he, “from the seventeenth year of my age, all my thoughts and attention to public objects, reserving no portion of my time for the indulgence of ease, and very little for the enjoyment of private pleasure. Either in a pacific or hostile manner, I have visited Germany nine times; Spain six times; France four times: Italy seven times; the Low-Countries ten times; England twice; Africa as often; and while my health permitted me to discharge the duties of a sovereign, and the vigour of my constitution was equal in any degree to the arduous office of governing such extensive dominions, I never shunned labour, nor repined under fatigue; but now when my health is broken, and my vigour exhausted by the rage of an incurable disorder, my growing infirmities admonish me to retire; nor am I so fond of reigning as to retain the sceptre in an impotent hand, which is no longer able to protect my subjects.

“ IN-

“ of my paternal affection, and to demonſtrate  
 “ you are worthy of the confidence which I  
 “ you. Preſerve,” added he, “ an inviolable  
 “ for religion; maintain the Catholic faith  
 “ purity; let the laws of your country be ſacred  
 “ your eyes; encroach not on the rights of your  
 “ ple; and if the time ſhould ever come, we  
 “ ſhall wiſh to enjoy the tranquillity of private  
 “ may you have a ſon, to whom you can reſign  
 “ ſceptre with as much ſatisfaction as I give  
 “ to you.” A few weeks after, the emperor  
 ſigned to Philip the Spaniſh crown, with all  
 minions depending upon it, in the Old as well as  
 the New World; reſerving nothing to himſelf  
 of all thoſe vaſt poſſeſſions, but an annual penſion  
 of one hundred thouſand ducats “.

CHARLES was now impatient to embark for  
 where he had fixed on a place of retreat. But  
 advice of his phyſicians, he put off his voyage  
 ſome months, on account of the ſeverity of his  
 ſon: and by yielding to their judgment, he  
 ſatisfaction, before he left the Low-Country  
 taking a conſiderable ſtep towards a peace with  
 France. This he ardently longed for; not  
 his ſon's account, whoſe adminiſtration he was

11. Godlev. *Relat. Abdicat. Car. V.* Thaur. lib. xvi. Sande-  
 Robertſon, book ix.

COR

commence in quietness, but that he might have the glory, when quitting the world, of restoring to Europe that tranquillity which his ambition had banished from it, almost since the day that he assumed the reins of government.

LETTER  
LXIII.  
A. D. 1555.

THE great bar against such a pacification, on the part of France, was the treaty which Henry II. had concluded with the court of Rome ; and the emperor's claims were too numerous to admit any hope of adjusting them suddenly. A truce of five years was therefore proposed by Charles, during which term, without discussing their respective pretensions, each should retain what was in his possession ; and Henry, through the persuasion of the constable Montmorency, who represented the imprudence of sacrificing the true interests of his kingdom to the rash engagements he had come under with the pope, authorised his ambassadors to sign at Vaucelles a treaty, which would insure to him, for so considerable a period, the important conquests which he had made on the German frontier, together with the greater part of the duke of Savoy's dominions.

PAUL IV. when informed of this transaction, was filled no less with terror and astonishment, than with rage and indignation. But he took equal care to conceal his fear and his anger. He affected to approve highly of the truce ; and he offered his mediation, as the common father of Christendom, in order to bring about a permanent peace. Under this pretext, he dispatched cardinal Rebiba, as his nuncio, to the court of Brussels, and his nephew cardinal Caraffa, to that of Paris. The public instructions of both were the same ; but Caraffa, besides these, received a private commission, to spare neither entreaties, promises, nor bribes, in

## PART I.

A. D. 1555.

order to induce the French monarch to renounce the truce, and renew his engagements with the court of Rome. He flattered Henry with the conquest of Naples: he gained by his address the Guises, the queen, and even the famous Diana of Poitiers, duchess of Valentinois, the king's mistress: and they easily swayed the king himself, who already leaned to that side, towards which they wished to incline him. All Montmorency's prudent remonstrances were disregarded. The nuncio, by powers from Rome, absolved Henry from his oath of truce; and that rash prince signed a new treaty with the pope, which rekindled with fresh violence the flames of war, both in Italy and the Low Countries.

A. D. 1556.

No sooner was Paul made acquainted with the success of this negotiation, than he proceeded to the most indecent extremities against Philip II. He ordered the Spanish ambassador to be imprisoned: he excommunicated the Colonnas, because of their attachment to the imperial house; and he considered Philip as guilty of high treason, and to have forfeited his right to the kingdom of Naples, which he was supposed to hold of the Holy See, for afterward affording them a retreat in his dominions<sup>12</sup>.

ALARMED at a quarrel with the pope, whom he had been taught to regard with the most superstitious veneration, as the vicerent of Christ, and the common father of Christendom, Philip tried every gentle method before he made use of force. He even consulted some Spanish divines on the lawfulness of taking arms against a person so sacred. They decided in his favour: and Paul continuing inexorable, the duke of

12. Pallav. lib. xiii.

Alva, to whom the conduct of the negociation as well as of the war had been committed, entered the Ecclesiastical State at the head of ten thousand veterans, and carried terror to the gates of Rome.

LETTER  
LXIII.

A. D. 1556.

THE haughty pontiff, though still obstinate and undaunted himself, was forced to give way to the fears of the cardinals, and a truce was concluded for forty days. Meantime the duke of Guise arriving with an army of twenty thousand French troops, Paul became more arrogant than ever, and banished from his mind all thoughts but those of war and revenge. The duke of Guise, however, who is supposed to have given his voice for this war, chiefly from a desire of acquiring a field where he might display his military talents, was able to perform nothing in Italy worthy of his former fame. He was obliged to abandon the siege of Civetella; he could not bring the duke of Alva to a general engagement; his army perished by diseases, and the pope neglected to furnish the necessary reinforcements. He begged to be recalled: and France stood in need of his abilities.

A. D. 1557.

PHILIP II. though willing to have avoided a rupture, was no sooner informed that Henry had violated the truce of Vaucelles, than he determined to act with such vigour as should convince all Europe, that his father had not erred in resigning to him the reins of government. He immediately assembled in the Low Countries a body of fifty thousand men: he obtained a supply of ten thousand from England, which he had engaged, as we have seen, in this quarrel; and not being ambitious of military fame, he gave the command of his army to Emanuel Philibert, duke of Savoy, one of the greatest generals of that warlike age.



## PART I.

A. D. 1557.

THE duke of Savoy kept the enemy for a time in utter ignorance of his destination. At length he seemed to threaten Champagne, toward which the French drew all their troops ; a motion which he no sooner perceived than, turning suddenly to the right, he advanced by rapid marches into Picardy, and laid siege to St. Quintin. It was deemed in that age a place of considerable strength, but the fortifications had been much neglected, and the garrison did not amount to a fifth part of the number requisite for its defence : it must therefore have surrendered in a few days, if the admiral de Coligny had not taken the gallant resolution of throwing himself into it with such a body of men as could be suddenly collected for that purpose. He effected his design in spite of the enemy, breaking through their main body with seven hundred horse, and two hundred foot. The town however was closely invested ; and the constable Montmorency, anxious to extricate his nephew out of that perilous situation, in which his zeal for the public good had engaged him, as well as to save a place of great importance, rashly advanced to its relief with forces one half inferior to those of the enemy. His army was cut in pieces, and he himself made prisoner <sup>13</sup>.

Aug. 10.

THE cautious temper of Philip, on this occasion, saved France from devastation, if not ruin. The duke of Savoy proposed to overlook all inferior objects, and march directly to Paris ; of which in its present consternation, he could not have failed to make himself master. But the Spanish monarch, afraid of the consequences of such a bold enterprize, desired him to continue the siege of St. Quintin, in order to secure a safe retreat, in case of any disastrous event. The town, long and gallantly defended by Coligny, was

at last taken by storm ; but not before France was in a state of defence.

LETTER  
LXIII.

A.D. 1557.

PHILIP was now sensible he had lost an opportunity, that could never be recalled, of distressing his enemy, and contented himself with reducing Horn and Catelet: two pretty towns, which, together with St. Quintin, were the sole fruits of one of the most decisive victories gained in the sixteenth century. The Catholic king, however, continued in high exultation, on account of his success; and as all his passions were tinged with superstition, he vowed to build a church, a monastery and a palace, in honour of St. Lawrence, on the day sacred to whose memory the battle of St. Quintin had been fought. He accordingly laid the foundation of an edifice, in which all these buildings were included, and which he continued to forward at vast expence, for twenty-two years. The same principle that dictated the vow, directed the construction of the fabric. It was so formed as to resemble a grid-iron!—on which culinary instrument, according to the legendary tale, St. Lawrence had suffered martyrdom<sup>14</sup>. Such, my dear Philip, is the origin of the famous Escorial, near Madrid, the royal residence of the kings of Spain.

THE earliest account of that fatal blow which France had received at St. Quintin, was carried to Rome by the courier whom Henry had sent to recall the duke of Guise. Paul remonstrated warmly against the departure of the French army; but Guise's orders were peremptory. The arrogant pontiff therefore found it necessary to accommodate his conduct to the exigency of his affairs, and to employ the mediation of the Ve-

<sup>14</sup> Colmenar. *Annal. d'Espagne*. tom. ii.

## PART I.

A. D. 1557.

netians, and of Cosmo of Medicis, in order to obtain peace from Spain. The first overtures to this purpose were easily listened to by the Catholic king, who still doubted the justice of his cause, and considered it as his greatest misfortune to be obliged to contend with the pope. Paul agreed to renounce his league with France; and Philip stipulated on his part, that the duke of Alva should repair in person to Rome, and after asking pardon of the Holy Father in his own name, and in that of his master, for having invaded the patrimony of the church, should receive absolution from that crime!—Thus the pope, through the superstitious timidity of Philip, not only finished an unpropitious war without any detriment to the apostolic see, but saw his conqueror humbled at his feet: and so excessive was the veneration of the Spaniards in that age for the papal character, that the duke of Alva, the proudest man perhaps of his time, and accustomed from his infancy to converse with princes, acknowledged that when he approached Paul, he was so much over-awed, that his voice failed, and his presence of mind forsook him <sup>15</sup>.

BUT although this war, which at its commencement threatened mighty revolutions, was terminated without occasioning any alteration in those states which were its immediate object, it produced effects of considerable consequence in other parts of Italy. In order to detach Octavio Farnese, duke of Parma, from the French interest, Philip restored to him the city of Placentia and its territory, which had been seized, as we have seen, by Charles V. and he granted to Cosmo of Medicis the investiture of Siena, as an equiva-

15. Pallav. lib. xiii.

lent for the sums due to him <sup>16</sup>. By these treaties the balance of power among the Italian states was poised more equally, and rendered less variable, than it had been since it received the first violent shock from the invasion of Charles VIII. and Italy henceforth ceased to be the théâtre on which the sovereigns of Spain, France, and Germany, contended for fame and dominion. Their hostilities, excited by new objects, stained other regions of Europe with blood, and made other states feel, in their turn, the calamities of war.

LETTER  
LXIII.  
A. D. 1557.

THE duke of Guise, who left Rome the same day that his adversary the duke of Alva made his humiliating submission to the pope, was received in France as the guardian angel of the kingdom. He was appointed commander in chief, with a jurisdiction almost unlimited; and, eager to justify the extraordinary confidence which the king had reposed in him, as well as to perform something suitable to the high expectations of his countrymen, he undertook the siege of Calais. The extraordinary success of that enterprize, and its different effects upon the English and French nations, we have already had occasion to observe. Guise next invested Thionville, in the duchy of Luxembourg, one of the strongest towns on the frontier of the Netherlands, and forced it to capitulate after a siege of three weeks. But the advantages in this quarter were more than balanced by an event which happened in another part of the Low Countries. The Marechal de Termes, governor of Calais, who had penetrated into Flanders, and taken Dunkirk, was totally routed near Gravelines, and taken prisoner by count Egmont <sup>17</sup>. This disaster obliged the duke of

A. D. 1558.

<sup>16</sup>. Thuan. lib. xviii.

<sup>17</sup>. Thuan. lib. xx.

## PART I.

A. D. 1558.

Guise to relinquish all his other schemes, and hasten to the frontiers of Picardy, that he might there oppose the progress of the enemy.

THE eyes of France were now anxiously turned toward the operations of a general on whose arms victory had always attended, and in whose conduct, as well as good fortune, his countrymen could confide in every danger. Guise's strength was nearly equal to that of the duke of Savoy, each commanding about forty thousand men. They encamped at the distance of a few leagues from one another; and the French and Spanish monarchs having joined their respective armies, it was expected that, after the vicissitudes of war, a signal victory would at last determine which of the rivals should take the ascendant for the future in the affairs of Europe. But both monarchs, as if by agreement, stood on the defensive; neither of them discovering any inclination, though each had it in his power, to rest the decision of a point of such importance on the issue of a single battle.

DURING this state of inaction, peace began to be mentioned in each camp, and both Henry and Philip discovered an equal disposition to listen to any overture that tended to re-establish it. The private inclinations of both king's concurred with their political interests and the wishes of their people. Philip languished to return to Spain, the place of his nativity; and peace only could enable him, either with decency or safety, to quit the Low Countries. Henry was no less desirous of being freed from the avocations of war, that he might have leisure to turn the whole force of his government to the suppressing of the opinions of the reformers, which were spreading with such rapidity in  
Paris

Paris and the other great towns, that the Protestants began to grow formidable to the established church. Court intrigues conspired with these public and avowed motives to hasten the negotiation, and the abbey of Cercamp was fixed on as the place of congress<sup>18</sup>.

LETTER

LXIII.

A.D. 1558.

WHILE Philip and Henry were making these advances toward a treaty, which restored tranquillity to Europe, Charles V. whose ambition had so long disturbed it, but who had been for some time dead to all such pursuits, ended his days in the monastery of St. Justus, in Estramadura, which he had chosen as the place of his retreat. It was seated in a valley of no great extent, watered by a small brook, and surrounded by rising grounds, covered with lofty trees. In this solitude Charles lived on a plan that would have suited a private gentleman of moderate fortune. His table was plain, his domestics few, and his intercourse with them familiar. Sometimes he cultivated the plants in his garden with his own hands, sometimes rode out to the neighbouring wood on a little horse, the only one which he kept, attended by a single servant on foot: and when his infirmities deprived him of these more active recreations, he admitted a few gentlemen, who resided near the monastery, to visit him, and entertained them as equals; or he employed himself in studying the principles, and in framing curious works of mechanism, of which he had always been remarkably fond, and to which his genius was peculiarly turned. But, however he was engaged, or whatever might be the state of his health, he always set apart a considerable portion of his time for religious exercises, regularly attending divine service in the chapel of the monastery, morning and evening.

18. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book xii.

## PART I.

A. D. 1358.

IN this manner, not unbecoming a man perfectly disengaged from the affairs of the world, did Charles pass his time in retirement. But some months before his death, the gout, after a longer intermission than usual, returned with a proportional increase of violence, and enfeebled both his body and mind to such a degree, as to leave no traces of that sound and masculine understanding which had distinguished him among his cotemporaries. He sunk into a deep melancholy. An illiberal and timid superstition depressed his spirit. He lost all relish for amusements of every kind, and desired no other company but that of monks. With them he chanted the hymns in the Missal, and conformed to all the rigours of monastic life, tearing his body with a whip, as an expiation for his sins!—Not satisfied with these acts of mortification, and anxious to merit the favour of Heaven by some new and singular instance of piety, he resolved to celebrate his own obsequies. His tomb was accordingly erected in the chapel of the monastery: his attendants walked thither in funeral procession. Charles followed them in his shroud. He was laid in his coffin, and the service of the dead was chanted over him; he himself joining in the prayers that were put up for the repose of his soul, and mingling his tears with those which his attendants shed, as if they had been celebrating a real funeral<sup>18</sup>.

THE fatiguing length of this ceremony or the awful sentiments which it inspired, threw Charles into a fever, of which he died in the fifty-ninth year of his age. His enterprizes speak his most eloquent panegyric, and his history forms his highest character. No prince ever governed so extensive an empire, in-

19. Zunig. *Vit. de Carlos*. Robertson, *ubi sup.*

ing his American dominions, none seems ever to **LETTER**  
 : been endowed with a superior capacity for sway. **LXXII.**  
 abilities as a statesman, and even as a general, **A.D. 1558.**  
 : of the first class; and he possessed in the most  
 ent degree, along with indefatigable industry,  
 science which is of the greatest importance to a  
 arch, that of discerning the characters of men,  
 of adapting their talents to the various depart-  
 ts in which they are to be employed. But, un-  
 nately for the reputation of Charles, his insa-  
 e ambition, which kept himself, his neighbours,  
 his subjects in perpetual inquietude, not only  
 rated the chief end of government, the felicity  
 he nations committed to his care, but obliged  
 to have recourse to low artifices, unbecoming his  
 ted station, and led him into such deviations from  
 grity, as were unworthy of a great prince. This  
 lious policy, in itself sufficiently detestable, was  
 lered still more odious by a comparison with the  
 n and undesigning character of Francis I. {and  
 ed, by way of contrast, to turn on the French mo-  
 ch a degree of admiration, to which neither his  
 talents nor his virtues as a sovereign seem to have  
 tled him.

BEFORE Charles left the Low-Countries he made  
 cond attempt to induce his brother Ferdinand to  
 e up his title to the imperial throne to Philip II.  
 to accept the investiture of some provinces, either  
 Italy or the Netherlands, as an equivalent. But  
 ling Ferdinand inflexible on that point, he desisted  
 lly from his scheme, and resigned to him the go-  
 nment of the empire. The electors made no hesi-  
 on in recognizing the king of the Romans, whom  
 y put in possession of all the ensigns of the imperial  
 nity, as soon as the deed of resignation was pre-  
 sented



## PART I.

A. D. 1558.

sented to them; but Paul IV. whose lofty ideas of papal prerogative neither experience nor disappointments could moderate, refused to confirm the election of the diet. He pretended that it belonged alone to the pope, from whom, as viceroy of Christ, imperial power was derived, to nominate a person to the vacant throne; and this arrogance and obstinacy he maintained during his whole pontificate. Ferdinand I. however, did not enjoy the less authority as emperor.

Soon after the death of Charles V. Mary of England ended her short and inglorious reign, and her daughter Elizabeth, as we have already seen, succeeded to the throne, to the general joy of the nation, notwithstanding some supposed defects in her title. Henry Philip beheld Elizabeth's elevation with equal fortitude; and equally sensible of the importance of gaining her favour, both set themselves with emulation to court it. Henry endeavoured by the warmest professions of regard and friendship, to detach her from the Spanish alliance, and to engage her to conclude a separate peace with him; while Philip, unwilling to lose his connection with England, not only continued with Henry in declarations of esteem for Elizabeth and in professions of his resolution to cultivate the strictest amity with her, but, in order to confirm and perpetuate their union, he offered himself to her in marriage, and undertook to procure a dispensation from the pope for that purpose.

ELIZABETH weighed the proposals of the two monarchs with that provident discernment of her true interest which was conspicuous in all her deliberations, and although secretly determined to yield to the solicitations of



licitations of neither, she continued for a time to amuse both. By this happy artifice, as well as by the prudence with which she at first concealed her intentions concerning religion, the young queen so far gained upon Philip, that he warmly espoused her interest in the conferences at Cercamp, and afterwards at Chateau Cambresis, whither they were removed. The earnestness, however, with which he seconded the arguments of the English plenipotentiaries began to relax in proportion as his prospect of espousing the queen became more distant; and the vigorous measures that Elizabeth took, as soon as she found herself firmly seated on the throne, not only for overturning all that her sister had done in favour of popery, but for establishing the protestant church on a sure foundation, convinced Philip, that his hopes of an union with her had been from the beginning vain, and were now desperate. Henceforth decorum alone made him preserve the appearance of interposing in her favour. Elizabeth, who expected such an alteration in his conduct, quickly perceived it. But, as peace was necessary to her, instead of resenting this coolness, she became more moderate in her demands, in order to preserve the feeble tie by which she was still united to him; and Philip, that he might not seem to have abandoned the English queen, insisted, that the treaty of peace between Henry and Elizabeth should be concluded in form, before that between France and Spain <sup>20</sup>.

THE treaty between Henry and Elizabeth contained no article of importance, except that which respected Calais. It was stipulated that the king of France should retain possession of that town, with all its dependencies, during eight years, at the expiration of

<sup>20</sup>. Strype's *Annals*, vol. i. Forbes's *Full View*, vol. i.

which

**PART I.** which term he should restore it to England. **B**  
**A.D. 1559.** the force of this stipulation was made to depend  
 Elizabeth's preserving inviolate, during the  
 number of years, the peace both with France and  
 land, all men of discernment saw, that it was but  
 cent pretext for abandoning Calais; and, instead  
 blaming her, they applauded her wisdom, in palliating  
 what she could not prevent.

THE expedient which Montmorency employed  
 order to facilitate the conclusion of peace between  
 France and Spain, was the negotiating two treaties  
 of marriage; one between Elizabeth, Henry's  
 daughter, and Philip II. the other between Margaret  
 Henry's only sister, and the duke of Savoy.  
 principal articles of the treaty of peace were, That  
 conquests made by either party, on this side of the Alps  
 since the commencement of the war in 1551, should  
 mutually restored; that the duchy of Savoy, the  
 principality of Piedmont, the county of Bresse, and  
 the other territories formerly subject to the duke  
 Savoy, should be restored to Emanuel Philibert,  
 immediately after the celebration of his marriage  
 Margaret of France, (a few towns excepted, which  
 Henry should retain, till his claims on that princess  
 decided in a court of law); that the French king should  
 immediately evacuate all the places which he held  
 the duchy of Tuscany and the territory of Siena,  
 renounce all future pretensions to them; that he should  
 receive the Genoese into favour, and give up to them  
 the towns which he had conquered in the island of Corsica.  
 But he was allowed to keep possession of Metz,  
 Toul, and Verdun, because Philip had little at heart  
 the interests of his uncle Ferdinand. All past transactions,  
 either of princes or subjects, it was agreed  
 should

be buried in oblivion<sup>21</sup>. Thus the great causes of discord that had so long embroiled the powerful monarchs of France and Spain, seemed to be wholly removed, or finally annihilated by this famous treaty, which re-established peace in Europe; almost every prince and state in Christendom, being comprehended in the treaty of Chateau Cambresis, as allies either of Henry or of Philip.

LETTER  
LXIII.  
A. D. 1559.

AMONG these contracting powers were included the kings of Denmark, Sweden, and Poland. This circumstance naturally leads us to cast an eye on those countries, which we have not for some time had an opportunity of noticing, as they had no connexion with the general system of European affairs. Meantime I must observe, for the sake of perspicuity, that Henry II. being killed in a tournament, while celebrating the espousals of his sister with the duke of Savoy, his son Francis II. a weak prince, and under age, already married to the queen of Scots, succeeded to the crown of France. A few weeks after, Paul IV. ended his violent and imperious pontificate:—and thus, as a learned historian observes<sup>22</sup>, all the personages who had long sustained the principal characters on the great theatre of Europe disappeared nearly at the same time.

AT this æra, my dear Philip, a more known period of history opens. Other actors appeared on the stage, with different views and passions; new contests arose; and new schemes of ambition, as we shall have occasion to see, occupied and disquieted mankind.—But before we enter on that period, we must take a view of the state of the North.

1. *Rassemblement des Traités*, tom. ii. 22. Robertson, *Hist. Charles V.* book xii.

## L E T T E R LXIV.

SWEDEN, DENMARK, and NORWAY, *from the Union of these Kingdoms under MARGARET WALDEMAR, surnamed the SEMIRAMIS of the NORTH, to the Death of GUSTAVUS VASA; together with an Account of the State of RUSSIA, POLAND, and PRUSSIA, in the Sixteenth Century.*

LETTER  
LXIV.

THE kingdoms of the north of Europe, that great store house of nations, I have hitherto chiefly considered as dependencies on the German empire, to which they long continued to pay some degree of homage. In what manner they were subjected to that homage, we have already had occasion to observe, and also to notice the union of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, the ancient Scandinavia, under Margaret Waldemar, surnamed the Semiramis of the North.

MARGARET was daughter of Waldemar III. king of Denmark. She had been married to Hacquin, king of Norway, and son of Magnus III. king of Sweden. On the death of her son Olaus, the last male heir of the three northern crowns, (which were, however, more elective than hereditary) she succeeded, by the consent of the states, to the Danish throne. She was elected soon after queen of Norway, which she had governed as regent; and the Swedes being oppressed by Albert of Mecklenburg, whom they had chosen king, made Margaret a solemn tender of their crown. She marched to their assistance, expelled Albert, and assumed the reins of government.

MARGARET's ambition, however, was not yet satisfied. The three northern crowns were no sooner seated upon her head, than she laboured to render their union perpetual. For this purpose, after taking preparatory measures, she convoked the states of all the three kingdoms to meet at Calmar; where it was established as a fundamental law of the whole, that Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, should thenceforth have but one and the same sovereign, who should be chosen successively by each of these kingdoms, and then approved by the other two; that each nation should retain its own laws, customs, privileges, and dignities; and that the natives of one kingdom should not be raised to posts of honour or profit in another, but should be reputed foreigners except in their own country <sup>2</sup>.

LETTER  
LXIV.

A. D. 1397.

BUT this union, seemingly so well calculated for the tranquillity as well as security of the North, proved the source of much discontent, and of many barbarous wars. The national antipathy between the Swedes and Danes, now heightened by national jealousy, was with difficulty restrained by the vigorous administration of Margaret, whose partiality to the natives of Denmark is said to have been but too evident; and under her successor Eric, still more unjustly partial to the Danes, the Swedes openly revolted, choosing their grand marshal, Charles Canutson, descended from the illustrious family of Bonde, which had formerly given kings to Sweden, first regent, and afterwards king. The Swedes, however, returned to their allegiance under Christian I. of Denmark. But they again revolted from the same prince; again renewed

A. D. 1443.

2. Meurs. lib. v.

PART I. the union of Calmar, under John his successor ; revolted a third time ; and were finally subdued by the arms of Christian II. who reduced them to the condition of a conquered people <sup>3</sup>,  
 A.D. 1448.

THE circumstances of this last revolution are sufficiently singular to merit our attention ; and the consequences by which it was followed, render a recapitulation necessary.

THE Swedes, on revolting from Christian I. had conferred the administration of the kingdom on Sten Sture, whose son, of the same name, succeeded him in the regency. The authority of young Sture was acknowledged by the body of the nation, but disputed by Gustavus Trolle, archbishop of Upsal, and prime minister of Sweden, whose father had been a competitor for the administration, and whom Christian II. of Denmark had brought over to his interest. Besieged in his castle of Steckla, and obliged to surrender, notwithstanding the interposition of the Danish monarch, the archbishop was degraded by the diet, and deprived of all his benefices. In his distress he applied to Leo X. who excommunicated the regent and his adherents, committing the execution of the bull to the king of Denmark. Pursuant to this decree, the Nero of the North, as Christian II. is deservedly called, invaded Sweden with a powerful army ; but being worsted in a great battle, he pretended to treat, and offered to go in person to Stockholm, in order to confer with the regent, provided six hostages were sent as a pledge of his safety. The proposal was accepted, and six of the first nobility (among whom was

3. Vertot. *Revolut. Sued.*

Gustavus Vasa, grand-nephew to king Canutson) were put on board the Danish fleet. These hostages Christian carried prisoners to Denmark. Next year, he returned with a more formidable armament, and invaded West Gothland ; where Steen Sture advancing to give him battle, fell into an ambuscade, and received a wound, which proved mortal. The Swedish army, left without a head, first treated, and afterwards dispersed. The senate was divided about the choice of a new regent, and the conqueror allowed them no leisure to deliberate. He immediately marched toward the capital, wasting every thing before him with fire and sword. Stockholm surrendered ; and Gustavus Trolle, resuming his archiepiscopal function, crowned Christian king of Sweden.

LETTER  
LXIV.  
A. D. 1520.

THIS coronation was followed by one of the most tragical scenes in the history of the human race, Christian, affecting clemency, went to the cathedral, and swore that he would govern Sweden, not with the severe hand of a conqueror, but with the mild and beneficent disposition of a prince raised to the throne by the universal voice of the people ; after which he invited the senators and grandees to a sumptuous entertainment, that lasted for three days. Meanwhile a plot was formed for extirpating the Swedish nobility. On the last day of the feast, in order to afford some pretext for the intended massacre, archbishop Trolle reminded the king, that though his majesty, by a general amnesty, had pardoned all past offences, no satisfaction had yet been given to the pope, and demanded justice in the name of his Holiness. The hall was immediately filled with armed men, who secured the guests : the primate proceeded against them as heretics ; a scaffold was erected before the palace-



## PART I.

A. D. 1520.

gate; and ninety-four persons of distinction, among whom was Eric Vasa, father of the celebrated Gustavus, were publicly executed for defending the liberties of their country. Other barbarities succeeded to these: the rage of the soldiery was let loose against the citizens, who were butchered without mercy; and the body of the late regent was dug from the grave, exposed on a gibbet, quartered, and nailed up in different parts of the kingdom<sup>4</sup>.

BUT Sweden soon found a deliverer and an avenger. Gustavus Vasa had escaped from his prison in Denmark, and concealed himself, in the habit of a peasant, among the mountains of Dalecarlia. There, deserted by his sole companion and guide, who carried off his little treasure; bewildered, destitute of every necessary, and ready to perish of hunger, he entered himself among the miners, and worked under ground for bread, without relinquishing the hope of one day ascending the throne of Sweden. Again emerging to light, and distinguished among the Dalecarlians by his lofty mien, and by the strength and agility of his body, he had acquired a considerable degree of ascendancy over them, before they were acquainted with his rank. He made himself known to them at their annual feast, and exhorted them to assist him in recovering the liberties of their country. They listened to him with admiration: they were all rage against their oppressors; but they did not resolve to join him, till some of the old men among them observed (so inconsiderable often are the causes of the greatest events!) that the wind had blown directly from the north, from the moment that Gustavus began to speak. This they considered as an infallible

4. *Id. libell.*

sign of the approbation of Heaven, and an order to take up arms under the banners of the hero: they already saw the wreath of victory on his brow, and begged to be led against the enemy. Gustavus did not suffer their ardour to cool. He immediately attacked the governor of the province in his castle, took it by assault, and sacrificed the Danish garrison to the just vengeance of the Dalecarlians. Like animals that have tasted the blood of their prey, they were now furious, and fit for any desperate enterprise. Gustavus every where saw himself victorious, and gained partizans in all corners of the kingdom. Every thing yielded to his valour and good fortune. His popularity daily increased. He was first chosen regent, and afterward king of Sweden <sup>5</sup>.

A.D. 1521.

A.D. 1529

MEANWHILE, Christian II. become obnoxious by his tyrannies even to his Danish subjects, was degraded from the throne. The inhabitants of Jutland first renounced his authority. They deputed Munce, their chief justice, to signify to the tyrant the sentence of deposition. "My name," said Munce, glorying in the dangerous commission, "ought to be written over the gates of all wicked princes!" and it ought certainly to be transmitted to posterity, as a warning to both kings and inferior magistrates, of the danger of abusing power. The whole kingdom of Denmark acquiesced in the decree; and Christian, hated even by his own officers, and not daring to trust any one, retired into the Low Countries, the hereditary dominions of his brother-in-law, Charles V. whose assistance he had long implored in vain <sup>6</sup>.

5. Loccen. Puffend. Vertot.

6. Ibid.

## PART I.

A.D. 1514.

FREDERIC duke of Holstein, Christian's uncle, was elected king of Denmark and Norway. He aspired also to the sovereignty of Sweden; but finding Gustavus firmly seated on the throne of that kingdom, he laid aside his claim. Frederic afterwards entered into an alliance with Gustavus and the Hanse-towns, against the deposed king, Christian II. who, after several unsuccessful attempts to recover his crown, died in prison: a fate too gentle for so barbarous a tyrant.

A. D. 1533.

FREDERIC was succeeded in the Danish throne by his son, Christian III. one of the most prudent and prosperous princes of his age. He established the

A. D. 1537.

Protestant religion at the same time in Denmark and Norway, in imitation of the example of Gustavus, who had already introduced it into Sweden. The doctrines of Luther had spread themselves over both kingdoms, and both princes saw the advantage of retrenching the exorbitant power of the clergy. Christian died in 1558, and Gustavus in 1560, leaving behind him the glorious character of a patriot king. He rescued Sweden from the Danish yoke, by his valour; he made commerce and arts flourish, by his wise policy; and the liberality of his bold and independent spirit, by making him superior to vulgar prejudices, enabled him to break the fetters of priestly tyranny, and enfranchise the minds as well as the bodies of his countrymen.

WHILE Denmark and Sweden were thus rising to distinction, Russia remained buried in that barbarism and obscurity, from which it was called about the beginning of the present century, by the creative genius of Peter the Great, who made his country known and

LETTER  
LXIV.  
—

formidable to the rest of Europe. But the names of patriots and of heroes, however rude or enlightened, ought to be transmitted to posterity. John Basilowitz I. great-duke of Muscovy, threw off the yoke of the Tartars, to whom Russia had been long tributary; expelled the Tartar officers from Moscow; invaded their territories; made himself master of Novogorod, and also of Cassan, where he was crowned with the diadem of that country; and assumed the title of czar, which in the Slavonian language signifies king or emperor. To these acquisitions his grandson, John Basilowitz II. added Astracan, and also Siberia, hitherto as little known to the Russians as Mexico was to the Spaniards before the expedition of Cortez, and as easily conquered. This prince sent ambassadors to the court of England, and concluded a treaty of commerce with Elizabeth<sup>2</sup>; Richard Chancellor, an English navigator, having discovered some years before, by doubling the North Cape, the port of Archangel in the river Dwina. A. D. 1470. A. D. 1554. A. D. 1569.

POLAND, still a scene of anarchy, began to be of some consideration in the North, after the race of the Jagellons came to the throne, and united Lithuania to that kingdom. Though the crown is elective, the succession continued uninterrupted in the same family for almost two hundred years, and Sigismund I. contemporary with Charles V. was esteemed a great prince<sup>9</sup>. But while the most inconsiderate of the nobles, by the word *veta* can prevent the enacting of the most salutary law; and while the great body of the people remain in a state of slavery, Poland can never obtain any rank among civilized nations.—So true it is, my dear Philip, that the character of a people, their

2. Petreius. Camden.

9. Flor. Polon.

**PART I.** virtue, their genius, and their industry, depend chiefly on their civil and political institutions !

PRUSSIA, which has lately made so great a figure in the affairs of Europe, was only erected into a kingdom in the year 1700. It was originally conquered from the Pagans of the North, by the knights of the Teutonic order, who held it upwards of three hundred years. At last Albert, margrave of Brandenburg, grand master of the order, embracing the doctrines of Luther, and willing to aggrandise himself at the expence of the knights, agreed to share Prussia with his uncle, Sigismund I. king of Poland, on condition of paying homage for the protection of that crown.

**A. D. 1525.** The proposal was accepted. Albert took the title of duke in his new territory ; hence the present kingdom is called Ducal Prussia, and that part in the possession of Poland, and on the western side of the Vistula, Regal Prussia<sup>12</sup>.

THE future transactions of the kingdoms of Hungary and Bohemia, I shall have occasion to relate, as formerly, in treating of the affairs of the empire and the house of Austria. More interesting objects at present claim our attention.

<sup>10.</sup> *Mem. de Brandenburg*, tom. i.

## LETTER LXV.

ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, and FRANCE, *from the Peace of CHATEAU-CAMBRESIS, in 1559, to the Death of FRANCIS II. and the Return of MARY Queen of SCOTS to her native Kingdom.*

THE treaty of Chateau-Cambresis, my dear Philip, though it re-established peace, by settling the claims of the contending powers, by no means secured lasting tranquillity to Europe. The Protestant opinions had already made considerable progress both in France and the Low Countries, and Philip and Henry were equally resolved to extirpate heresy throughout their dominions. The horrors of the inquisition, long familiar to Spain, were not only increased in that kingdom, but extended to Italy and the Netherlands; and although the premature death of Henry II. suspended for a while the rage of persecution in France, other causes of discontent arose, and religion was made use of by each party, to light the flames of civil war<sup>1</sup>.

LETTER  
LXV.

A. D. 1559.

A NEW source of discord also arose between France and England. The princes of Lorraine, the ambitious family of Guise, whose credit had long been great at the French court, and who had negotiated the marriage between the dauphin, now Francis II. and their niece the queen of Scots, extended still farther their ambitious views. No less able than aspiring, they had governed both the king and kingdom, since the accession of the young and feeble Francis. But they

1. Thuanus. Cabrera. Davila.

had

## PART I.

A.D. 1559.

had many enemies. Catherine of Medicis, the queen mother, a woman who scrupled at no violence or perfidy to accomplish her ends; the two princes of blood, Anthony de Bourbon king of Navarre, and his brother Lewis prince of Condé, besides the constable Montmorency and his powerful family, were all enemies of the administration, and envious of the power of the Guises<sup>2</sup>.

In order to acquire this power, the duke of Guise and his five brothers, the cardinal of Lorraine, the duke of Aumale, the cardinal of Guise, the marquis of Elbeuf, and the Grand Prior, men no less ambitious than himself, had not only employed the greatest military and political talents, but to all these arts of insinuation and address had added those of intrigue and dissimulation. In negotiating the marriage between their niece, Mary Stuart, and the dauphin these artful princes, while they prevailed on the French court to grant the Scottish nation every security for the independency of that crown, engaged the young queen of Scots to subscribe privately three deeds, by which, failing the heirs of her own body, she conferred the kingdom of Scotland, with whatever inheritance or *succession* might accrue to it, in free gift upon the crown of France; declaring any deed which her subjects had, or might extort from her to the contrary, to be void, and of no obligation<sup>3</sup>.

By the succession mentioned in these deeds, the crown of England seems to have been meant; for as soon as the Guises were informed of the death of queen Mary, and the accession of her sister Elizabeth

2. Davila, lib. i. Mezeray, tom. v. *Diplomat.* tom. v. Robertson, *Hist. Scot.* book ii.

3. Du Mont, *Cor.*

birth, in the opinion of every good Catholic, (her from any legal right to the throne) than a project worthy of their ambition. In exalt still higher their credit, and secure their they attempted to acquire also for France the British kingdom. For this purpose they so- Rome, and obtained a bull, declaring Ed- birth illegitimate; and as the queen of Scots, married to the dauphin, was the next heir by they persuaded Henry II. to permit his son his mother-in-law to assume the title and arms of

BETH complained of this insult, by her am- at the court of France, but could obtain only an answer. No obvious measure however was during the reign of Henry II. in support of of the queen of Scots; but no sooner were es of Lorraine in full possession of the admi- under his successor, Francis II. than more and less guarded counsels were adopted. That Scotland was the quarter whence they back England to most advantage, they gave, ratatory step, orders to their sister, the queen- and encouraged her by promises of men and to take effectual measures for humbling the malcontents, and suppressing the Protestant in that kingdom; hoping that the English, formidable at that time by their zeal and and exasperated against Elizabeth, on ac- the change which she had made in the na- tion, would rise in support of the succession of Scots, when animated by the prospect tion, and throw themselves into the arms of

on, ubi sup. Anderson, *Diplom. Scot.* No. 68, and 164.

France,



**PART I.** France, as the only power that could secure to them their ancient worship, and the privileges of the Roman church<sup>5</sup>.

No stranger to these violent counsels, Elizabeth saw her danger, and determined to provide against it. Meanwhile the situation of affairs in Scotland afforded her a favourable opportunity, both of revenging the insult offered to her crown, and of defeating the ambitious views of France.

THE reformation was fast advancing in Scotland. All the low country was deeply tinged with the Protestant opinions; and as the converts to the new religion had been guilty of no violation of public peace since the murder of cardinal Beaton, whose death was partly occasioned by private revenge, the queen-regent, willing to secure their favour, in order to enable her to maintain that authority which she had found so much difficulty to acquire, connived at the progress of doctrines, which she wanted power to suppress. Too cautious, however, to trust to this precarious indulgence for the safety of their religious principles, the heads of the Protestant party in Scotland entered privately into a bond of association for their mutual protection and the propagation of their tenets, styling themselves the *Congregation of the Lord*, in contradistinction to the established church, which they denominated the *Congregation of Satan*<sup>6</sup>.

SUCH associations are generally the forerunners of rebellion; and it appears, that the heads of the Congregation in Scotland, carried their views farther than a mere toleration of the new doctrines. S

5. Forbes, vol. i. Thuan, lib. xxiv. 6. Keith. Knox.

far they were to blame, as enemies to civil authority; but the violent measures pursued against their sect, before this league was known or avowed, sufficiently justify the association itself, as the result of a prudent foresight, and a necessary step to secure the free exercise of their religion. Alarmed at the progress of the Reformation, the popish clergy had attempted to recover their sinking authority by enforcing the tyrannical laws against heresy; and Hamilton, the primate, formerly distinguished by his moderation, had sentenced to the flames an aged priest, convicted of embracing the Protestant opinions<sup>7</sup>.

THIS was the last barbarity of the kind that the Catholics had the power to exercise in Scotland. The severity of the archbishop rather roused than intimidated the reformers. The Congregation now openly solicited subscriptions to their league; and not satisfied with new and more solemn promises of the regent's protection, they presented a petition to her, craving a reformation of the church, and of the wicked, scandalous, and detestable lives of the clergy. They also framed a petition, which they intended to present to parliament, soliciting some legal protection against the exorbitant and oppressive jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts. They even petitioned the convocation; and insisted that prayers should be said in the vulgar tongue, that bishops should be chosen by the gentry of the diocese, and priests with the consent of the parishioners.

INSTEAD of soothing the Protestants, by any prudent concessions, the convocation rejected their demands with disdain; and the queen-regent, who had

<sup>7</sup>. *Ibid.*

## PART I.

A.D. 1559.

well as in the glory of promoting the common cause. In the present ferment of men's minds, occasioned by the regent's deceitful conduct, and the sense of their own danger, he mounted the pulpit, and claimed with such vehemence against the idolatry, other abuses of the church of Rome, that his audience were strongly incited to attempt its utter subversion. During those movements of holy indignation, the discreet bigotry of a priest, who immediately after that violent invective, was preparing to celebrate mass, and had opened all his repository of images and reliques, hurried the enthusiastic populace into immediate action. They fell with fury upon the decorations of the catholic, broke the images, tore the pictures, and threw the altars, and scattered about the sacred vessels. They next proceeded to the monasteries, against which their zeal more particularly pointed its thunder. Not content with expelling the monks, and demolishing every implement of idolatrous worship, they termed it, they vented their rage upon the buildings which had been the receptacles of such abominations; and, in a few hours, those superb edifices lay level with the ground<sup>11</sup>.

PROVOKED at these violences, and others of a similar kind, the queen-regent assembled an army, composed chiefly of French troops; and being assisted by the nobility as still adhered to her cause, she determined to inflict the severest vengeance on the whole Protestant party. Intelligence of her preparations, as well as of the spirit by which she was actuated, reached Perth; and the heads of the Congregation, who had given no countenance to the late insurrection in that city, would gladly have soothed her by

<sup>11</sup> Spotswood, p. 121. Knox, p. 127, 128. Robertson, b. 1. Hume, chap. xxviii.

most dutiful and submissive addressees, but finding her inexorable, they prepared for resistance, and their adherents flocked to them in such numbers that, within a few days they were in a condition not only to defend the town, but to take the field with superior forces. Neither party, however, discovered much inclination to hazard a battle, both being afraid of the dangerous consequences of such a trial of strength; and through the mediation of the earl of Argyle, and of James Stuart, prior of St. Andrews, the young queen's natural brother, who, although closely connected with the Reformers, had not yet openly deserted the regent, a treaty was concluded with the Congregation.

LETTER  
LXV.  
A. D. 1559.

In this treaty it was stipulated, among other provisions, That indemnity should be granted to all persons concerned in the late insurrection, and that the parliament should immediately be assembled, in order to compose religious differences. Both these stipulations the queen-regent broke—by neglecting to call the parliament; by fining some of the inhabitants of Perth, banishing others, turning the magistrates out of office, and leaving a garrison in the town, with orders to allow the exercise of no other religion but the Roman Catholic <sup>12</sup>. The Protestants renewed their league, and had again recourse to arms; despoiling, wherever they turned their route, the churches of their sacred furniture, and laying the monasteries in ruins. New treaties were concluded, and again broken, and new ravages were committed on the monuments of ecclesiastical pride and luxury.

MEANWHILE the Congregation had been joined not only by the earl of Argyle and the prior of St.

<sup>12</sup>. Buchanan, lib. xvi. Robertson, book ii.

**PART I.** Andrews, but also by the duke of Chatelrault and his son the earl of Arran, the presumptive heirs of the crown, and had possessed themselves of the capital. They now aimed at the redress of civil as well as religious grievances; requiring, as a preliminary toward settling the kingdom, and securing its liberties, the immediate expulsion of the French forces out of Scotland. The queen-regent, sensible of the necessity of giving way to a torrent which she could not resist, amused them for a time with fair promises and pretended negotiation; but being reinforced with a thousand foreign troops, and encouraged by the court of France to expect soon the arrival of an army so powerful, as the zeal of her adversaries, however desperate, would not dare to encounter, she listened to the rash counsels of her brothers, and at last gave the Congregation a positive denial. She was not answerable to the confederate lords, she said, for any part of her conduct; nor should she, upon any representation from them, abandon measures which she deemed necessary, or dismiss forces that she found useful; ordering them, at the same time, on pain of her displeasure, and as they valued their allegiance, to disband the troops which they had assembled.

THIS haughty reply to their earnest and continued solicitations, determined the leaders of the Congregation to take a step worthy of a brave and free people. They assembled the whole body of peers, barons, and representatives of boroughs, that adhered to their party; and the members of this bold convention (which equalled in number, and exceeded in dignity, the usual meetings of parliament), after examining the most delicate and important question that can possibly fall under the consideration of subjects, “the  
“ obedience

October 21<sup>st</sup>

dience due to an unjust and oppressive administration," gave their suffrage, without one dissent-  
 ice, for depriving Mary of Guise of the office  
 ent, which she had exercised so much to the de-  
 it of the kingdom <sup>13</sup>.

LETTER  
 LXV.

A. D. 1559.

The queen-dowager had already retired into Leith,  
 a-port of Edinburgh, which she had fortified  
 arrisoned with French troops, and where she  
 expected new reinforcements. Leith was im-  
 tely invested by the forces of the Congregation;  
 e confederate lords soon found, that their zeal  
 agged them in an undertaking which exceeded  
 ability to accomplish. The French garrison,  
 ng the tumultuous efforts of raw and undisc-  
 ed troops, refused to surrender the town; and  
 otestant leaders were neither sufficiently skilful  
 art of war, nor possessed of the artillery or ma-  
 s necessary for the purpose of a siege. Nor was  
 heir only misfortune: their followers, accus-  
 to decide every quarrel by immediate action,  
 trangers to the fatigues of a long campaign,  
 on became impatient of the severe and constant  
 which a siege requires. They first murmured,  
 untinied: the garrison took advantage of their  
 tents; and making a bold sally, cut many of  
 in pieces, and obliged the rest to abandon the  
 rize.

ON after this victory, the queen-dowager received  
 France a new reinforcement of a thousand vete-  
 ot, and some troops of horse. These, together  
 detachment from the garrison of Leith, were  
 ut to scour the country, and to pillage and lay

13. Id. Ibid. Knox, p. 134.

## PART I.

A.D. 1559.

waste the houses and lands of the Protestants. Already broken and dispirited, and hearing that the marquis of Elbeuf, the queen-dowager's brother, was suddenly expected with a great army, the leaders of the Congregation began to consider their cause as desperate, unless the Lord, whose holy name they had assumed, should miraculously interpose in their behalf. But whatever confidence they might place in divine aid, they did not neglect human means.

THE Scottish Protestants, in this pressing extremity, thought themselves excusable in craving foreign help. They turned their eyes toward England, which had already supplied them with money, and resolved to implore the assistance of Elizabeth to enable them to finish an undertaking, in which they had so fatally experienced their own weakness; and as the sympathy of religion, as well as regard to civil liberty, had now counterbalanced the ancient animosity against that sister-kingdom, this measure was the result of inclination no less than of interest or necessity. Maitland of Lethington, formerly the regent's principal secretary, and Robert Melvil, already acquainted with the intrigues of courts, were therefore secretly dispatched, as the most able negociators of the party, to solicit succours from the queen of England.

THE wise counsellors of Elizabeth did not long hesitate in agreeing to a request, which corresponded so perfectly with the views and interests of their mistress. Secretary Cecil, in particular, represented to the English queen the necessity, as well as equity, of interposing in the affairs of Scotland, and of preventing the conquest of that kingdom, at which France openly aimed.

aimed. Every society, he observed, has a right to defend itself, not only from present dangers, but from such as may probably ensue; that the invasion of England would immediately follow the reduction of the Scottish malcontents, by the abandoning of whom to the mercy of France, Elizabeth would open a way for her enemies into the heart of her own kingdom, and expose it to all the calamities of war, and the danger of conquest. Nothing therefore remained, he added, but to meet the enemy while yet at a distance, and by supporting the leaders of the Congregation with an English army, to render Scotland the scene of hostilities; to crush the designs of the princes of Lorraine in their infancy; and by such an early and unexpected effort, finally to expel the French out of Britain, before their power had time to grow up to any formidable height <sup>14</sup>.

LETTER  
LXV.  
A.D. 1559.

ELIZABETH, throughout her whole reign, was cautious but decisive; and by her promptitude in executing her resolutions, joined to the deliberation with which she formed them, her administration became as remarkable for its vigour as for its wisdom. No sooner did she determine to afford assistance to the leaders of the Congregation, a measure to which the reasoning of Cecil effectually swayed her, than they experienced the activity as well as extent of her power. The season of the year would not permit her troops to take the field; but, lest the French army should, in the mean time receive an accession of strength, she instantly ordered a squadron to cruise in the Frith of Forth, and early in the spring an English army, consisting of six thousand foot and two thousand

<sup>14</sup> Keith, Append. No. XVII. Forbes, vol. i. Jebb, vol. i.



PART I. horse, entered Scotland, under the command of lord  
 A. D. 1560. Grey of Wilton.

THE leaders of the Congregation assembled from all parts of the kingdom to meet their new allies; and having joined them with vast numbers of their followers, the combined army advanced toward Leith. The French, little able to keep the field against so superior a force, confined themselves within the walls of the fortification. The place was immediately invested; and although the fleet that carried the reinforcement under the marquis of Elbeuf had been scattered by a violent storm, and was either wrecked on the coast of France, or with difficulty recovered the ports of that kingdom, the garrison, by an obstinate defence, protracted the siege to a great length <sup>15</sup>.

MEANTIME the queen-dowager died; and many of the Catholic nobles, jealous of the French power, and more zealous for the liberty and independency of their country than for their religion, subscribed the alliance with England. Nothing therefore could now save the garrison of Leith, but the immediate conclusion of a treaty, or the arrival of a powerful army from France: and the situation of that kingdom constrained the princes of Lorraine to turn their thoughts, though with reluctance, toward pacific measures.

THE Protestants in France were become formidable by their numbers, and still more by the valour and enterprising genius of their leaders. Among these, the most eminent were the prince of Condé, the king,

15. *Mem. de Castelnau.*

of Navarre (no less distinguished by his abilities than his rank), the admiral de Coligny, and his brother Andelot, who no longer scrupled to make open profession of the reformed opinions, and whose high reputation both for valour and conduct gave great credit to the cause. Animated with zeal, and inflamed with resentment against the Guises, who had persuaded Francis II. to imitate the rigour of his father, by reviving the penal statutes against heresy, the Protestants or Hugonots, as they were styled by way of reproach, not only prepared for their own defence, but resolved, by some bold action, to anticipate the execution of those schemes which threatened the extirpation of their religion, and the ruin of those who professed it. Hence the famous conspiracy of Amboise, where they intended to seize the person of the king, and wrest the government out of the hands of the Guises, if not to dispatch them; and although the vigilance and good fortune of the princes of Lorraine discovered and disappointed that design, the spirit of the Protestant party was rather roused than broken by the tortures inflicted on the conspirators<sup>16</sup>. The admiral de Coligny had even the boldness to present to the king, in a grand council at Fontainebleau, a petition from the Hugonots, demanding the public exercise of their religion, unless they were allowed to assemble privately with impunity. He was treated as an incendiary by the cardinal of Lorraine; but his request was warmly seconded by Montluc, bishop of Valence, and by Marillac archbishop of Vienne, who both spoke with force against the abuses which had occasioned so many troubles and disorders, as well as against the ignorance and vices of the French clergy. An assembly

LETTER  
LXV.  
A. D. 1560.

March 15.

16. Davila, lib. i. ii. Mezeray, tom. v.

## PART I

A. D. 1560.

of the states was convoked, in order to appease the public discontents; the edicts against heretics were, in the meantime, suspended, and an appearance of toleration succeeded to the rage of persecution; but the sentiments of the court were well known, and it was easy to observe new storms gathering in every province of the kingdom, and ready to break forth with all the violence of civil war <sup>17</sup>.

July 6.

THIS distracted state of affairs, called off the ambition of the princes of Lorrain from the view of foreign conquests, in order to defend the honour and dignity of the French crown, and made it necessary to withdraw the few veteran troops already employed in Scotland, instead of sending new reinforcements into that kingdom. Plenipotentiaries were therefore sent to Edinburgh, where a treaty was signed with the ambassadors of Elizabeth. In this treaty, it was stipulated, that the French forces should instantly evacuate Scotland, and that Francis and Mary should thenceforth abstain from assuming the title of king and queen of England, or bearing the arms of that kingdom. Nor were the concessions granted to the Congregation less important; namely, that an amnesty should be published for all past offences; that none but natives should be put into any office in Scotland; that no foreign troops should hereafter be introduced into the kingdom without the consent of parliament; that the parliament should name twenty-four persons, out of whom the queen should chuse seven, and the parliament five, and in the hands of these twelve, so elected, should the whole administration be vested during Mary's absence; that she should neither make

<sup>17</sup>. Davila, lib. ii. Mezeray, ubi sup.

peace nor war without the consent of parliament; and that the parliament, at its first meeting, which was fixed to a certain day, should take into consideration the religious differences, and represent its sense of them to the king and queen <sup>18</sup>.

LETTER  
LXV.

A. D. 1560.

A FEW days after the conclusion of this treaty, both the French and English armies quitted Scotland; and the leaders of the Congregation being now absolute masters of the kingdom, made no farther scruple or ceremony in completing the work of reformation. The parliament, which was properly an assembly of the nobles, or great barons, and dignified clergy, met on the day named; and on this occasion the burgeses and lesser barons, who had also a right to be present in that assembly, but who seldom exercised it, stood forth to vindicate their civil and religious liberties, eager to aid with their voice in the senate, that cause which they had defended with their sword in the field. The Protestant members, who greatly out-numbered their adversaries, after ratifying the principal articles of the late treaty, and giving their sanction to a Confession of Faith, presented to them by their teachers, prohibited the exercise of religious worship according to the rites of the Romish church, under the penalty of forfeiture of goods, as the punishment of the first act of disobedience; banishment, as the punishment of the second; and death as the reward of the third <sup>19</sup>. With such indecent haste did the very persons who had just escaped the rigour of ecclesiastical tyranny, proceed to imitate those examples of severity, of which they had so justly complained! A law was also passed for abolishing the papal jurisdiction in Scot-

<sup>18</sup> 3. Keith. Spotswood. Knox.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid.

land;

PART I.

A. D. 1560.

land; and the Presbyterian form of worship was established, nearly as now constituted in that king-

FRANCIS and Mary refused to ratify these things; which, by the treaty of Edinburgh, ought to have been presented for approbation, in the form of covenants, not of acts. But the Scottish Protestants gave themselves little trouble about their sovereign's refusal. They immediately put the statutes in execution: they abolished the mass: they settled the ministers; and they committed furious devastations to the sacred buildings, which they considered as heinous reliques of idolatry, laying waste every venerable and magnificent, that had escaped the effects of popular insurrection. Abbeys, cathedrals, churches, libraries, records, and even the sepulchres of the kings, perished in one common ruin<sup>20</sup>.

UNITED by the consciousness of such unparalled stretches of authority, and well acquainted with the imperious character of the princes of Lorraine, the Protestant part of the Scottish Parliament, for their safety for themselves but in the protection of England, dispatched ambassadors to Elizabeth, to express their sincere gratitude for her past favours, and represent to her the necessity of continuing them. Elizabeth, on her part, had equal reason to desire an union with the northern reformers. Though the disorders in France had obliged the princes of Lorraine to remit their efforts in Scotland, and had been one chief cause of the success of the English arms, they were deterred not to relinquish their authority, or yield to the violence of their enemies. Nor had they yet

<sup>20</sup>. Robertson, book iii. Hume, chap. xxviii.



- aside their design of subverting Elizabeth's throne. Francis and Mary, whose councils were still wholly directed by them, obstinately refused to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh, and persisted in assuming the title and arms of England. Aware of the danger attending such pretensions, Elizabeth not only promised support to the Protestant party in Scotland, but secretly encouraged the French malcontents<sup>21</sup>; and it was with pleasure that she heard of the violent factions which prevailed in the court of France, and of the formidable opposition against the measures of the duke of Guise.

LETTER  
LXV.  
A. D. 1560.

BUT that opposition must soon have been crushed by the vigorous and decisive administration of the princes of Lorraine, if an unexpected event had not set bounds to their power. They had already found an opportunity of seizing the king of Navarre and the prince of Condé; they had thrown the former into prison; they had obtained a sentence of death against the latter; and they were proceeding to put it in execution, when the sudden death of Francis II. arrested the uplifted blow, and brought down the duke of Guise to the level of a subject. Catharine of Medicis the queen-mother, was appointed guardian to her son Charles IX. only ten years of age at his accession, and invested with the administration of the realm, though not with the title of regent. In consequence of her maxim "divide and govern!" the king of Navarre was named lieutenant-general of the kingdom; the sentence against Condé was annulled; the constable Montmorency was recalled to court; and the princes of Lorraine, though they still enjoyed high offices and

Dec. 4

A. D. 1561.

<sup>21</sup> Id. *ibid.*

great

**PART I.** great power, found a counterpoise to the weight of their influence<sup>22</sup>.  
**A.D. 1561.**

THE death of Francis II. without issue by the queen of Scots, and the change which it produced in the French councils, at once freed the queen of England from the perils attending an union of Scotland with France, and the Scottish Protestants from the terror of the French power. The joy of the Congregation was extreme. They ascribed those events to the immediate interposition of Providence, in favour of his chosen people; and Elizabeth without looking so high for their causes, determined to take advantage of their effects, in order more firmly to establish her throne. She still regarded the queen of Scots as a dangerous rival, on account of the number of English Catholics, who were generally prejudiced in favour of Mary's title, and would now adhere to her with more zealous attachment, when they saw that her succession no longer endangered the liberties of the kingdom. She therefore gave orders to her ambassador at the court of France, to renew his applications to the queen of Scots, and to require her immediate ratification of the treaty of Edinburgh<sup>23</sup>.

MARY, slighted by the queen-mother, who imputed to that princess all the mortifications she had met with during the life of Francis; forsaken by the swarm of courtiers, who appear only in the sunshine of prosperity, and overwhelmed with all the sorrow which so sad a reverse of fortune could occasion, had retired to Rheims; and there, in solitude, indulged her grief, or hid her indignation. But notwithstanding

22. *Mém. de Castelnau.* Davila, lib. ii.  
 Castelnau.

23. Keith. *Cat.*

ing her disconsolate condition, and though she had desisted after her husband's death from bearing the arms, or assuming the title of England, she still eluded ratifying the treaty of Edinburgh, and refused to make any solemn renunciation of her pretensions to the English crown<sup>24</sup>.

LETTER  
LXV.  
A.D. 1562.

MEANWHILE James Stuart, prior of St. Andrew, her natural brother, arrived at Rheims, in deputation from the states of Scotland, inviting the queen to return into her native kingdom, and assume the reins of government. But Mary, though severely sensible she was no longer queen of France, was in no haste to leave a country, where she had been educated from her earliest infancy, and where so many attentions had been paid to her person as well as to her rank. Accustomed to the elegance, gallantry, and gaiety of a splendid court, and to the conversation of a polished people, by whom she had been loved and admired, she still fondly lingered in the scene of all these enjoyments, and contemplated with horror the barbarism of her own country, and the turbulence of her native subjects, who had so violently spurned all civil and religious authority. By the advice of her uncles, however, she determined at last to set out for Scotland; and as the course in sailing from France to that kingdom, lies along the English coast, she demanded of Elizabeth, by the French ambassador, D'Oisel, a safe-conduct during her voyage. That request, which decency alone obliged one sovereign to grant to another, Elizabeth rejected in such a manner as gave rise to no slight suspicion of a design either to obstruct the passage or intercept the person of the queen of Scots<sup>25</sup>.

24. Ibid. 25. Keith. Camden. Robertson, Append. No. VI.



## PART I.

A. D. 1561.

THIS ungenerous behaviour of Elizabeth filled Mary with indignation, but did not retard her departure from France. Having cleared the room of her attendants, she said to Throgmorton, the English ambassador, "How weak I may prove, or how far a woman's frailty may transport me, I cannot tell; however, I am resolved not to have so many witnesses of my infirmity as your mistress had at her audience of my ambassador D'Oisel. There is nothing disturbs me so much, as having asked with so much importunity a favour, which it was of no consequence for me to obtain. I can, with God's leave, return to my own country, without her leave, as I came to France in spite of all the opposition of her brother, king Edward: neither do I want friends both able and willing to conduct me home, as they have brought me hither; though I was desirous rather to make an experiment of your mistress's friendship, than of the assistance of any other person<sup>26</sup>." She embarked on board a galley at Calais; and passing the English fleet, under cover of a thick fog, arrived safely at Leith, attended by the duke of Aumale, the Grand Prior, and the marquis of Elbeuf, three of her uncles of the house of Lorraine, together with the marquis of Damville, and other French courtiers<sup>27</sup>.

Aug. 19.

THE circumstances of Mary's departure from France are truly affecting. The excess of her grief seems to have proceeded from a fatal presage of that scene of misfortune on which she was about to enter. Not satisfied with mingling tears with her mournful attendants, and bidding them adieu with a sorrowful

<sup>26</sup> Calala, p. 374. Spotswood, p. 177.

<sup>27</sup> Robertson, book iii.

heart,

t, she kept her eyes fixed upon the French coast,  
 r she was at sea, and never turned them from  
 darling object, till darkness fell, and intercepted  
 om her view. Even then, she would neither re-  
 to the cabin, nor taste food, but commanding a  
 sh to be placed on the deck, she there waited, with  
 impatience, the return of day. Fortune soothed  
 on this occasion. The weather proving calm,  
 galley made but little way during the night, so  
 Mary, at morning, had once more an opportu-  
 of seeing the French coast. She sat up on her  
 sh, and still anxiously looking toward the land,  
 n repeated with a sigh, "Farewel, France! fare-  
 el, beloved country, which I shall never more be-  
 old!"

LETTER  
 LXV.  
 A.D. 1561.

'HE reception of the queen of Scots in her na-  
 kingdom, the civil wars of France, and the share  
 ch Elizabeth took in the affairs of both kingdoms,  
 t furnish the subject of another letter.

Brantome—He himself was in the same galley with the queen.

PART I.  
            
 A. D. 1567.

THE ringleader in all these insults on majesty was John Knox; who possessed an uncontrouled authority in the church, and even in the civil affairs of the nation, and who triumphed in the contumelious usage of his sovereign. His usual appellation for the queen was JEZABEL; and though she endeavoured by the most gracious condescension to win his favour, all her kind advances could gain nothing on his obdurate heart. The pulpits became mere stages for railing against the vices of the court; among which were always noted as the principal, feasting, finery, dancing, balls, and whoredom, their necessary attendants<sup>5</sup>.

CURBED in all amusements, by the absurd severity of these reformers, Mary, whose age, condition, and education, invited her to liberty and chearfulness, found reason every moment to look back with a sigh to that country which she had left. After the departure of the French courtiers, her life was one scene of bitterness and sorrow. And she perceived that her only expedient for maintaining tranquillity, while surrounded by a turbulent nobility, a bigotted people, and insolent ecclesiastics, was to preserve a friendly correspondence with Elizabeth; who, by former connections and services, had acquired much authority over all ranks of men in Scotland. She therefore sent Maitland of Lethington to London, in order to pay her compliments to the English queen, and express a desire of future good understanding between them. Maitland was also instructed, to signify Mary's willingness to renounce all present right to the crown of England, provided she was declared, by act of parliament, next heir to the succession, in case the queen should die without offspring<sup>6</sup>. But so great was the

<sup>5</sup> Knox, p. 332, 333.

<sup>6</sup> Keith. Camden. Haynes.

jealous

According to the advice of D'Oisel and her uncles, she bestowed her confidence entirely on the leaders of the Protestant party<sup>2</sup>, who were alone able, she found, to support her government. The prior of St. Andrews, her natural brother, whom she soon after created earl of Murray, obtained the chief authority; and under him, Maitland of Lethington, a man of great sagacity, had a principal share in her confidence. Her choice could not have fallen upon persons more agreeable to her people.

LETTER  
LXVI.

A. D. 1561.

BUT there was one circumstance which blasted all these promising appearances, and deprived Mary of that general favour which her amiable manners and prudent measures gave her just reason to expect. She was still a papist; and although she published, soon after her arrival, a proclamation enjoining every one to submit to the reformed religion, as established by parliament<sup>3</sup>, the more zealous Protestants could neither be reconciled to a person polluted by such an abomination, nor lay aside their jealousies of her future conduct. It was with much difficulty she obtained permission to celebrate Mass in her own chapel. "Shall that Idol again be suffered to be erected with-  
" in the realm?" was the common cry; and the usual prayers in the churches were, that God would turn the queen's heart, which was obstinate against his truth; or if his holy will were otherwise, that he would strengthen the hearts and hands of the elect, stoutly to oppose the rage of all tyrants<sup>4</sup>. Nay, lord Lindsey and the gentlemen of Fife exclaimed, "The  
" *Idolater* shall die the death!"

2. Id. *ibid.*

3. Keox. Spotiswood. Keith.

4. *Ibid.*

## PART I.

A. D. 1561.

He commenced a furious persecution against the Protestants in Spain, Italy, and the Low Countries. That violent spirit of bigotry and tyranny by which he was actuated, gave new edge even to the usual cruelty of priests and inquisitors. He threw into prison Constantine Ponce, who had been confessor to his father, Charles V. and in whose arms that great prince had breathed his last. This venerable ecclesiastic died in confinement; but Philip ordered, nevertheless, the sentence of heresy to be pronounced against his memory. He even deliberated whether he should not exercise like severity against the memory of his father, who was suspected, during his latter years, of indulging a propensity towards Lutheranism. In his unrelenting zeal for orthodoxy, he spared neither age, sex, nor condition. He appeared with an inflexible countenance at the most barbarous executions; and he issued rigorous orders for the prosecution of heretics, even in his American dominions<sup>2</sup>. The limits of the globe seemed only enlarged to extend human misery.

HAVING founded his deliberate tyranny on maxims of civil policy, as well as on principles of religion, Philip made it evident to all his subjects, that there was no means of escaping the severity of his vengeance, except by the most abject compliance or obstinate resistance. And by thus placing himself at the head of the Catholic party, the determined champion of the Romish church, he every where converted the zealots of the ancient faith into partizans of Spanish greatness.

HAPPILY the adherents of the new doctrines were not without a supporter, nor the Spanish greatness

2. Thuanus, lib. xxiii. Grotius, *Annal.* lib. ii. Mariana, lib. v.

## MODERN EUROPE.

485

it a counterpoise. The course of events had Elizabeth in a situation diametrically opposite of Philip. Fortune guiding choice, and con- g with policy and inclination, had raised her to glory, the bulwark, and the stay of the num- but generally persecuted Protestants throughout e. And she united her interests, in all foreign ations, with those who were struggling for their nd religious liberties, or guarding themselves : ruin and extermination. Hence the animosity :n her and Philip.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A. D. 1561.

ILE the queen of Scots continued in France, erted her claim to the southern British king- he dread of uniting England to the French mo- , engaged the king of Spain to maintain a good ondence with Elizabeth. But no sooner did the of Francis II. put an end to Philip's apprehen- n regard to Mary's succession, than his rancour openly to appear, and the interests of Spain and d were found opposite in every negotiation and transaction. Philip, contrary to the received is of policy in that age, saw an advantage porting the power of the French monarch; izabeth, by a concurrence of circumstances no gular, in protecting a faction ready to subvert

HERINE of Medicis, the queen-mother of , in consequence of her maxim of dividing in to govern, only increased the troubles of the By balancing the Catholics against the Prote- the duke of Guise against the prince of Condé, avoured to render herself necessary to both, lish her own dominion on their constrain-

PART I.  
A. D. 1562.

ed obedience. But an equal counterpoise of power, which among foreign nations, is the source of tranquillity, proves always the cause of quarrel among domestic factions; and if the animosities of religion concur with the frequent occasions of mutual injury, it is impossible to preserve, for any time, a firm concord in such a situation. Moved by zeal for the ancient faith, the constable Montmorency joined himself to the duke of Guise; the king of Navarre, from his inconstant temper, and his jealousy of the superior genius of his brother, embraced the same party; and the queen-mother, finding herself depressed by this combination, had recourse to Condé and the Hugonots, who gladly embraced the opportunity of fortifying themselves by her countenance and protection<sup>9</sup>.

AN edict had been published in the beginning of the year, granting to the Hugonots or Protestants, the free exercise of their religion, without the walls of towns; provided they taught nothing contrary to the council of Nice, to the Apostles Creed, or the books of the Old and New Testament. This edict had been preceded by a famous conference, held at Poissy, between the divines of the two religions; in which the cardinal of Lorraine, on the part of the Catholics, and the learned Theodore Beza, on that of the Protestants, displayed, beyond others, their eloquence and power of argument. The protestant divines boasted of having greatly the advantage in the dispute, and the concession of liberty of conscience, made their followers happy in that opinion. But the interested violence of the duke of Guise, or the intemperate zeal of his attendants, broke once more the tranquillity of

<sup>9</sup>. Davis, lib. ii.

religion, and gave a beginning to a frightful civil war. Passing by the little town of Vassy, on the frontiers of Champagne, where some Protestants having assembled in a barn under the sanction of the edict, were peaceably worshipping God in their own way, his retinue wantonly insulted them. A tumult ensued: the duke himself was struck, it is said, with a stone: and sixty of the unarmed multitude were sacrificed in revenge of that pretended or provoked injury, and in open violation of the public faith<sup>10</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVL

A. D. 1562.

THE Protestants over all the kingdom, were alarmed at this massacre, and assembled in arms under Condé, Coligny, and Andelot, their most distinguished leaders; while the duke of Guise and the constable Montmorency, having got possession of the king's person, obliged the queen-mother to join the Catholic party. Fourteen armies were levied and put in motion in different parts of France. Each province, each city, each family, was distracted with intestine rage and animosity. The father was divided against the son, brother against brother; and women themselves, sacrificing their humanity, as well as their timidity, to the religious fury, distinguished themselves by acts of valour and cruelty<sup>11</sup>. Wherever the Protestants prevailed, the images were broken, the altars pillaged, the churches demolished, the monasteries consumed with fire; and where success attended the Catholics, they burned the Bibles, re-baptised the infants, and forced married persons to pass anew through the ceremony<sup>12</sup>. Plunder, desolation, and blood-shed, attended equally the triumph of both parties: and, to use the words of a profound histo-

10. Henault, Mezeray. Dupleix. 11. Davila, lib. iii. Haynes, p. 391. 12. Id. Ibid.



PART I.  
A.D. 1562.

rian, it was during that period, when men began to be somewhat enlightened, and in this nation, renowned for polished manners, that the theological rage, which had long been boiling in men's veins, seems to have attained its last stage of virulence and acrimony<sup>13</sup>.

PHILIP II. jealous of the progress of the Hugonots, who had made themselves masters of Orleans, Bourges, Lyons, Poitiers, Tours, Angiers, Angoulême, Rouen, Dieppe, Havre de Grace, and other places of less note; and afraid that the contagion might spread into the Low Countries, had formed a secret alliance with the princes of Lorraine, for the protection of the ancient faith, and the suppression of heresy. In consequence of that alliance, he now sent six thousand men to reinforce the Catholic party; and the prince of Condé, finding himself unable to oppose so strong a confederacy countenanced by royal authority, was obliged to crave the assistance of the queen of England. As an inducement, he offered to put her in possession of Havre de Grace; on condition that, together with three thousand men for the garrison of the place, she should likewise send over other three thousand to defend Dieppe and Rouen, and furnish him with a supply of one hundred thousand crowns<sup>14</sup>.

ELIZABETH, besides the general and essential interest of supporting the Protestants, and opposing the rapid progress of her enemy the duke of Guise, had other motives to induce her to accept of this proposal. She was now sensible, that France never would voluntarily fulfil the article in the treaty of Chateau-Cambresis,

13. Hume, chap. xxxix.

14. Forbes, vol. ii.

which

which regarded the restitution of Calais; and wisely concluded that she get possession of Havre de Grace, which commands the mouth of the Seine, she should easily constrain the French to execute their engagements, and have the honour of restoring Calais to England. She therefore sent over immediately three thousand men, under the command of sir Edward Poynings, and three thousand more soon after, under the earl of Warwick, who took possession of Havre. But Rouen having been invested by the Catholics, under the command of the king of Navarre and the constable Montmorency, before the arrival of the English, it was with difficulty that Poynings could throw a small reinforcement into the place; and although the king of Navarre was mortally wounded during the siege, the Catholics still continued the attack with vigour. The town was at last carried by assault, and the garrison and inhabitants put to the sword <sup>15</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A. D. 1562.

It was now expected that the Catholics, flushed with success, would immediately form the siege of Havre, which was as yet in no state of defence; but the intestine disorders of the kingdom diverted their attention to another enterprize. Andelot, seconded by the negociations of Elizabeth, had levied a considerable army in Germany; and arriving at Orleans, the seat of the Protestant power in France, he enabled the prince of Condé and Coligny to take the field, and oppose the progress of their enemies. After threatening Paris for some time, they took their march toward Normandy, with a view of engaging the English to act in conjunction with them. The Catholics commanded by Montmorency, and under him by the duke of Guise, hung on the rear of the Hugonots,

<sup>15</sup>. Davila, lib. iii.

## PART I.

A. D. 1562.

and overtaking them near Dreux, obliged them to give battle. The field was fought with much obstinacy on both sides, and the action was distinguished by a very singular event. Condé and Montmorency, the commanders of the opposite armies, both remained prisoners in the hands of their enemies: and what is yet more singular, the prince not only supped at the same table, but lay all night in the same bed with his hostile rival the duke of Guise<sup>16</sup>! So unaccountable were the manners of that age, which could blend the most rancorous animosity with a familiar hospitality, that appears altogether disgusting in these days of superior refinement.

THE semblance of victory remained with the Catholics. But Coligny, whose lot it was ever to be defeated, and ever to rise more terrible after his misfortunes, collected the remains of the protestant army, and inspiring his own unconquerable courage into every breast, not only kept them in a body, but took some considerable places in Normandy; and Elizabeth, in order to enable him to support the cause of his party, sent over a new supply of an hundred thousand crowns. Meanwhile the duke of Guise, aiming a mortal blow at the power of the Hugonots, had commenced the siege of Orleans, of which Andelot was governor, and where Montmorency was detained prisoner; and he had the prospect of speedy success in his undertaking, when he was assassinated by a young gentleman, named Poltrot, whose fanatical zeal for the interests of the protestant religion instigated him to that atrocious violence<sup>17</sup>.

A. D. 1563.

THE death of this great man was an irreparable loss to the catholic party. His brother the cardinal of

16. *Id. Ibid.*17. *Mesmay, tom. v.*

orraln, though eloquent, subtle, and intriguing, intended that enterprising and undaunted spirit, which rendered the ambition of the duke so formidable; and therefore, though he still pursued the bold schemes of his family, the danger of their progress appeared not now so imminent either to Elizabeth or the French Protestants. Of course, the union between these allies, which had been cemented by their common fears, was in some measure loosened; and the leaders of the Hugonots were persuaded to listen to terms of a separate accommodation. Condé and Montmorency, usually tired of captivity, accordingly held conferences for that purpose, and soon came to an agreement with respect to the conditions. A toleration of their religion under certain restrictions, was again granted the Protestants; a general amnesty was published, and every one was reinstated in his offices, dignities, and all civil rights and privileges<sup>18</sup>.

THE leaders of the Protestants only comprehended Elizabeth so far in this treaty, as to obtain a promise, that, on her relinquishing Havre de Grace, her charges and the money which she had advanced them, should be repaid her by the king of France; and that Calais, at the expiration of the stipulated term, should be restored to her. Disdaining to accept these conditions, he sent Warwick orders to prepare himself against an attack from the now united power of the French monarchy. The garrison of Havre consisted of six thousand men, independent of seven hundred pioneers: and a resolute defence was expected. But a contagious distemper made its appearance among the English troops; and being increased by their fatigue and bad diet, made such ravages in a short time, that there did not remain fifteen hundred men in a condition to

PART I.  
A.D. 1563.

do duty. Warwick, who had frequently warned the English ministry of his danger, and loudly demanded a supply of men and provisions, was therefore obliged to capitulate, and content himself with the liberty of withdrawing his garrison <sup>19</sup>.

ELIZABETH, whose usual vigour and foresight had failed her in this transaction, now found it necessary to accede to a compromise; and as the queen-mother of France desired to obtain leisure, in order to concert measures for the extirpation of the Hugonots, she readily hearkened to any reasonable terms of accommodation with England. It was accordingly agreed, that the hostages which the French had given for the restitution of Calais, should be delivered up for two hundred and twenty thousand crowns; and that both parties should retain all their pretensions <sup>20</sup>.

PEACE still subsisted between England and Scotland; and a cordial friendship even seemed to have taken place between Elizabeth and Mary. They made professions of the most sincere affection: they wrote complimentary letters every week to each other; and had adopted, in all appearance, the sentiments as well as the style of sisters. But the negotiations for the marriage of the queen of Scots awakened anew the jealousy of Elizabeth, and roused the zeal of the Scottish reformers. Mary's hand was solicited by the archduke Charles, the emperor's third son; by Don Carlos, heir apparent to the Spanish monarchy; and by the duke of Anjou, her former husband's brother, who succeeded soon after to the crown of France. Either of those foreign alliances would have been

19. Forbes, vol. ii.

20. Davila, lib. iii.

alarming

alarming to Elizabeth, and to Mary's Protestant subjects. She therefore resolved, notwithstanding the arguments of her uncle, the cardinal of Lorrain, to sacrifice her ambition to domestic peace; and as Henry Stuart, lord Darnley, eldest son of the earl of Lennox, was the first British subject whom sound policy seemed to point out to her choice, she determined to make him the partner of her sway <sup>21</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.

A. D. 1564

DARNLEY was Mary's cousin-german by lady Margaret Douglas, niece to Henry VIII. and daughter of the earl of Angus, by Margaret queen of Scotland. He was, after herself, next heir to the English crown. He was also, by his father, a branch of her own family; and would, in espousing her, preserve the royal dignity in the house of Stuart. He had been born and educated in England, where his father had constantly resided, since banished by the prevailing power of the house of Hamilton; and as Elizabeth had often intimated to the queen of Scots, that nothing would so completely allay all jealousy between them, as Mary's espousing an English nobleman, <sup>22</sup> the prospect of the ready approbation of that rival queen was an additional motive for the proposed marriage.

BUT although Mary, as a queen, seemed to be solely influenced by political considerations in the choice of a royal consort, she had other motives, as a woman, for singling out Darnley as a husband. He was in the full bloom and vigour of youth, tall and well proportioned, and surpassed all the men of his time in every exterior grace. He eminently excelled in all the arts, which display a handsome person to

21. Forbes, vol. ii.

22. Keith.

PART I.  
A. D. 1564.

advantage, and which, in polished nations, are dignified with the name of elegant accomplishments. Mary was at an age, and of a complexion, to feel the force of such attractions. Lord Darnley accordingly made a conquest of her heart at their first interview. And it cannot be doubted but she made a deep impression upon his. Thus inclination conspired with policy to promote their union; nor was it once suspected, that any opposition would be made by the English queen.

SECRETLY Elizabeth was not displeased with Mary's choice; as it freed her at once from the dread of a foreign alliance; and from the necessity of parting with the earl of Leicester, her own handsome favourite, whom she had proposed as a husband to the queen of Scots. But besides a womanish jealousy and envy, proceeding from a consciousness of Mary's superior charms, which led her on all occasions to thwart the matrimonial views of that princess, certain ungenerous political motives, induced her to shew a disapprobation of the projected marriage with Darnley, though she either did not wish, or was sensible that she could not obstruct it. By declaring her dissatisfaction with Mary's conduct, Elizabeth hoped to alarm the party in Scotland that was attached to the English interest; and to raise, by their means, intestine commotions, which would not only secure her own kingdom from all disturbance on that side, but enable her to become the umpire between the Scottish queen and her contending subjects<sup>23</sup>.

THE scheme immediately succeeded in part, and afterward had its full effect. The earl of Murray,

<sup>23</sup>. Ibid.

and other Protestant noblemen, were the dupes of Elizabeth's intrigues. Under pretence of zeal for the reformed religion, because the family of Lennox was believed to adhere to the Catholic faith, but in reality to support their own sinking authority, they formed among themselves bonds of confederacy and mutual defence. They entered into a secret correspondence with the English resident, in order to secure Elizabeth's assistance, when it should become necessary; and despairing of being able to prevent the marriage of the queen of Scots by any other means, they concerted measures for seizing Darnley, and carrying him prisoner into England<sup>24</sup>. They failed, however, in the attempt; and Mary having obtained the general consent of the Scottish nation, and being anxious to bring to a period an affair which had long engaged her heart, and occupied her attention, celebrated her marriage with the captivating young nobleman who had been the object of their conspiracy.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A.D. 1564

A.D. 1565.  
July 19.

CONSCIOUS that all hopes of reconciliation were now at an end, the associated lords assembled their followers and flew to arms; but by the vigour and activity of Mary, who appeared herself at the head of her troops, rode with loaded pistols, and endured, with admirable fortitude, all the fatigues of war, the rebels were obliged to fly into England<sup>25</sup>. There they met with a reception very different from what they expected, and which strongly marks the character of Elizabeth. That politic princess had already effectually served her purpose, by exciting in Scotland, through their means, such discord and jealousies as would in all probability long distract and weaken Mary's government. It was now her business to save

24. Melvil.

25. Keith, *Append.*



## PART I.

A. D. 1565.

appearances; and as the malcontents had failed of success, she thought proper to disavow all connexions with them. She would not even grant an audience to the earl of Murray and the abbot of Kilwinning, appointed by the other fugitives to wait on her, till they had meanly consented to acknowledge, in the presence of the French and Spanish ambassadors, who accused her of fomenting the troubles in Scotland by her intrigues, that she had given them no encouragement to take up arms. "You have spoken the truth!"—replied she, as soon as they had made this declaration;—"I am far from setting an example of rebellion to my own subjects, by countenancing those who rebel against their lawful sovereign. The treason of which you have been guilty, is detestable; and as traitors, I banish you my presence<sup>26</sup>." So little feeling had she for men, who out of confidence in her promises, had hazarded their lives and fortunes to serve her!

THE Scottish exiles, finding themselves so harshly treated by Elizabeth, had recourse to the clemency of their own sovereign; and Mary, whose temper naturally inclined her to lenity, seemed determined to restore them to favour, when the arrival of an ambassador from France altered her resolution<sup>27</sup>. The peace granted to the reformers in that kingdom, was intended only to lull them asleep, and prepare the way for their final and absolute destruction. For this purpose, an interview had been appointed at Bayonne, between Charles IX. now in his sixteenth year, and his sister the queen of Spain. Catharine of Medicis ac-

26. Melvil.

27. Ibid.

accompanied

accompanied her son; the duke of Alva attended his mistress. Gaity, festivity, love, and joy, seemed to be the sole occupation of both courts; but under these smiling appearances was hatched a scheme the most bloody and the most destructive to the repose of mankind that had ever been suggested by superstition to the human heart. Nothing less was resolved upon and concerted than the extermination of the Hugonots in France, the Protestants in the Low Countries, and the extinction of the Reformed opinions throughout all Europe <sup>28</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A.D. 1566.

OF this Catholic or *Holy League* (for so that detestable conspiracy was called) an account was brought, by the French ambassador, to the queen of Scots; conjuring her at the same time, in the name of the king of France, and the cardinal of Lorrain, not to restore the leaders of the Protestants in her kingdom to power and favour, at the very time when the Popish princes on the continent were combined for the total extirpation of that sect <sup>29</sup>. Deeply tainted with all the prejudices of popery, and devoted with the most humble submission to her uncles, the princes of Lorrain, whose counsels from her infancy she had been accustomed to receive with filial respect, Mary instantly joined the confederacy:—and hence the change of her resolution in regard to the banished lords <sup>30</sup>.

THE effects of this new system were soon visible in the conduct of the queen of Scots. The parlia-

<sup>28</sup>. Thuan. lib. xxxvii. Davila, lib. iii.

<sup>29</sup>. Melvil.

<sup>30</sup>. Robertson, *Hist. Scot.* Append. No. XIII.

PART I.  
A.D. 1566.

ment was summoned for the attainder of the rebels, whose guilt was palpable, and some measures were concerted for re-establishing the Romish religion in Scotland<sup>31</sup>; so that the ruin of Murray and his party seemed now inevitable, and the destruction of the reformed church no distant event, when an unexpected incident saved both, and brought on, in the sequel, the ruin of Mary herself.

THE incident to which I allude, is the murder of David Rizio; a man whose birth and education afforded little reason to suppose that he should ever attract the historian's notice, but whose tragical death, and its consequences, make it necessary to record his adventures. The son of a teacher of music at Turin, and himself a musician, Rizio had accompanied the Piedmontese ambassador into Scotland, where he gained admittance into the queen's family by his skill in his profession; and as Mary found him necessary to complete her musical band, she retained him in her service, by permission, after the departure of his master. Shrewd, supple, and aspiring beyond his condition, he quickly crept into the queen's favour; and her French secretary happening to retire into his own country, she promoted Rizio to that office, which gave him frequent opportunity of approaching her person, and of insinuating himself still farther into her good graces. He now began to make a figure at court, and to appear as a man of weight and consequence: and he availed himself so well of the access which fortune had procured him, that he was soon regarded not only as the queen's chief confidant, but even as her minister. To him the whole train of

31. Keith, p. 316.

suitors and expectants applied; and among the rest Darnley, whose marriage Rizio promoted, in hopes of acquiring a new patron, while he co-operated with his mistress's wishes.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A. D. 1546.

BUT this marriage, so natural and so inviting in all its circumstances, disappointed the expectations both of the queen and her favourite, and terminated in events the most shocking to humanity. Allured by the stature, symmetry, and exterior accomplishments of Darnley, Mary in her choice had overlooked the qualities of his mind, which corresponded ill with those of his person. Violent, yet variable in his temper, she could neither by her gentleness bridle his insolent and imperious spirit, nor preserve him by her vigilance from rash and imprudent actions. Of mean understanding, but, like most fools, conceited of his own abilities, he was devoid of all gratitude, because he thought no favours equal to his merit; and being addicted to low pleasures, to drunkenness and debauchery, he was incapable of any true sentiments of love or tenderness<sup>32</sup>. All Mary's fondness and generosity made no lasting impression on such a heart. He became, by degrees, careless of her person, and a stranger to her company. To a woman and a queen such behaviour was intolerable; but more especially to Mary, who possessed great sensibility of temper, and who in the first effusions of her love, had taken a pride in exalting her husband beyond measure. She had granted him the title of King, and had joined his name with her own in all public acts. Her disappointed passion was therefore as violent, when roused into resentment, as her first affection had been strong; and his

32. Goodal, vol. i. Robertson, book iv.

**PART I.** behaviour appeared ungenerous and criminal,  
 A.D. 1566 portion to the distance she had stooped to raise  
 and the honour and consequence to which it  
 lifted him.

THE heart, sore from the wounds and the agony of unrequited love, naturally seeks the repose, isolation, and the lenient assuages of friendship. Rizio still possessed the confidence of Mary; and her brutal behaviour of her husband rendered a companion now more necessary, she seems not only to have sought the use of her secretary's company, and his musings, to soothe her disquieted bosom, but to have prudently shared with him her domestic griefs. To suppose that he also shared her embraces, is an injury to her character, for which history affords no proper foundation<sup>33</sup>. But the assuming vanity of the upstart, who affected to talk often and familiarly with the queen in public, and who boasted of intimacy in private; the dark and suspicious character of Darnley, who, instead of imputing Mary's conduct to his own misconduct, which had so justly deserved it, ascribed the change in her behaviour (so different from the first and happy days of their union) to the influence of a new passion, together with the austerity of the Scottish clergy, who could allow no freedoms, contributed to spread this opinion.

<sup>33</sup>. Buchanan, whose prejudices are well known, is the only historian who directly accuses Mary of a criminal love for Rizio; notwithstanding his violence and inveteracy, only slightly influenced by such a suspicion was entertained. But the silence of Raimond, English Resident, a man abundantly ready to mention and aggravate Mary's faults, and who does not once insinuate that her conduct in Rizio contained any thing criminal, is a sufficient vindication of her innocence against all such aspersions.

the people, ever ready to listen to any slander on the court; and the enemies of the favourite, no less ready to take advantage of any popular clamour, made it a pretence for their unjust and inhuman vengeance.

LETTER  
LXVI.

A. D. 1566.

RIZIO, who had connected his interests with the Roman Catholics, was the declared enemy of the banished lords; and by promoting the violent prosecution against them, he had exposed himself to the animosity of their numerous friends and adherents. Among these were the lords Ruthven and Lindsay, the earl of Morton, and Maitland of Lethington. While they were ruminating upon their grievances, and the means of redress, the king communicated his resolution to be avenged of Rizio to lord Ruthven, and implored his assistance and that of his friends toward the execution of his design. Nothing could be more acceptable to the whole party than such an overture. The murder of the favourite was instantly agreed upon, and as quickly carried into execution. Morton having secured the gates of the palace with an hundred and sixty armed men, the king, accompanied by the other conspirators, entered the queen's apartment, by a private passage, while she was at supper with her natural sister, the countess of Argyle, Rizio, and a few more of her courtiers. Mary, who was now in the sixth month of her pregnancy, alarmed at such an unusual visit, demanded the reason of this rude intrusion. They answered her by pointing to Rizio; who immediately apprehending that he was the devoted victim, retired behind the queen's chair, and seized her by the waist, hoping that the respect due to her royal person would prove some protection to him. But the conspirators had gone too far to be restrained by punctilios. George Douglas, one of their num-

PART I.

A.D. 1566.

ber, laying hold of Darnley's dagger, stuck it in the body of Rizio; who, screaming with fear and agony, was torn from Mary, and pushed into the antichamber, where he was dispatched with many wounds<sup>34</sup>.

"I WILL weep no more," said the queen, drying her tears, when informed of her favourite's fate;—"I shall now think of revenge." The insult on her person, the stain attempted to be fixed on her honour, and the danger to which her life was exposed, on account of the advanced state of her pregnancy, were injuries so atrocious and complicated, as scarcely indeed to admit of pardon, even from the greatest lenity. Mary's resentment, however, was implacable against her husband alone. She artfully engaged him, by her persuasions and caresses, to disown all connection with the conspirators, whom he had promised to protect; to deny any concurrence in their crime; nay, to publish a proclamation containing so notorious a falsehood<sup>35</sup>! And having thus made him expose himself to universal contempt, and rendered it impracticable for him to acquire the confidence of any party, she threw him off with disdain and indignation.

MEANWHILE the anger of the queen of Scots, absorbed by injuries more recent and violent, having subsided from former offenders, she had been reconciled to the banished lords. They were reinstated in their honours and fortunes. The accomplices in Rizio's murder, who had fled into England on being deserted by Darnley, also applied to her for pardon: and although she at first refused compliance, she after-

34. Melvil. Keith. Crawford.

35. Keith, *Append.* Goodal, vol. i.

ward, through the intercession of Bothwell, a new favourite, who was desirous of strengthening his party by the accession of their interest, permitted them to return into their own country <sup>36</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A. D. 1566.

THE hour of Mary's labour now approached ; and as it seemed imprudent to expose her person, at such a time, to the insults which she might suffer in a kingdom torn by factions, she left the palace, and made the castle of Edinburgh, the place of her residence. There she was safely delivered of a son ; and this being a very important event to England as well as to Scotland, she instantly dispatched sir James Melvil to London with the interesting intelligence. It struck Elizabeth forcibly and by surprise. She had given a ball to her court at Greenwich on the evening of Melvil's arrival, and was displaying all that spirit and gaiety which usually attended her on such occasions ; but no sooner was she informed of the prince of Scotland's birth, than all her vivacity left her. Sensible of the superiority her rival had now acquired, she sunk into deep melancholy : she reclined her head upon her hand, the tears trickling down her cheek, and complained to some of her attendants, that the queen of Scots was mother of a fair son, while she herself was but a barren stock <sup>37</sup>. Next morning, however, at the audience of the ambassador, she resumed her wonted cheerfulness and dissimulation ; thanked Melvil for his haste in bringing her such agreeable news, and expressed the most cordial friendship for her sister Mary <sup>38</sup>.

June 19.

THE birth of a son, as Elizabeth foresaw, gave additional zeal, as well as weight to the partizans of the

36. Melvil. Keith. Knox.

37. Melvil.

38. Ibid.



PART I.  
 A.D. 1566.

queen of Scots in England ; and even men of the most opposite parties began to call aloud for some settlement of the crown. The English queen had now reigned eight years, without discovering the least intention to marry. A violent illness, with which she was seized, had lately endangered her life, and alarmed the nation with a prospect of all the calamities that are occasioned by a disputed and dubious succession. In order to provide against those evils, a motion was made, and eagerly listened to in both houses of parliament, for addressing the queen on the subject. Her love for her people, her duty to the public, her concern for posterity, it was urged, equally called upon her, either to declare her own *resolution to marry*, or consent to an act *establishing the order of succession to the crown* <sup>39</sup>.

ELIZABETH's ambitious and masculine character, and the positive affirmation, which she had often and early made, as already observed, that she meant to live and die a VIRGIN-QUEEN, rendered it improbable, notwithstanding the insinuations of her ministers, that she would take the first of these steps ; and as no title to the crown could, with any colour of justice, be set in opposition to that of the queen of Scots, most of the English nobility seemed convinced of the necessity of declaring her the presumptive successor. The union of the two kingdoms was a desirable object to all discerning men ; and the birth of the prince of Scotland gave hopes of its perpetuity. Even the more moderate Protestants, soothed by Mary's lenity to her own subjects, concurred with the Catholics in supporting her claim <sup>40</sup>. Nor would all the policy and address of Elizabeth have been able to prevent the settlement of the crown on her rival, had not Mary's in-

39. D'Ewes, *Journ. of Parliament*.

40. Melvil.

discretions,

discretions, if not her crimes, thrown her from the summit of prosperity, and plunged her in infamy and ruin.


LETTER  
LXIV.

A. D. 1566.

JAMES HEPBURN, earl of Bothwell, the head of an ancient family in Scotland, but a man of profligate manners, and by no means eminent for talents either civil or military, had distinguished himself by his attachment to the queen; and since the death of Rizio, from the custody of whose murderers he had been the chief instrument of releasing her, Mary's gratitude, and perhaps a warmer sentiment, had loaded him with particular marks of her favour and confidence. She had raised him to offices of power and of trust, and transacted no matter of importance without his advice. Bothwell gained on her affection (for such it certainly soon became) in proportion as her regard for her husband declined; and her contempt for the latter appears to have been completed, though not occasioned, by her love for the former. The attention and complaisance of a man, who had vindicated her authority, and protected her person; who entered into all her views, and watched every opportunity of recommending his passion, could scarce indeed fail of making an impression on a heart naturally too susceptible; or of rousing to the greatest height the indignation of a woman and a queen, against an unworthy object, on whom she had placed her love, and who had requited it with neglect, with insult, and with brutality<sup>41</sup>.

MARY was not only suspected of a criminal commerce with Bothwell, but so indiscreet had her fami-

41. Anderson, vol. i. p. 93, 94. Robertson, book iv.

**PART I.**  liarity been, and so strongly marked her hatred against her husband, that when Henry, unable to bear that insignificance into which he was fallen, left the court **A. D. 1567.** and retired to Glasgow, a distemper of an extraordinary nature, with which he was seized soon after his arrival, was universally ascribed by her enemies to a dose of poison, which it was pretended she had procured to be administered to him. The king himself, however, seems to have had no such suspicion; for the queen having paid him a visit during his sickness, and discovered great anxiety for his recovery, he accompanied her to Edinburgh, as soon as he could be moved, in order that she herself might be able to attend him without being absent from her son<sup>42</sup>. He was lodged for the benefit of retirement and air, as was pretended, in a solitary house called the Kirk of Field, situated on a rising ground, at some distance from the palace of Holyrood House. There he was assiduously attended by Mary, who slept several nights in the chamber under his apartment. But on the ninth of February, about eleven o'clock at night, she left the Kirk of Field, in order to be present at a masque in the palace; and about two o'clock next morning, the house in which the king lay was blown up with gunpowder, and his dead body was found in a neighbouring enclosure<sup>43</sup>.

THE earl of Bothwell was generally considered as the author of this horrid murder<sup>44</sup>: some suspicions were entertained that the queen herself was no stranger to the crime; and the subsequent conduct of both, independent of every other circumstance, affords a

<sup>42</sup>. Goodal, vol. ii. Dr. Robertson supposes this confidence to have been inspired by the insidious blandishments of Mary. *Hist. Scot.* book iv.

<sup>43</sup>. Craufurd. Spotswood. Keith.

<sup>44</sup>. Melvil's *Memo.* p. 155. Anderson, vol. i.

strong presumption of their mutual guilt. Mary not only industriously avoided bringing Bothwell to a *fair* and *legal* trial<sup>45</sup>, notwithstanding the earnest entreaties of the earl of Lennox, the king's father, and the general voice of the nation, but allowed the man, publicly accused of the murder of her husband, to enjoy all the dignity and power, as well as all the confidence and familiarity of a favourite<sup>46</sup>! She committed to him the government of the castle of Edinburgh<sup>47</sup>; which with the offices he already possessed, gave him the entire command of the South of Scotland. She was carried off by him, in returning from a visit to her son, and seemingly with her own consent<sup>48</sup>; she lived with him for some time in a state of supposed violation; and as soon as he could procure a sentence of divorce, separating him from a young lady of virtue and merit, to whom he was lawfully married, she shamefully gave her hand to this reputed ravisher and regicide!

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A.D. 1567.

May 15.

45. A kind of mock trial was held, but hurried on with indecent precipitancy, and preceded by so many indications of violence, that Lennox was afraid to appear in support of his charge. After in vain craving delay, he therefore protested against the *legality* of any sentence that might be given. As no accuser appeared, the jury was under the necessity of acquitting Bothwell; but this judgment, pronounced without the examination of a single witness, was considered as an argument of his guilt rather than a proof of his innocence. Besides other suspicious circumstances, he was accompanied to the place of trial by a large body of armed men. Anderson, vol. i. Keith, p. 375, 376.

46. Even when lying under the accusation of the king's murder, Bothwell lived for some time in the same house with Mary, and took his seat in the council as usual, instead of being confined to close prison. Anderson, vol. i. ii.

47. Spotswood, p. 201.

48. Melvil's *Memoirs*, p. 158. Melvil, who was himself one of Mary's attendants, tells us not only that he saw no signs of reluctance, but that he was informed the whole transaction was managed in concert with her.

THE

## PART I.

A. D. 1567.

THE particular steps, by which these events were brought about, are of little moment: it is of more importance to mark their consequences. Such a quick succession of incidents, so singular, and so detestable, filled all Europe with amazement, and threw infamy not only on the principal actors in the guilty scene, but also on the whole nation. The Scots were universally reproached as men void of courage, or of humanity; as equally regardless of the reputation of their queen, and the honour of their country, in suffering so many atrocious actions to pass with impunity<sup>49</sup>.

THESE reproaches, so justly merited, together with some attempts made by Bothwell to get the young prince into his power, roused the Scottish nobles from their lethargy. A considerable body of them assembled at Stirling, and entered into an association for the defence of the prince's person, and for punishing the king's murderers<sup>50</sup>. The queen and Bothwell were thrown into the utmost consternation by the news of this league. They were no strangers to the sentiments of the nation with respect to their conduct: they foresaw the storm that was ready to burst on their heads; and, in order to provide against it, Mary issued a proclamation, requiring her subjects to take arms and attend her husband by a day appointed. She published, at the same time, a sort of manifesto, in which she endeavoured to vindicate her government from those imputations with which it had been loaded, and employed the strongest terms to express her concern for the safety and welfare of the prince her son. But neither of these measures produced any

49. Anderson, vol. i. Melvil, p. 163. Robertson, Append. No. XX.  
50. Keith, p. 394.

considerable

considerable effect. The associated lords had assembled an army, before the queen and Bothwell were in any condition to face them. Mary and her husband fled to Dunbar; and as Bothwell had many dependants in that quarter, he gathered in a short time, such strength as emboldened him to leave the town and castle, and advance toward the confederates.

LETTER  
LXXI  
A.D. 1567.

THE two armies met at Carberry-hill, about six miles from Edinburgh; and Mary was soon made sensible, that her own troops, nearly equal in number to those of the confederates, disapproved of her cause, and were averse to spill their blood in her quarrel<sup>51</sup>. They discovered no inclination to fight. She endeavoured to animate them: she wept, she threatened, she reproached them with cowardice; but all in vain. After some bravadoes of Bothwell, to vindicate his innocence, by single combat; but which he declined when an adversary offered to enter the lists, Mary saw no resource but that of holding a conference with Kirkaldy of Grange, one of the chief of the confederates, and of putting herself, on some general promises, into their hands<sup>52</sup>.

BOTHWELL, during this parley, took his last farewell of the queen, and fled unattended to Dunbar; where, finding it impossible to collect fresh forces, he fitted out a few small vessels, set sail for the Orkneys, and there subsisted some time by piracy. But being pursued even to that extreme corner by Kirkaldy, the greater part of his little fleet was taken, together with several of his servants, who afterwards discovered all

51. Spotswood, p. 207. Keith, p. 401, 402.

52. Calderwood, vol. II. Melvil, p. 165.

## PART I.

A. D. 1567.

the circumstances of the king's murder, and suffered for their share in the crime<sup>53</sup>. Bothwell himself made his escape to Norway with a single ship. On that coast he attempted to renew his piracies; was there taken, thrown into prison, lost his senses, and died miserably, ten years after, in the bottom of a dungeon, unpitied by his countrymen, and neglected by strangers<sup>54</sup>.

MEANWHILE the queen of Scots, now in the hands of an enraged faction, met with such treatment as a sovereign may naturally expect from subjects, who have their future security to provide for, as well as their present animosity to gratify. She was conducted to Edinburgh, amid the insults of the populace; who reproached her with her crimes, and held up before her eyes, which way soever she turned, a standard, on which was painted the dead body of her late husband, and her infant son kneeling before it, and uttering these words: "Judge and revenge my cause, O Lord!"—Mary shrunk with horror from such a shocking object; but notwithstanding all her argument and entreaties, the same standard was held to view, and the same insults and reproaches repeated<sup>55</sup>. Under pretence that her behaviour was unsuitable to her condition, and fearing the return of Bothwell, to whom she still declared her attachment, the confederates sent her next day to the castle of Lochleven, seated on a small island, in the middle of the lake of the same name; and signed a warrant to William Douglas, the owner of it, to detain her there prisoner<sup>56</sup>.

53. Anderson, vol. ii.

54. Melvil's *Memoirs*, p. 168.55. Crawford's *Memoirs*, p. 33. Keith, p. 402. Robertson, book iv.

56. Keith, p. 403.

No sooner did the news of these events reach England, than Elizabeth, apparently lying aside all her jealousies and fears, seemed resolved to employ her authority for alleviating the calamities of her unhappy kinswoman. She instantly dispatched sir Nicholas Throgmorton into Scotland, with power to negotiate both with the queen and her confederates. In his instructions there appears a remarkable solicitude for Mary's liberty, and even for her reputation<sup>57</sup>. But neither Elizabeth's interposition, nor Throgmorton's zeal and abilities, were of much benefit to the Scottish queen. The confederates foresaw that Mary, elated by the prospect of protection, would reject with disdain the overtures which they intended to make her; they therefore preremptorily denied the ambassador access to their prisoner, and either refused or eluded what proposals he made them in her behalf<sup>58</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.

A.D. 1567.

THE queen of Scots, in the meantime, endured all the rigour and horrors of a prison. No prospect of liberty appeared: none of her subjects had either taken arms, or so much as solicited her relief; nor was any person in whom she could confide admitted into her presence. She was cut off from all the world. In this melancholy situation, without a counsellor, without a friend, under the pressure of misfortune, and the apprehension of danger, it was natural for a woman to listen to almost any overtures. The confederates took advantage of Mary's distress and of her fears. They employed lord Lindsay, the fiercest zealot of the party, to make her acquainted with their purpose; and they threatened to prosecute

57. Keith, p. 411.

58. Ibid. p. 417.

her,



**PART I.**  
**A. D. 1567.**

**July 24.**

her, as the principal conspirator against the life of her husband and the safety of her son, if she refused to comply with their demands. Mary, overpowered by her unhappy condition, and believing that no deed which she should execute during her captivity, could be valid, signed a resignation of the crown; in consequence of which the earl of Murray was appointed regent under the young prince, who was proclaimed king, by the name of James VI.<sup>59.</sup>

HERE, my dear Philip, I must make a pause, for the sake of perspicuity. The subsequent part of this interesting story, the continuation of the civil wars in France, and the rise of those in the Low Countries, will furnish materials for the next Letter.

59. Anderson. Melvil. Keith. Crawford.

LETTER

## LETTER LXVII.

GREAT BRITAIN *from the Flight of the Queen of Scots into ENGLAND with an Account of the Civil Wars on the CONTINENT, till the Death of CHARLES IX. of FRANCE, in 1574.*

**T**HE condescension of the queen of Scots in resigning the crown to her son, and the administration of government to her rebellious subjects, did not procure her enlargement. She was still confined in the castle of Lochleven. A parliament, summoned by the earl Murray, even declared her resignation valid, and her imprisonment lawful, while it recognized his election to the office of regent<sup>1</sup>; and being a man of vigour and abilities, he employed himself successfully in reducing the kingdom to obedience.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1567.

BUT although most men seemed to acquiesce in Murray's authority, there still abounded in Scotland many secret murmurs and cabals. The duke of Chatelherault, who, as first prince of the blood, thought he had an undoubted right to the regency, bore no goodwill to the new government: and the same sentiments were embraced by his numerous friends and adherents. All who leaned to the ancient opinions in religion, were inclined to join this party; and the length and rigour of Mary's sufferings began to move many, who had formerly detested her crimes, or blamed her imprudence, to commiserate her present condition<sup>2</sup>. Animated by these different motives, a body of the nobility met at Hamilton, and concerted measures for supporting the cause of the queen.

A. D. 1568.

1. Anderson, vol. ii.

2. Buchanan, lib. xviii.

## PART I.

A.D. 1568.

May 2.

WHILE the Scottish nation seemed thus returning to sentiments of duty and loyalty to their sovereign. Mary recovered her liberty, in a manner no less surprising to her friends than unexpected by her enemies. She engaged, by her charms and caresses, George Douglas, her keeper's brother, to assist her in attempting her escape. He conveyed her in disguise into a small boat, and himself rowed her ashore. She hastened to Hamilton; and the news of her arrival at that place being immediately spread abroad, her court was filled in a few days, with a great and splendid train of nobility, accompanied by such numbers of their retainers, as composed an army of six thousand combatants. Her resignation of the crown, which she declared to have been extorted by fear, was pronounced illegal and void, by a council of the nobles and chief men of her party; and an association was formed, at the same time, for the defence of her person and authority, and subscribed by nine earls, nine bishops, eighteen lords, and many gentlemen of distinction.

ELIZABETH, when informed of the escape of the queen of Scots, discovered a resolution of persevering in the same generous and friendly measures, which she had hitherto pursued, since the confinement of that princess. She is supposed to have been chiefly withheld from employing force against the regent, by the fear of pushing him to still greater extremities against his sovereign; and she now dispatched Maitland of Lethington into Scotland, to offer her good offices, and the assistance of her arms to Mary \*. But the Regent made such haste to assemble forces, that the fate of Scotland was decided before any English succours could arrive. Confiding in the valour of his troops,

g. Keith, p. 475.

4. Buchanan, lib. xix. Keith, p. 477.

Murray took the field with an army far inferior to Mary's in number; and a battle was fought at Langside, near Glasgow, which proved decisive in his favour, and was followed by the total dispersion of the queen's party.

LETTER  
LXVII

A.D. 1568.

MARY, who within the space of thirteen days, had been a prisoner at the mercy of her rebellious subjects, had seen a powerful army under her command and a numerous train of nobles at her devotion, was now obliged to flee, in the utmost danger of her life, and lurk with a few attendants, in a corner of her kingdom. She had beheld the engagement from a neighbouring hill; and so lively were her impressions of fear when she saw that army broken, on which her last hope rested, that she never closed her eyes till she reached the abbey of Dundrenan, in Galloway, above sixty miles from the field of battle'. Not thinking herself safe, even in that obscure retreat, and still haunted by the horrors of a prison, she embraced the rash resolution of retiring into England, and of throwing herself on the generosity of her kinswoman.

ELIZABETH was now under the necessity of coming to some decisive determination, with respect to her treatment of the queen of Scots; and the pleasure of mortifying, while in her power, a rival whose beauty and accomplishments she envied, together with the cautious and interested counsels of Cecil her prime minister, determined her to disregard all the motives of friendship and generous sympathy, and to regulate her conduct solely by the cruel maxims of an insidious policy. In answer therefore to Mary's message, notifying her arrival in England, craving leave to visit

5. Keith, p. 48a.

## PART I.

A.D. 1568.

the queen, and claiming her protection, in consequence of former promises and professions of regard, Elizabeth artfully replied, That while the queen of Scots lay under the imputation of a crime so horrid as the murder of her husband, she could not, without bringing a stain on her own reputation, admit her into her presence; but as soon as she had cleared herself from that aspersions, she might depend on a reception suitable to her dignity, and support proportioned to her necessities<sup>6</sup>.

MARY was overwhelmed with sorrow and surprize at so unexpected a manner of evading her request: nor was her bosom a stranger to the feelings of indignation; but the distress of her condition obliged her to declare, that she would willingly justify herself to her sister from all imputations, and cheerfully submit her cause to the arbitration of so good a friend<sup>7</sup>. This was the very point to which Elizabeth wished to bring the matter, and the great object of her intrigues. She now considered herself as umpire between the queen of Scots and her subjects, and began to act in that capacity. She proposed to appoint commissioners to hear the pleadings on both sides, and wrote to the Regent of Scotland, to appoint proper persons to appear before them in his name, and to produce what he could alledge in vindication of his proceedings against his sovereign.

MARY, who had hitherto relied with some degree of confidence on Elizabeth's professions, and who, when she consented to submit her cause to that princess, expected that the queen herself would receive and examine her defences, now plainly perceived the

6. Anderson, vol. iv.

7. Id. ibid.

artifice of her rival, and the snare that had been laid for her<sup>s</sup>. She therefore retracted the offer she had made, and which had been preverted to a purpose so contrary to her intention; she meant to consider Elizabeth as an equal, for whose satisfaction she was willing to explain any part of her conduct, that seemed liable to censure, not to acknowledge her as a superior. But her own words will best express her sentiments on this subject. “In my present situation,” says she, in a letter to the English queen, “I neither will nor can reply to the accusations of my subjects. But I am ready of my own accord, and out of friendship to you, to satisfy your scruples, and to vindicate my own conduct. My subjects are not my equals: nor will I, by submitting my cause to a judicial trial, acknowledge them to be so. I fled into your arms, as into those of my nearest relation, and most perfect friend. I did you honour, as I imagined, in chusing you preferably to any other prince, be the restorer of an injured queen. Was it ever known that a prince was blamed for hearing in person the complaints of those who applied to his justice, against the false accusations of their enemies? You admitted into your presence my bastard brother, who had been guilty of rebellion; and you deny me that honour! God forbid that I should be the cause of bringing any stain on your reputation! I expected that your manner of treating me would have added lustre to it. Suffer me either to implore the aid of other princes, whose delicacy on this head will be less, and the resentment of my wrongs greater; or let me receive from your hands that assistance, which it becomes you more than any

s. Anderfon, ubi sup.

**PART I.** "ther prince to grant; and by that benefit bind me  
 A.D. 1568. "to yourself in the indissoluble ties of gratitude."

THIS letter, which somewhat disconcerted her plan, the English queen laid before her privy council; and it was there agreed, that Elizabeth could not, consistently with her own honour, or with the safety of her government, either give the queen of Scots the assistance which she demanded, or permit her to retire out of the kingdom, before the inquiry into her conduct was finished. It was also agreed to remove Mary, for the sake of greater safety, from Carlisle, where she had taken refuge, to Bolton, a castle belonging to Lord Seroop, on the borders of Yorkshire<sup>9</sup>.

THE resolution of the English privy council, in regard to Mary's person, was immediately carried into execution; and she now found herself entirely in her rival's power. Her correspondence with her friends in Scotland was become more difficult; all prospect of escape was cut off; and although she was still treated with the respect due to a queen, her real condition was that of a prisoner. She knew what it was to be deprived of liberty, and dreaded confinement as the worst of evils.

ELIZABETH laid hold of this season of terror, of impatience, and despair, to extort Mary's consent to the projected trial. She was confident, she said, that the queen of Scots would find no difficulty in refuting all the calumnies of her enemies; and though her apology should even fall short of conviction, she was determined to support her cause. It was never meant, she added, that Mary should be cited to a trial on the

9. Anderson, vol. iv.

10. Ibid.

accusation of her rebellious subjects; but on the contrary, that they would be summoned to appear and to justify themselves for their conduct toward her<sup>11</sup>. Commissioners were accordingly appointed by the English ministry for the examination of this great cause; and conferences were held between them and the Scottish commissioners, part in the name of the queen, and part in behalf of the king and kingdom, first at York, and afterward at Westminster.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1568.

DURING the conferences at York, Mary's commissioners seemed to triumph, as the Regent had hitherto declined accusing her of any participation in the guilt of her husband's murder, which alone could justify the violent proceedings of her subjects. But the face of the question was soon changed, on the renewal of the conferences at Westminster immediately under the eye of the English queen. Murray, encouraged by the assurances of Elizabeth's protection, laid aside his delicacy and his fears, and not only charged his sovereign with consenting to the murder of her husband, but with being accessory to the contrivance and execution of it. The same accusation was offered by the earl of Lennox; who appearing before the English commissioner, craved vengeance for the blood of his son<sup>12</sup>.

BUT accusations were not enough for Elizabeth; she wanted to have proofs: and in order to draw them with decency from the Regent, she commanded her commissioners to testify her indignation and displeasure at his presumption, in forgetting so far the duty of a subject, as to accuse his sovereign of such atrocious crimes. Murray, thus arraigned in his turn,

11, *Ibid*,

12, Goodall, vol. ii. Anderson, vol. iv.



## PART I.

A.D. 1568.

offered to shew that his accusations were neither false nor malicious. He produced, among other evidences, in support of his charge, some Sonnets and Love-letters, from Mary to Bothwell, written partly before, partly after the murder of her husband, and containing incontestable proofs of her consent to that barbarous deed, of her criminal amours, and her concurrence in the pretended rape ". Stunned by this latent blow, against which it appears they were not provid-

11. Some bold attempts have lately been made to prove these Letters and Sonnets to be forgeries; but, unfortunately for Mary's reputation, the principal arguments, in support of their authenticity, yet remain unanswered. 1. They were examined and compared with her acknowledged hand-writing, in many letters to Elizabeth, not only by the English commissioners, and by the Scottish council and parliament, but by the English privy council, assisted by several noblemen well affected to the cause of the queen of Scots, who all admitted them to be authentic. (Anderson, vol. iv.) This circumstance is of great weight in the dispute; for although it is not very difficult to counterfeit a subscription, it is almost impossible to counterfeit any number of pages, so perfectly as to elude detection. 2. Mary and her commissioners, by declining to refute the charge of the Regent, though requested to attempt a refutation in any manner or form, and told by Elizabeth, that silence would be considered as the fullest confession of guilt, seemed to admit the justice of the accusation. (Id. Ibid.) 3. The duke of Norfolk, who had been favoured with every opportunity of examining the Letters in question, and who gave the strongest marks of his attachment to the queen of Scots, yet believed them to be authentic. (*State Trials*, vol. i.) 4. In the conferences between the duke, Maitland of Lethington, and bishop Lesley, all zealous partizans of Mary, the authenticity of the Letters and her participation in the murder of her husband, are always taken for granted. (Id. Ibid.) 5. But, independent of all other evidence, the Letters themselves contain many internal proofs of their authenticity; many minute and unnecessary particulars, which could have occurred to no person employed to forge them, and which, as the English commissioners ingeniously observed, "were unknown to any other than to herself and Bothwell." 6. Their very indelicacy is a proof of their authenticity: for although Mary, in an amorous moment, might slide into a gross expression, in writing to a man to whom she had sacrificed her honour, the framer of no forgery could hope to gain it credibility, by imputing such expressions to so polite and accomplished a princess as the queen of Scots.

ed with any proper defence, Mary's commissioners endeavoured to change the enquiry into a negotiation; and finding that attempt impracticable, as the English commissioners insisted on proceeding, they finally broke off the conferences, without making any reply.

LETTER  
LXVII.  
A. D. 1568.

ELIZABETH having got into her possession these evidences of her rival's guilt, began to treat her with less delicacy. Orders were given for removing Mary from Bolton, a place surrounded with Catholics, to Tutbury, in the county of Suffolk. And as Elizabeth entertained hopes that the queen of Scots, depressed by her misfortunes, and scarce recovered from the shock of the late attack on her reputation, would now be glad to secure a safe retreat at the expence of her grandeur, she promised to bury every thing in oblivion, provided Mary would agree, either to confirm her resignation of the crown, or to associate her son with her in the government, and let the administration remain with the earl of Murray during the minority of James. But that high-spirited princess refused all treaty on such terms. "Death," said she, "is less dreadful than such an ignominious step. Rather than give away with my own hands, the crown which descended to me from my ancestors, I will part with life: but the last words which I utter shall be those of a queen of Scotland!"

AFTER an end had been put to the conferences, the Regent returned into Scotland, and Mary was confined more closely than ever. In vain did she still demand, that Elizabeth should either assist her in recovering her authority, or permit her to retire into

14. Haynes, p. 497. Goodall, vol. ii.

France,

## PART I.

A. D. 1568.

France, and make trial of the friendship of other princes. Aware of the danger attending both these proposals, Elizabeth resolved to comply with neither, but to detain her rival still a prisoner; — and the proofs produced of Mary's guilt, she hoped would apologize for this severity. The queen of Scots, however, before the Regent's departure, had artfully recriminated upon him and his party, by accusing them of having devised and executed the murder of the king. And although this accusation, which was not given in till after the dissolution of the conferences, was generally considered as a mere expression of resentment<sup>15</sup>, Mary had behaved with so much modesty, propriety, and even dignity, during her confinement, that her friends were enabled, on plausible grounds, to deny the reality of the crimes imputed to her; and a scheme was formed in both kingdoms, for restoring her to liberty, and replacing her on her throne.

THE fatal marriage of the queen of Scots with Bothwell, was the grand source of all her misfortunes. A divorce only could repair, in any degree, the injuries her reputation had suffered by that step; and a new choice seemed the most effectual means of recovering her authority. Her friends therefore looked out for a husband, whose influence would be sufficient to accomplish this desirable end. A foreign alliance was, for many reasons, to be avoided; and as the duke of Norfolk was, without comparison, the

<sup>15</sup>. Hume, vol. v. If Mary's commissioners could have produced any proofs of the earl of Murray's guilt, they would surely, as able advocates and zealous partizans, have prevented the accusation of her enemies; or they would have confronted accusation with accusation, instead of breaking off the conferences at the very moment the charge was brought against their mistress, and when all their eloquence was become necessary for the vindication of her honour.

ft subject in England, and enjoyed the rare felicity being popular with the most opposite factions, his marriage with the queen of Scots appeared so natural, at it had occurred to several of his own friends, as well as to those of Mary. Maitland of Lethington opened the scheme to him. He set before that nobleman the glory of composing the dissensions in Scotland; and, at the same time, held to his view the prospect of reaping the succession of England. The duke readily closed with a proposal so flattering to his ambition; nor was Mary herself averse against a measure which promised so desirable a change in her condition <sup>16</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVII.  
A. D. 1568.

BUT this scheme, like all those formed for the relief of the queen of Scots, had an unfortunate issue. Though the duke of Norfolk, who possessed in an eminent degree the good graces of his sovereign, as well as the favour of the whole nation, had declared that Elizabeth's consent should be obtained before the conclusion of his marriage, he attempted previously to gain the approbation of the most considerable English nobility, as he had reason to apprehend a violent opposition from her perpetual and unrelenting jealousy of her rival; and as the nation now began to despair of the queen's marrying, and Mary's right to the succession was generally held to be undoubted, her alliance with an Englishman, and a zealous Protestant, seemed so effectually to provide against all those evils, which might be apprehended from her choice of a foreign and a popish prince, that the greater part of the peers, either directly or tacitly, approved it as a salutary project. Even the earl of Leicester, Elizabeth's avowed favourite, seemed to enter

A. D. 1569.

<sup>16</sup> Camden. Haynes.

zealously

**PART I.** zealously into Norfolk's interests, and wrote, in  
**A. D. 1569.** his own hand, a letter to Mary, subscribed by several other noblemen, warmly recommending match <sup>17</sup>.

So extensive a confederacy could not escape the vigilance of Elizabeth, or of Cecil, her prime minister, a man of the deepest penetration, and sincerely attached to her person and government. Norfolk, however, flattered himself, that the union of so many noblemen would make it necessary for the queen to comply; and in a matter of so much consequence to the nation, the taking a few steps without her knowledge could scarce, he thought, be reckoned criminal. But Elizabeth thought otherwise. Any measure which appeared criminal, that tended so visibly to diminish the reputation and increase the power of her rival, she also saw, that, how perfect soever Norfolk's allegiance might be, and that of the greater part of the noblemen who espoused his cause, they who conducted the intrigue, had farther and more dangerous views than the relief of the queen of Scots: and dropt several hints to the duke, that she was acquainted with his designs, warning him frequently to "beware on what pillow he reposed his head!" Constant intelligence of this dangerous combination was length given her by Leicester, who had perhaps countenanced the project with no other intention than to defeat it. The Scottish Regent, threatened with Elizabeth's displeasure, also meanly betrayed the duke; put his letters into her hands, and furnished all the information in his power. Norfolk was committed to the Tower; several other noblemen were

17. Lefley. Haynes.

18. Camden. Spotiswood.

taken into custody ; and the queen of Scots was removed to Coventry, where her imprisonment was rendered more intolerable, by an excess of vigilance and rigour <sup>19</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1569.

THIS intrigue was no sooner discovered than an attempt was made for restoring the Scottish queen to liberty by force of arms. The earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, two of the most ancient and powerful of the English peers, were both attached to the Romish religion, and discontented with the court, where new men and new measures prevailed. Ever since Mary's arrival in England, they had warmly espoused her interest, and had even engaged in several plots for her relief. They were privy to Norfolk's scheme ; but the moderation and coolness of that nobleman did not suit their ardour and impetuosity. The liberty of the Scottish queen was not their sole object : they aimed at bringing about a change in the religion, and a revolution in the government of the kingdom. For these purposes they had solicited the aid of the king of Spain, the avowed patron of popery, and the natural enemy of Elizabeth. Glad of an opportunity of disturbing the tranquillity of England, Philip ordered the duke of Alva, governor of the Low Countries, to encourage the two earls in their projected rebellion, by a promise of money and troops <sup>20</sup>. But Elizabeth fortunately got intelligence of their design, before they were ready to take the field ; and though they immediately assembled their retainers, and flew to arms, the queen acted with so much prudence and vigour, that they were obliged to disperse themselves without striking a blow <sup>21</sup>. The

19. Haynes.

20. Carte, vol. iii.

21. Camden.]

common

only more strictly guarded; and Elizabeth the danger of detaining her any longer in solved to give up Mary into the hands of whose security, no less than the English depended on preventing her from ascending. The negotiation for this purpose had some length when it was discovered by of Lesley bishop of Ross; who, together French and Spanish ambassadors, remonstrated the infamy of such a transaction. A death that means procured; and the violent Regent, who was shot, in revenge of a jury, by a gentleman of the name of Haunted the revival of the project <sup>22</sup>.

On the death of the earl of Murray man of vigour and abilities, but of an au

22. Carte, vol. iii. Anderson, vol. iii. Part of Han been bestowed upon one of the Regent's favourites, who and turned out his wife naked, in a cold night, into the before morning, she became furiously mad. From vowed revenge against the earl of Murray. Party-r and inflamed his private resentment; and the maxim justified the most desperate course he could take to obtain followed the Regent for some time, watching an opp

ble character, Scotland relapsed into a state of anarchy. The queen's party seemed for a time to prevail; but, at length, through the interposition of Mary of Lorraine, who accompanied her recommendation of an armed force, the earl of Lennox, the king's father, was elected regent; and Mary, after being detained during ten months, by a deceitful negotiation, and the hopes of liberty, found herself under a stricter custody than ever, and without any chance of escaping from it<sup>23</sup>. In that joyless situation we must leave her for a while, and take a view of the civil wars on the continent, the issue of which was concerned both the British queens.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1570.

ELIZABETH was sensible, that, as the head of the Protestant party, her safety in a great measure depended on the continuance of the commotions in France and the Low Countries. She therefore contributed, as we have seen, both secretly and openly, to enable and encourage the reformers to support the struggle, and she watched the motions of the Catholics with anxious eye. And an event happened about this time, which increased her vigilance. Pope Pius V. having endeavoured in vain to conciliate, by the means of Elizabeth, the friendship of Elizabeth, issued a bull of excommunication against her; depriving her of the right to the crown, and absolving her subjects from their oath of allegiance. This bull, which had not been fulminated at the instigation of the Catholics, was affixed to the gates of the bishop of London's palace, by one John Felton, a zealous Protestant; who, scorning either to flee or deny the fact, was seized, condemned, and executed. He not only

A. D. 1571.

<sup>23</sup>. Spotswood. Lelley.

suffered



**PART I.** suffered with constancy, but seemed to consider death, in such a cause, as a triumph <sup>24</sup>.  
A. D. 1571.

THUS roused by the violent spirit of popery, Elizabeth who had never been remiss, fixed her eye more steadily on the religious wars in France and the Low Countries. The league concerted at Bayonne, as has been already noticed, for the extermination of the Protestants; had not been concluded so secretly, but intelligence of it had reached Condé, Coligny, and other leaders of that party in France. Finding the measures of the court correspond with their suspicions, they determined to prevent the cruel perfidy of their enemies, and to strike a blow before the Catholics were aware of the danger. In consequence of this resolution, they formed, in 1567, the bold design of surprising the king and queen-mother who were living in security, at Monceaux in Brie; and had not the court received some accidental information of the conspiracy, which induced them to remove to Meaux, and been besides protected by, a body of Swiss, who came hastily to their relief, and conducted them with great intrepidity to Paris, they must have fallen, without resistance into the hands of the Hugonots <sup>25</sup>.

A BATTLE was soon after fought in the plains of St. Denis; where, though the old constable Montmorency, the general of the Catholics, was slain, the Hugonots were defeated, by reason of their inferiority in numbers. Condé however, still undismayed, collected his broken troops; and having received a strong reinforcement of German Protestants, appear-

<sup>24</sup>. Camden, p. 428.

<sup>25</sup>. Davila, lib. iv. Mezeray, tom. v.

ed again in the field at the head of a formidable force. With that new army he traversed great part of the kingdom; and at last laying siege to Chartres, a place of much importance, obliged the court, in 1568, to agree to an accommodation <sup>26</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A. D. 1571.

THIS peace, being but a temporary expedient, and sincere on neither side, was of short duration. The queen-mother, deceitful in all her negociations, had laid a plot for seizing Condé and Coligny. They received intelligence of their danger, fled to Rochelle, and summoned their partizans to their assistance. Thither the Hugonots resorted in great numbers, and the civil war was renewed with more fury than ever. The duke of Anjou, brother to the king, commanded the Catholics; and gained, in 1569, under the direction of the marshal de Tavares, the famous battle of Jarnac, after a struggle of seven hours. The prince of Condé being wounded and made prisoner, was carried off the field, and killed in cold blood by a captain of the duke of Anjou's guards <sup>27</sup>.

BUT this defeat, though accompanied with the loss of so great a leader, did not break the spirit of the Hugonots. Coligny, whose courage was superior to all difficulties, still gallantly supported their cause; and having placed at the head of the party the king of Navarre, only sixteen years of age, and the young prince of Condé, to both of whom he acted as a father, he encouraged the Protestants rather to perish bravely in the field than by the hands of the executioner. Their ardour was not inferior to his own; and being strengthened by a new reinforcement of

<sup>26</sup>. Id. Ibid.

<sup>27</sup>. Mezeray, ubi. sup. Henault, tom. i.

## PART I.

Germans, they obliged the duke of Anjou to retreat, and invested Poitiers<sup>28</sup>.  
A. D. 1571.

As the eyes of all France were fixed on this enterprize, the young duke of Guise, emulous of the renown which his father had acquired by the defence of Metz, threw himself into Poitiers, and, so animated the garrison by his valour and conduct, that Coligny was obliged to raise the siege, in spite of his most vigorous efforts, after losing three thousand men<sup>29</sup>. Such was the rise of the reputation of the second duke of Guise, whom we shall afterward see attain so distinguished a height of fame and grandeur, and whose ambition engaged him in schemes so destructive to the authority of his sovereign, and the repose of his native country.

ELIZABETH, ever watchful of the civil commotions in France, was by no means pleased with this revival of the power of the house of Lorraine; and being anxious for the fate of the Protestants, whose interests were so intimately connected with her own, she sent them secretly a sum of money, besides artillery and military stores<sup>30</sup>. She also permitted Henry Champignon to levy and transport over to France, a regiment of gentlemen volunteers. Meanwhile Coligny constrained by the impatience of his troops, and the difficulty of subsisting them, fought with the duke of Anjou and the marechal de Tavannes, the memorable battle of Moncontour, in which he was wounded and defeated, with the loss of near ten thousand men<sup>31</sup>.

THE court of France, and the Catholics, elated with this victory, vainly flattered themselves that the

28. Davila, lib. v.

29. Id. Ibid.

30. Camden, p. 425.

31. Davila, lib. v. Mezeray, tom. v.

power of the Hugonots was finally broken; and therefore neglected to take any farther steps for crushing an enemy no longer thought capable of resistance. What was then their surprize to hear, that Coligny, still undismayed, had suddenly appeared in another quarter of the kingdom; had inspired with all his valour and confidence the two young princes, whom he governed; had assembled a formidable army, accomplished an incredible march, and was ready to besiege Paris!—The public finances, diminished by the continued disorders, and wasted by so many fruitless wars, could not bear the charge of a new armament. The king was therefore obliged to, in 1570. notwithstanding his violent animosity against the Hugonots, to enter into a negociation with them at St. Germain en Laye; to grant them a pardon for all past offences; to declare them capable of all offices, both civil and military; to renew the edicts for liberty of conscience; and cede to them for two years, as places of refuge, and pledges of their security, Rochelle, La Charité, Montauban, and Cognac<sup>31</sup>. The first of these cities kept the sea open for receiving succours from England, in case of a new war; the second preserved the passage of the Loire; the third commanded the frontiers of Languedoc and Querci; and the fourth opened a passage into Angoumois, where the Hugonots had greater strength than in any other province.

LETTER  
LXVI.  
A.D. 1574.

THUS an end was seemingly put to the civil wars of France. But Charles was in no degree reconciled to his rebellious subjects: and this accommodation, like all the foregoing, was employed as a snare, by which the perfidious court might carry more securely

31. Id. Ibid.

PART I.  
A.D. 1571.

into execution that project, which had been formed for the destruction of the Protestants. Their leaders were accordingly invited to Paris, and loaded with favours; and, in order to lull the party into yet greater security, Charles not only declared, That, convinced of the impossibility of forcing men's consciences, he was determined to allow every one the free exercise of his religion, but affected to enter into close connexions with Elizabeth<sup>33</sup>. Proposals of marriage were made her with the duke of Anjou; a prince whose youth, beauty, and valour, qualities to which the queen never appeared insensible, it was hoped would serve for some time to amuse the court of England.

ELIZABETH, whose artful politics never triumphed so much as in those intrigues which were connected with her coquetry, immediatly founded on this offer the project of deceiving the court of France. Negotiations, equally insincere on both sides, were accordingly entered into with regard to the marriage, and broke off under various pretences. Both courts, however, succeeded in their schemes. Charles's artifices, or rather those of the queen-mother, imposed on Elizabeth, and blinded the Hugonots; and the prospect of that princess's marriage, as she expected, and of an alliance between France and England, discouraged the partizans of the queen of Scots, so ready at all times to disturb the repose of the latter kingdom<sup>34</sup>.

ELIZABETH had also other motives for her dissimulation. The violent authority established by Philip in the Low Countries, made her desirous of fortifying

33. Cadmen. Davila. Digges.

34. Ibid.

herself

herself even with the shadow of a new confederacy. Not satisfied with having reduced to their former state of obedience the revolted Flemings, whom his barbarous persecutions had roused to arms, that bigotted and tyrannical prince seemed determined to make the late popular disorders a pretence for utterly abolishing their privileges, and ruling them thenceforth with an arbitrary sway.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1571.

THE duke of Alva, a fit instrument in the hands of such a despot, being employed by Philip to carry this violent design into execution, had conducted into the Low Countries, in 1568, a powerful body of Spanish and Italian veterans. The appearance of such an army, with the inexorable and vindictive character of its leader, struck the Flemings with terror and consternation. Their apprehensions were but too just. The privileges of the provinces were openly and expressly abolished by an edict; arbitrary and sanguinary tribunals were erected; the counts Egmont and Horne, notwithstanding their great merit and former services, and although they had been chiefly instrumental in quelling the late revolt, were brought to the block; multitudes were daily delivered over to the executioner; and nothing was to be heard or seen but seizure, confiscation, imprisonment, torture, and death<sup>35</sup>.

MEANWHILE William of Nassau, prince of Orange, surnamed the Silent, whose estate had been confiscated, was employed in raising an army of German Protestants, in order to attempt the relief of his native country; and, having completed his levies, he entered the Netherlands at the head of twenty-eight

35. Temple. Grotius.

## PART I.

A.D. 1571.

thousand men, and offered battle to the duke of Alva. But that prudent general, sensible of the importance of delay, declined the challenge; and the Spaniards being in possession of all the fortified towns, the prince was obliged, from want of money, to disband his army, without being able to effect any thing of importance <sup>36</sup>.

ALVA'S good fortune only increased his insolence and cruelty. After entering Brussels in triumph, he ordered diligent search to be made after all who had been aiding to the prince of Orange, and put them to death by various tortures. He next commanded citadels to be built in all the principal towns, in order to over-awe the inhabitants; and in that of Antwerp he caused his own statue to be erected, in the attitude of treading on the necks of two smaller statues, representing the two estates of the Low Countries, accompanied with the emblems of heresy and rebellion! Not satisfied with enslaving and insulting a free people, he proceeded to pillage and oppress them with exactions altogether ruinous. He demanded the hundredth penny, as a tax on all goods, whether moveable or immoveable, to supply his present exigencies; and for the future, the twentieth penny annually on all immoveable goods or heritage; and the tenth penny on all moveable goods, to be levied at every sale <sup>37</sup>. The inhabitants refused to submit to such oppressive taxes. Alva had recourse to his usual severities; and the Flemings seemed in danger of being reduced to the most abject state of wretchedness, while the courts of France and England were amusing each other with a marriage treaty.

36. Le Clerc, lib. i. Grotius, lib. ii.

37. Id. *ibid*.

ELIZABETH, however, was never inattentive to the affairs of the Low Countries. She was equally displeased to see the progress of the scheme laid for the extermination of the Protestants, and to observe the erection of so great a military power in her immediate neighbourhood; and hence, as already observed, she endeavoured to guard herself against the ambition of Philip by the appearance of an alliance with France. But her danger from the Low Countries was greater than she was yet aware of.

LETTER  
LXVII.  
A. D. 1571.

THE queen of Scots, thinking herself abandoned by the court of France, had applied for protection to that of Spain; and Philip, whose dark and thoughtful mind delighted in the mystery of intrigue, had held for some time a secret correspondence with Mary, by means of Lesley bishop of Ross, her ambassador at the court of England, and had supplied both herself and her adherents in Scotland with money. At length a scheme for rescuing Mary, and subverting the English government, was concerted by the bishop of Ross, the Spanish ambassador, and Rodolphi, a Florentine merchant, who had resided long in London, and acted privately as an agent for the pope. Their plan was, that the duke of Alva should land ten thousand men in the neighbourhood of London; that the duke of Norfolk, whom they had drawn into their measures, and who had renewed his engagements with the queen of Scots, notwithstanding his solemn promise to hold no correspondence with her, should join the Spaniards with all his friends, together with the English Catholics and malecontents; that they should march in a body to the capital, and oblige Elizabeth to submit to what conditions they should think fit to impose.<sup>38</sup>

<sup>38</sup> State Trials, vol. i. Lesley, p. 155.



## PART I.

A. D. 1571.

BUT the queen and nation were delivered from this danger by the suspicious temper of one of Norfolk's servants. Being intrusted with a bag of money under the denomination of silver, he concluded it to be gold from its weight, and carried it to secretary Cecil, now lord Burleigh, whose penetrating genius soon discovered, and whose activity brought the whole conspiracy to light. The duke of Norfolk, betrayed by his other servants, who had been privy to the plot, was seized, convicted of high treason, condemned, and executed. The bishop of Ross was committed to the Tower; the Spanish ambassador was commanded to leave England; and the earl of Northumberland, being delivered up to Elizabeth about this time by the Regent of Scotland, was brought to the block for his share in the former rebellion<sup>39</sup>. Rodolphi, then on his journey to Brussels, escaped the arm of vengeance.

A. D. 1572.

THE queen of Scots, who had been either the immediate or remote cause of all these disturbances, was kept under a stricter guard than formerly; the number of her domestics was abridged, and no person was permitted to see her but in the presence of her keepers. The English parliament was even so enraged against her, that the commons made a direct application for her instant trial and execution<sup>40</sup>. But although Elizabeth durst not yet carry matters to such extremity against Mary, or was not so disposed, the restless spirit of the captive princess, and her close connections with Spain, made the queen of England resolve to act without disguise or ambiguity in the affairs of Scotland.

<sup>39</sup>. Id. *ibid.* Strype, vol. ii. Camden, p. 34—40. <sup>40</sup>. D'Ewes, *Journ. of Parl.*

THAT

THAT kingdom was still in a state of anarchy. The castle of Edinburgh, commanded by Kirkaldy of Grange, had declared for Mary ; and the lords of her party, encouraged by this circumstance, had taken possession of the capital, and carried on a vigorous war against the Regent. By a sudden and unexpected enterprize, they seized that nobleman at Stirling, and flew him in revenge of former injuries. They were, however, overpowered by a detachment from the castle, and an insurrection of the townsmen, and obliged to retire with precipitation.

LETTER  
LXVII.  
A. D. 1572.

THE earl of Marre was chosen regent of Scotland in the room of Lennox, and found the same difficulties to encounter in the government of that divided kingdom. He was therefore glad to accept the mediation of the French and English ambassadors, and to conclude, on equal terms, a truce with the queen's party. He was a man of a free and generous spirit ; and finding it impossible to accommodate matters between the parties, to maintain his own authority, without submitting to a dependence on England, he died of melancholy, occasioned by the distracted state of his country.

MARRE was succeeded in the regency of Scotland by the earl of Mortou, who had secretly taken all his measures in concert with Elizabeth ; and as she was now determined to exert herself effectually in support of the king's party, she ordered Sir William Drury, governor of Berwick, to march with a body of troops and a train of artillery to Edinburgh, and to besiege the castle. Kirkaldy, after a gallant defence of thirty-three days, against all the efforts of the commanders of the two nations, who pushed on their attacks with courage,

**PART I.** courage, and with emulation, was obliged to surrender, by reason of a mutiny in the garrison. He was delivered into the hands of his countrymen, by Elizabeth's order, expressly contrary to his capitulation with Drury, and condemned by Morton to be hanged at the cross of Edinburgh. Maitland of Lethington, who had taken part with Kirkaldy, and could not expect to be treated more favourably, prevented the ignominy of a public execution by a voluntary death. "He ended his days," says Melvil, "after the old Roman fashion!" and Scotland submitting entirely to the Regent's authority, gave no farther inquietude, for many years, to the English queen<sup>41</sup>.

**April 11.**

THE events on the continent were not so favourable to the interests, or agreeable to the inclinations of Elizabeth. After the negociation for a marriage between the English queen and the duke of Anjou was finally broken off, a defensive alliance had been concluded between France and England. Charles IX. considered this treaty, not only as the best artifice for blinding the Protestants, the conspiracy against whom was now almost ripe for execution, but also as a good precaution against the dangerous consequences to which that atrocious measure might expose him. Elizabeth, who, notwithstanding her penetration and experience, was the dupe of the French king's hypocrisy, regarded it as an invincible barrier against the enemies of her throne, and as one of chief pillars of the security of the Protestant cause. Even the leaders of the Hugonots, though so often deceived, gave credit to the treacherous promises and professions of the court; and Charles, in order to complete that fatal confidence, into which he had

<sup>41</sup> Melvil. Crawford. Camden. Strype.

ulled them, by his insidious careffes, offered his sister Margaret in marriage to the young king of Navarre <sup>42</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1572.

THE admiral de Coligny, the prince of Condé, and all the most considerable men of the Protestant party, went chearfully to Paris, in order to assist at the celebration of that marriage; which, it was hoped, would finally appease the religious animosities. Coligny was wounded by a shot from a window, a few days after the marriage; yet the court still found means to quiet the suspicions of the Hugonots, till the eve of St. Bartholomew, when a massacre commenced, to which there is nothing parallel in the history of mankind, either for the dissimulation that led to it, or the deliberate cruelty and barbarity with which it was perpetrated. The Protestants, as a body, were devoted to destruction; the young king of Navarre and the prince of Condé only being exempted from the general doom, on condition that they should change their religion. Charles, accompanied by his mother, beheld from a window of his palace this horrid massacre, which was chiefly conducted by the duke of Guise. The royal guards were ordered to be under arms at the close of day: the ringing of a bell was the signal; and the Catholic citizens, who had been secretly prepared by their leaders for such a scene, zealously seconded the execution of the soldiery, imbruing their hands, without remorse, in the blood of their neighbours, of their companions, and even of their relations; the king himself inciting their fury, by firing upon the fugitives, and frequently crying "Kill, kill!"—Persons of every condition, age, and sex, suspected of adhering to the reformed opinions, were involved in one undistinguished sin. About five hundred gentlemen, and men of rank, among whom was Coligny, with many other heads of

August 24.

the protestant party, were murdered in Paris alone; and near ten thousand persons of inferior condition. The same barbarous orders were sent to all the provinces of the kingdom; and a like carnage ensued at Rouen, Lyons, Orleans, and several other cities<sup>43</sup>. Sixty thousand Protestants are supposed to have been massacred in different parts of France.

As an apology for this atrocious perfidy, and inhuman butchery, Charles pretended that a conspiracy of the Hugonots to seize his person, had been suddenly detected; and that he had been necessitated, for his own safety, to proceed to extremities against them. The parliament accordingly ordered an annual procession, on St. Bartholomew's day, in commemoration of the deliverance of the kingdom; and a medal was struck in honour of the same event, with this inscription (which seems to bear a farther meaning) on one side, accompanied with the royal arms: *PISTAS excitavit JUSTITIAM*; "*PIETY roused JUSTICE.*" On the other side Charles is seated on a throne, with the sword of Justice in his right hand, and the balance in his left, with a group of heads under his feet, surrounded by these words: *Virtus in Rebelles*; "*Courage in punishing Rebels* <sup>44</sup>."

At Rome, and in Spain, the massacre of St. Bartholomew, which no popish writer of the present age mentions without detestation, was the subject of public rejoicings; and solemn thanks were returned to God for its success under the name of the *Triumph of the Church Militant*! Among the Protestants it excited incredible horror; a striking picture of which is drawn by Fenelon, the French ambassador at the court of

<sup>43</sup>. Davila, lib. v. P. Daniel, tom iv. Mezeray, tom. v.

<sup>44</sup>. Math'eu. Duplex. Le Gendre. Mezeray.

England, in his account of his first audience after that barbarous transaction. "A gloomy sorrow," says he, "sat on every face: silence, as in the dead of night, reigned through all the chambers of the royal apartment: the ladies and courtiers clad in deep mourning, were ranged on each side; and as I passed by them, in my approach to the queen, not one bestowed on me a favourable look, or made the least return to my salutations."

LETTER  
LXVII.

A. D. 1572.

THE English nobility and gentry were roused to such a pitch of resentment, by the cruelty and perfidy of the French court, that they offered to levy an army of twenty-two thousand foot and four thousand horse; to transport them into France, and to maintain them for six months at their own expence. But Elizabeth, cautious in all her measures, moderated the zeal of her subjects. She was aware of the dangerous situation in which she now stood, as the head and protectress of the Protestant body, and afraid to inflame farther the quarrel between the two religions, by a hazardous crusade; she therefore judged it prudent, not only to refuse her consent to the projected invasion, but to listen to the professions of friendship still made her by the French monarch. Meantime she prepared herself against that attack, which seemed to threaten her from the combined force and violence of Charles and Philip: two princes as nearly allied in perfidy and barbarity as in bigotry, and whose machinations she had reason to dread, as soon as they had quelled their domestic disturbances. She fortified Portsmouth; put her fleet in order; exercised her militia; and renewed her alliance with the German princes, no less alarmed than herself at the treacherous

**PART I.** and sanguinary measures so universally embraced by  
 A. D. 1572. the Catholic powers <sup>45</sup>.

BUT Elizabeth's greatest security against the attempts of those princes, was the obstinate resistance made by the Protestants in France and the Low Countries. The massacre, instead of annihilating the Hugonots, only rendered them more formidable. Animated by the most ardent spirit of civil and religious liberty, inflamed by vengeance and despair, they assembled in large bodies, or crowded into the cities and fortresses in the possession of their party; and finding that they could repose no faith in capitulations, nor expect any clemency from the court, they determined to defend themselves to the last extremity. After one of the most gallant defences recorded in history, the town of Sancerre was obliged to surrender, but the inhabitants obtained liberty of conscience. A. D. 1573. Rochelle, before which in a manner was assembled the whole force of France, sustained a siege of eight months. During that siege the citizens repelled nine general and twenty particular assaults, and obliged the duke of Anjou, who conducted the attack, and lost twenty-four thousand men, in the course of his operations, to grant them an advantageous peace<sup>46</sup>. Thus ended the fourth civil war, by a treaty which the court did not intend to observe, and to which the Protestants never trusted.

THE miseries of France increased every day. Charles grew jealous of his brothers, and many of the most considerable men among the Catholics, displeased with the measures of the court, favoured the progress of the Hugonots. All things tended to confusion.

46. Camden. Digges.

47. Davis, lib. v. Mezeray, tom. v.

In the midst of these disorders died Charles IX. of a distemper so extraordinary, that it was universally considered by the Protestants, as a visible stroke of divine vengeance. The blood exuded from every pore of his body. Though the author of so many atrocious crimes, he was only twenty-four years of age; and that unusual mixture of ferocity and dissimulation, which distinguished his character, threatened still greater mischiefs both to his native country and to Europe <sup>48</sup>. As he left no male issue, he was succeeded in the throne of France by his brother, the duke of Anjou, lately elected king of Poland.

LETTER  
LXVII.  
A.D. 1574.

48. The character of Charles IX. as might be expected, has been very differently drawn by the cotemporary historians of the two religions. And an attempt has lately been made by an ingenious writer, who affects liberality of sentiment, to vindicate that prince from what he considers to be the calumnies of the Protestants. In prosecution of this design, the gentleman who has undertaken to *whitewash* the author of the massacre of Paris, endeavours to shew, by a display of the elegant qualities of Charles; his taste for the polite arts, and his talent of making verses, that his mind was naturally sound and generous, but corrupted by a pernicious system of policy, and enslaved by the machinations of his mother, Catharine of Medicis. As much might be said in favour of Nero, and with more justice.

But this writer, in attempting to confound our ideas of virtue and vice, has happily furnished us with an antidote against his own poison. He owns, that some weeks after the massacre had ceased, Charles was not only present at the execution of two Hugonot gentlemen, who had escaped the general slaughter, "but so desirous of enjoying the sight of their *last agonies*, that, as it was night before they were conducted to the gibbet, he commanded torches to be held up to the faces of the criminals." (*Hist. of the Kings of France of the Race of Valois*, vol. ii.) And the authors, who attest this fact, have left us many others of a similar kind; so many, indeed, as are sufficient to induce us to suppose, that the bigotry and cruelty of Charles IX. were equal to the execution of the massacre of St. Bartholomew, without the instigation of his mother. One anecdote deserves particular notice: when the prince of Condé hesitated in renouncing his religion, the king exclaimed, in a furious tone, accompanied with a menacing look, "DEATH, MASS, or the BASTILE!" Davila, lib. v. Mezeray, tom. v.

BUT



## PART I.

BUT before we carry farther the account of the civil wars of France, or resume the history of those in the Low Countries, I must turn your eye, my dear Philip, back to the affairs of the empire, Spain, Italy, and Turkey.

---

## LETTER LXVIII.

GERMANY, *from the Resignation of CHARLES V. in 1556, to the Death of MAXIMILIAN II. in 1576, with some Account of the Affairs of SPAIN, ITALY, and TURKEY, during that Period.*

LETTER  
LXVIII.

CHARLES V. as we have already seen, was succeeded in the imperial throne by his brother Ferdinand I. the beginning of whose reign was distinguished by the diet of Ratisbon, which confirmed the peace of religion, by reconciling the house of Hesse to that of Nassau<sup>1</sup>.

PIUS IV. who was raised to the papacy in 1559, less obstinate than his predecessor, Paul, confirmed the imperial dignity to Ferdinand. He also issued a bull for re-assembling the council of Trent, the most memorable occurrence under the reign of this emperor.

ON the publication of that bull, the Protestant princes assembled at Naumburg in Saxony, and came to a resolution of adhering to the confession of Augs- burg, whatever should be determined in the council of Trent. Meanwhile Ferdinand issued orders for

1. Heiss, liv. iii.

convoking a diet at Frankfort, where he managed matters with so much address, that his son Maximilian, already promoted to the throne of Bohemia, was elected king of the Romans, with the unanimous consent of the Germanic body. The emperor also endeavoured on this occasion, but in vain, to persuade the Protestants to submit to the general council. They continued unshaken in their resolution of rejecting its decrees. The pope, they maintained, had no right to convoke such an assembly; that prerogative belonging to the emperor alone, to whom, as their sovereign, they were at all times willing to explain themselves on any subject, either civil or religious<sup>2</sup>.

LETTRE  
LXVIII  
A. D. 1550

FINDING the Protestants obstinate in denying the authority of the council of Trent, Ferdinand resolved to pursue another method of uniting them to the church. For that purpose, he presented a remonstrance to the fathers of the council, exhorting them to attempt a reformation of manners among the Romish clergy, in order to remove those abuses of which the Protestants so justly complained. But the pope, affirming that such reformation was his peculiar province, would not allow the council to take cognizance of the subject. The emperor was also disappointed in a demand which he made, that the council should permit the communion both with and without the cup, among the laity, and the marriage of priests in the imperial dominions. His Holiness would consent to neither of these requests<sup>3</sup>.

THIS famous council, which had been so often suspended and renewed, and which proved the last assembly of the kind, was finally dissolved in December,

A. D. 1561

2. THUCYD. lib. v. c. 11. 3. Id. lib. i. c. 14.

## PART I.

A.D. 1563.

1563. Its decrees, like those of all other general councils, were calculated to exalt the church above the civil power; but being little suited to the spirit of the times, they were rejected by some catholic princes, coldly received by others, and deservedly turned into ridicule by the reformers<sup>4</sup>. The declared object of the council of Trent, in this meeting, was the *reformation* of the church, by which means only a reconciliation with the Protestants could have been effected. Instead, however, of confining themselves to theological errors, or attempting to eradicate ecclesiastical abuses, the reverend fathers extended their deliberations to the *reformation* of princes, and composed thirteen articles for exalting the priesthood at the expence of the royal prerogative<sup>5</sup>.

A.D. 1564.

Soon after the dissolution of the council of Trent, died the emperor, Ferdinand I. He was succeeded by his son Maximilian II. who, in the beginning of his reign, was obliged to engage in a war against the Turks. Solyman II. whose valour and ambition had been so long terrible to Christendom, though now unfit for the field, continued to make war by his generals. He had even projected, it is said, the conquest of the German empire. The affairs of Transilvania, furnished him with a pretext for taking arms. John Sigismund, prince of that country, had assumed the title of king of Hungary (which his mother had resigned, as we have seen, for some possessions in Silesia), and put himself under the protection of the Grand Seignior. Maximilian immediately sent an army against Sigismund, under the command of Lazarus Schuendi. The imperial general took Tokay, and would soon have recovered all Transilvania, had not Solyman dispatched

4. Thuanus. Father Paul.

5. Ibid.

an ambassador to the imperial court, to negotiate in behalf of his vassal. By this envoy matters were seemingly accommodated<sup>6</sup>.

LETTER  
LXVIII.  
A.D. 1565.

THE sultan, however, had not laid aside his ambitious projects, nor happily the emperor his suspicions. While Maximilian convoked a diet at Augsburg, for regulating the domestic affairs of the empire, and securing it against the Turks, Solyman sent a fleet and army to reduce the island of Malta; whence he hoped to drive the knights of St. John, whom he had formerly expelled from Rhodes, and who still continued, according to the maxims of their order, to annoy the Infidels. But the rock of Malta proved fatal to Solyman's glory. His general, Mustapha, after a siege of almost five months, and the loss of twenty-four thousand men, was obliged to abandon the enterprize. La Valette, grand-master of Malta, and the whole body of knights, signalized themselves wonderfully on that occasion; but as the Turks were continually reinforced, he must at last have been obliged to surrender the island, if Don Garcia, governor of Sicily, had not come to its relief with twelve thousand men<sup>7</sup>.

SOLYMAN, in revenge of this disappointment and disgrace, the greatest he had ever suffered, sent a fleet to reduce the island of Scio, and ravage the coast of Italy. And having invaded Hungary with a powerful army, he laid siege to Sigeth. This city is strongly situated in a marsh, above fifteen miles to the north of the Drave, on the frontiers of Scлавonia, and was then the bulwark of Stiria against the Turks. It had a garrison of two thousand three hundred men,

6. Thuanus, lib. xxxvii.  
1694. iv. Thuanus, lib. xxxviii.

7. Vertot, *Hist. de Chev. de Malte*.

## PART I.

A. D. 1571.

Oct. 5.

matia and Istria, but also those of Italy. Their fleet, consisting of two hundred and thirty gallies, was met by the confederates in the gulf of Lepanto, near Corinth, where was fought the greatest naval engagement that modern times had seen. The force on both sides was nearly equal, and the dispute was long, fierce, and bloody. All the passions which can animate human nature were roused, and all the instruments of war and destruction, of ancient or modern invention, were employed; arrows, javelins, fire-balls, grappling-irons, cannon, muskets, spears, and swords. The hostile combatants fought hand to hand in most of the gallies, grappled together, as on a field of battle. Hali, the Turkish admiral, surrounded by four hundred Janizaries, and Don John of Austria, with an equal number of chosen men, maintained such a struggle for three hours. At last Hali was slain, and his galley taken: the banner of the cross was displayed from the main-mast, and the Ottoman admiral's head fixed on the stern, in place of the Turkish standard. All now was carnage and confusion. The cry of "Victory! Victory!" resounded through the Christian fleet, and the Turks every where gave way. They lost thirty thousand men in the conflict; ten thousand were taken prisoners; and fifteen thousand Christian slaves were set at liberty. Thirty Turkish gallies were sunk, twenty-five burnt, one hundred and thirty taken; and if Uluzzali, and who was second in command, had not retired with twenty-eight gallies, the Ottoman fleet had been utterly destroyed. The confederates lost, on the whole, fifteen gallies, and about ten thousand men<sup>18</sup>.

THIS victory, which filled Constantinople with the deepest melancholy, was celebrated at Venice with

18. Eccelet, *Vie du Pape Pie V.* Thuanus. Cantemir. Ricaut.  
the

the most splendid festivals. And Pius V. was so transported when he heard of it, that he exclaimed, in a kind of a holy ecstacy, "There was a man sent from God, and his name was John <sup>12</sup>!" alluding to Don John of Austria. Philip's joy was more moderate. "Don John," said he, "has been fortunate, but he ran a great risk <sup>13</sup>;"—and that risk, as appeared in the issue, was run merely for glory.

LETTER  
LXVIII.  
A.D. 1571.

THE battle of Lepanto, though purchased with so much blood, and so ruinous to the vanquished, was of no real benefit to the victors. After disputing long what they should do, the Christian commanders resolved to do nothing till the spring. That season which should have been employed in taking advantage of the enemy's consternation, was wasted in fruitless negotiations and vain-glorious triumphs. The Turks had leisure, during the winter, to equip a new fleet, which spread terror over the coasts of Christendom, before the confederates were ready to assemble; and by the bravery and conduct of Uluzzali, now appointed commander in chief, the reputation of the Ottoman arms was restored. The confederates were able to effect no enterprize of importance. Their councils were again divided: they separated. The Spaniards appeared cool in the cause; and the Venetians, afraid of being left a prey to the Turkish power, secretly concluded a peace with the sultan. They not only agreed that Selim II. should retain Cyprus, but ceded to him several other places, and stipulated to pay him thirty thousand crowns in gold, toward defraying the expences of the war <sup>14</sup>.

A.D. 1572.

A.D. 1572.

THE pope was greatly incensed at this treaty, which was certainly dishonourable to Christendom. But Philip II. whose attention was now chiefly en-

12. Fenilet, ubi sup.

13. Miniana, lib. vii.

14. Peruta. Ferreras.

## PART I.

A. D. 1573.

gaged by the civil wars in the Low Countries, readily sustained the apology of the Venetians. It was but reasonable, he said, that the republic should be permitted to know her own interest : for him, it was sufficient, that he had given proofs of his friendship to Venice, and of his zeal for the support of the Christian religion<sup>15</sup>.

Don John, however, was little pleased with the conduct of the Venetians. After separating from the confederates, he had made himself master of Tunis, where he proposed to erect an independent sovereignty ; and he hoped next season, by means of the league, utterly to ruin the sultan's naval power, which he foresaw would be employed to recover that city and its territory. He was not mistaken in his conjecture. A fleet of three hundred gallies, with forty thousand land forces on board, was sent in the spring to invest Tunis ; and the place, though gallantly defended, was taken by storm, and the garrison put to the sword, before a sufficient force could be assembled for its relief<sup>16</sup>.

DURING all these bloody transactions, the mere recital of which makes the human heart shrink from the horrors of war, Germany continued to enjoy tranquillity, under the mild government of Maximilian. He died while preparing to support his election to the kingdom of Poland, and was succeeded in the imperial throne by his son, Rodolph II. a prince who inherited the pacific disposition of his father.

WE must now, my dear Philip, return to new scenes of slaughter ; to behold Christians and fellow-citizens exercising on each other as great barbarities as ever were inflicted upon the followers of Christ by those of Mahomet.

15. Miniana, ubi sup.

16. Cantemir. Ripaut. Ferreras.









-

1

2



